



Abel vs. Cain

By Michael J. Neeley Jr.

The Awakeni ng

Book One

This book is to my Father; his
Wife, my Mother, Sister, and
Daughter Shaolin - and the
brave Woman who brought her
here to Earth.

The Circle K in Tucson
For allowing me to write all
day and night long in the
alley out back - and for the
coffee. Thank you.

The Pima County library
system, where this book
came together, thanks for all
your help

And lastly, the Eureka Police of
Humboldt
County, for giving me the
PTSD that triggered these
events and my
AWAKENING

“And it’s true we are immune,
when FACT is FICTION and
TV reality”

U2, Sunday Bloody Sunday

“ All right, you want to know
my political persuasion, well
sugar, I howl at the moon.

Can you dig it?

Would you like some more
information? There’s a buzz
killer in the room. Can you
dig it?

Party’s over, you all have to go

The wolf man is coming out!
Party's over, you all have to
go. **The sooner the
better!!**"

CLUTCH, The Wolf Man
Kindly Request.

Chapter ONE

ROUND 600M.MF.

Jury, the first - LIE - ever told,
was, and still is, that the humans have
been kicked out of the Garden of
Eden. Now that you know the first LIE,
I hope that you the jury also realize
that since THAT this is the FIRST LIE,
just how much, and how long, you the
jury have been LIED to. Let's you and
I think this thru together.

The garden of EDEN, "THEY" say is "LOST". It's "disappeared". (Anything you'll believe.) However, help me understand , jury how the Earth takes care of all of your human needs, every last one, and you still can't see the Garden of Eden directly beneath your own feet?

You believe the Garden of Eden doesn't exist? That it's gone? That it's disappeared? Is it because that is what you're told? Is it because CAIN changed the name from Garden of Eden, to the prison planet Earth? Or Earth as you call it now? And that's all you the jury have ever known this place YOU CALL HOME by - the name Earth?

Oh, I'm sorry - you didn't know about that prison planet stuff, did you?

You're still chewing on the Garden of Eden information, aren't you?

Well humans , it's true. I will make it clear to you now- just how many LIES you've been fed, since the beginning of time, with this one example. Get yourself an American \$0.05 cent piece, the nickel, and I will use this coin to prove my point as an example. On one side of this coin, you have a likeness of Thomas Jefferson. A slave master, and a celebrated slave master at that. On the other, his home, a home made famous because you could NOT see the slaves - or the slaves their master.

(Just like today. AND, until the end of this book.) That's two sides isn't it?

WRONG.

Look again.

See it yet? There's another smooth side that goes all the way around the circumference of the nickel called - the edge. And that there is the third side of every coin! Now that you see it, do you agree that this, "there are two sides to every coin" bull shit, is a lie?

On an American \$0.25 piece, the quarter - that coin has over a hundred sides, but yet - still only falls on two; one side or the other - just like you humans, and our struggle - and the other slaves in the galaxy, the ones that are like you - the coin

NEVER falls on your side, or in your favor.

CAIN, it's time for ROUND - 600 MILLION. Are you tired yet, brother? Cause I haven't even warmed up yet. And I've done the last 599,999,999 rounds mom's way. I'm about to take my gloves off, Big Brother. Are you ready,

CAIN? Are you ready, mf?

That smooth edge on that nickel is where I'm about to take you human and we are going to shed some light on a very old LIE. CREATION. God didn't create the earth. But under God's authority, ADAM and EVE did. And God didn't create mankind, CAIN and EVE did, without the KING LORD

GOD'S authority. Mom and Dad created the Earth, Dad the animals and fire, Mom - I guess she did the rest, if we include you PHYSICAL HUMANS, with the help of CAIN.

There is a GOD.

The correct name of GOD is the KING LORD GOD of the Milky Way Galaxy system. It's a very large Kingdom. And ascends past time, and dimensions. Its size is unknown in linear terms. We, CAIN and I, ARE A SUPERIOR SHAPE SHIFTING RACE.

You are a shape shifter too. And I will prove that to you as well.

How big were you when you were born?

How big are you now?

That's a lot of shape shifting.

A snowflake is a shape shifter too. When a snowflake is very cold, a snowflake is solid. When it's hot, the snowflake becomes steam. And when the temperature is in the middle, it is life giving water. In fact, everything on this planet is a shape shifter. Just like your mother, EVE and Father CAIN. And ADAM. We are all shape shifters. So, if you ever see one, the way I have, do not be afraid.

Would you be afraid of a
snowflake?

Chapter TWO

Momma's Boy

Jury, I talked to my first
shapeshifter god today, face to face,
for four hours. My prison host body,
Mikel, his knee was swollen, so my
prison host body, Mikel and I, couldn't
go anywhere. That's when dad showed
up to talk to Mikel, who had just
attempted to commit suicide two
weeks ago because Mikel was down on
his luck again in what has become a
never-ending cycle of homelessness
and extreme poverty.

Dad also wanted to talk with me. We hadn't talked in a very long time. It was his first time to visit since my protest against CAIN started so very long ago.

He's my father, and our father - well, wait, jury I forget, since I've been human so long - he is NOT your father.

I've been here so long that I forget ADAM is not your father. He's only mine and CAIN'S father. CAIN is your father. Probably the first time you've ever heard of this.

We talked about the truth of creation, and my role in the galactic struggle for the Relative and you humans. Also, my role in the royal

family of ADAM and EVE within the kingdom of the KING LORD GOD.

I am, and have always been, ABEL. ABEL TO DO ANYTHING. I am a prince back home. And here on Earth, currently, I am the soul of a down on his luck homeless father named Mikel. CAIN, my brother, is and has always been the first known “mother fucker”.

CAIN, punished for his crimes against the Galactic Empire, in the royal house of the KING LORD GOD, and the coup d'état against the royal house of ADAM and EVE, CAIN was stripped of his dominion over the Earth, sent to Earth as an immortal invalid human, in the hope that CAIN would bring the humans into an awakening, and teach the humans our ways. Advance the planet into

harmony with the galactic empire.
This was after new evidence surfaced,
after mom's crucifixion.

Before CAIN had been given
authority over this kingdom, he
hunted and destroyed any and all of
their creation. and humans he could
find. He did this with the help of
Enoch, in secret. CAIN was furious, at
the difficult task. Mom was very smart
and hid their creation all over space
and time.

CAIN had mom sent to prison
for a crime she never committed.
Immaculate Creation. CAIN had
mother sent to prison because mom
wouldn't reveal where she hid all of
their creation. She didn't want the
relative and humans destroyed. And
because she never revealed this to

CAIN - where any and all other creations were, mom was sentenced to prison, and later, death by crucifixion.

Mom never told anyone. Not CAIN. Not the KING LORD GOD. Not the galactic council. Not even me, ABEL.

At the trial -

When the verdict was announced, I said the words "you mother fucker" for the first time and hit my brother CAIN in front of the entire galactic council. I hit him so hard that CAIN bled. Some nicknamed this event the BIG BANG, because it was, and still is, the only recorded act of violence inside the galactic council

ever. To pay for my crime against the authority of CAIN and the council, I was also sent to prison. My sentence was lenient compared to moms.

Using my royal influence, I convinced the council to let me do my time alongside my mother EVE. But I had to be a soul and Stay relative and even human, most of the time. When it was time for me to be released, I refused to leave without my mother. That's when my protest started.

I refused because I knew she would never do an immaculate creation against the KING LORD GOD, . I decided that I would stay with my mother until her release. I knew the entire reason she was there was a lie. This is where the term - "momma's boy", comes from.

When my sentence was done, I wouldn't leave mom to embarrass CAIN, who had complete dominion over this solar system at this time. I wanted to get people to start talking and asking questions. I had to help mom get her freedom back and reveal the truth about the RELATIVE.

At the end of his whit's, long before the truth was starting to catch fire back home, instead of release, Cain and Enoch led the fight against mother when she was sentenced to crucifixion. Set up by Enoch, and my brother CAIN. Crucified, in another attempt to destroy CAIN and Mothers creation - the RELATIVE and the physical. A creation that's so unlike the rest of the galactic empire back home.

First words from my father
ADAM'S mouth this morning was, "This
place is a dump. You really like this
place that much?"

Because of the coup d'état- and
the crucifixion; with mother being
gone, and feeling victorious, CAIN
came to release me again. I also
refused to leave again. I sided with
mother's vision this time, and sided
with the physical way of life, humans,
and the creation of CAIN and EVE, the
relative. I refused brothers wishes to
leave this prison and give up on my
hope for humanity's awakening. This
made CAIN furious.

"ABEL. You're such a momma's
boy." CAIN said to me, when I refused
to leave.

“Look, who’s talking, mother fucker?” was my response.

Over many human lifetimes, - 600,000,000 million to be exact, is what father told me this morning; I’ve begun to fall in love with the relative and the physical. I know it’s importance. I know the RELATIVE to be necessary. Also, your prison Earth. The same RELATIVE and HUMANS that the galactic empire is afraid of - You.

I fell in love with you.

This planet, and you humans, CAIN and myself, are the only thing left of mother’s legendary legacy in the Galaxy. During CAIN’S reign as Lord of this region, CAIN destroyed as much of Mother’s legacy as he could

find. Look at the many dead planets above you for proof. I have sided with the humans and the Earth, and I have been secretly on this prison Earth for millions of human lifetimes, protesting. With my royal immunity, I can stay or go at any time.

Choose any animal or human I want. I stay....

Tree hugging, basically.

I am on the side of the relative now, and Mom and CAIN'S creation. This creation, the relative, and the humans are the only thing left; outside of brother and I- that's left to remember mom by. And everything that comes with it. You humans still don't know the truth about anything.

When the council came to release me last time, under CAIN'S authority, I still refused to leave. Mother had been dead some time now, after the crucifixion with Enoch and CAIN. However, the truth of the creation had started to catch fire back home. I did this to embarrass and stand up to my big brother. And also, because I had now given mother my word, as we last hugged before she was crucified. I told her that I would never let her down and see her vision finished – freedom for the humans and protection for the relative and the rest of creation, I would see mom's dream through to the end. At all cost, for as long as it takes. No matter the cost.

This was the last thing I said to my mother Eve, your mother Eve," consider your wish done. I love you."

We hugged and she was taken away. And crucified.

With help from supporters, more of the truth about CAIN'S part in the immaculate creation was revealed. He was put on trial and found guilty of treason. CAIN was stripped of his demigod status, and his dominion over his kingdom, and sent here as punishment, alongside me - but as an immortal invalid human. Forced by the galactic council to slither the ground for all eternity.

Humans would have to tend to his every need. He wasn't allowed to walk with his legs anymore. In return, my brother was to teach the humans our ways, and advance them into their own awakening.

Look around you? Feel very
advanced yet? Is he doing a good job?
And if he is, who's he doing it for?

Do you see heaven on earth?
The Garden of Eden?

It was my hope, that in my
brother's time here, he would learn to
love the humans, and his creation -
the relative. I was trying to teach CAIN
to love and respect the humans, and
the human experience. The council
had their own ideas. They believed
that having been a KING, CAIN would
teach the humans, and prepare them
for their own awakening. Teach them
our ways.

However, CAIN has chosen to
stall and play games, as he waits for,

and hopes for, the vote of destruction. Because CAIN, how can I say this so you can understand me human? He, and others like him, they don't like-

YOUR KIND.

There. That should do it.

Only Mother Eve's creation of love, wind and light, and my father's creation of fire, and the library of animals exist in our kingdom. Except here on Earth, and wherever mom hid the rest. Not far in the future, CAIN is up for molting. Molting is a prayer confession and prison parole release hearing wrapped into one. CAIN will give his testimony in hope of retaining his demigod status, and his authority and right to vote back.

However, while he is molting, which will take 400 earth years, the Earth will have a new warden. And no one knows who that warden, (or what kingdom they serve), will be yet. There has been a struggle for power over this decision back home for a very long time.

There has been much fighting. Much bloodshed. Father warned me that during molting, conditions will be much different here on Earth. Much worse than now.

“Famine, disease, drought, and the possibility of the decision you don’t want, ABEL, are all still a possibility, son”, is what Dad informed me this morning.

My father and I are superior
shape shifting Gods under the KING
LORD GOD'S MONARCH back home.
Humans are shape shifters too. Just
not as advanced. Humans also fall
under this Monarch. But, as of yet,
they are not to be entered into, and
part of the galactic empire -
"AWARE".

Chapter THREE

NO PAR - KING HERE

If you, the jury and you other humans think that the afore mentioned revolution going on in the galactic empire is fake, rethink – mortal, what is surrounding you? It's all over the planet. I, ABEL – ABEL TO DO ANYTHING, am American this time, and I speak the new speech. This is one of the best examples I can give you right now – at this moment.

(Clears throat)

Best example, ready?

THERE IS NO **PAR - KING** HERE.

(with a picture of an human in a wheelchair)

And there's a spot to park, always at the very front, better than any other spot, better than any other HUMAN- THAT CAN WALK. CAIN is always first, always right, even when he's wrong - just like his allies. CAIN and his allies always get an extra vote! And always has the last and final say. Basically, no parking means what it says - there is no fair (par) king here. And, yes, he has never been fair.

It was my hope, that when Cain was found guilty of his crimes against the galactic empire, and stripped of his LORD status, and sent here as a

crippled human; it was my hope, that this would teach CAIN the ability to teach and love his creation. Since he was completely reliant on humans for anything and everything he ever needed.

Didn't work out that way.

And, this time - when they vote, it's my wish, that the galactic council will give CAIN his legs again and let him live a life as a HUMAN.

One life, at least, with emotions, and work. Maybe even have his own human child to raise. Because, HUMANS, have their place here in the galaxy, at least in my heart. Sweating and working hard can be fun.

Although Dad is lonely back home, with both his sons stuck here on the prison Earth, my work here isn't complete. And I refuse to stop till my brother respects his creation. Because HUMANS, and the relative, are truly one of a kind. And all that's left of Mother's legacy in the Galaxy. The only reminder she was ever one of us.

Mom did a very good job of hiding the creation, and the relative. If and when I am victorious, I intend to raise my children here. Because this suffering will make them better KINGS and/ or QUEENS. If that day should ever come, and I get my way - we shall have the SHAME lifted from Earth, and the council votes to awaken all of the Earthlings.

(Let's all pray and hope.)

CAIN, Dad told me today, that the chocolate chip cookie is rather enjoyed in many noble kingdoms throughout the Galactic Empire. And, CAIN, if you vote to release the HUMANS, you would be a hero for the discovery of the chocolate chip cookie. Just one simple life, brother, with a father and mother human, work, raise a child, cut, bleed, fart, smoke a joint, smoke a cigarette, and drink some coffee - the stuff's not bad. (It would be like chocolate chip cookies to you and Dad now, CAIN. It's good, you'll like it. I promise. I like it.)

Dancing, music, love, sadness; they're all awesome and unique. They have relevance, and I think if mother can forgive you, teach me to forgive you, and NOT ONLY love these bastard humans, but stand up for them as well (on mothers behalf); I think you, CAIN, can too.

What is being a Dad without knowing the human condition or the relevant? Work with me, brother, Mom forgave you. And loved the creation of your mistake so much, the very fact that your friends still can't find it all - says a lot. Shows me how important mother thought the creation was - and is.

And, if I'm not mistaken, - lest we forget; **died to protect.**

All of them.

Jury, next example - when you can't walk well, you use what? A

CANE? Sound familiar? Not so blind tonight are we, jury?

Next, ever hear the dominant command, "Take your shoes off, when you walk on my carpets?"

OK. That's an insult to humanity, and I will tell you why. What do humans drive? And what do you work for? And how do you get there to do that? And that means you humans do a lot of tricks, like pets, for your car - don't you? Making you humans "CAR - PETS".

Back when CAIN had dominion over the Earth, he would invite his old friends to the planet, to walk on humans. Stomp them under feet. Crush them. The GOD'S, allied with

CAIN, thought it was fun to hear you humans scream, and were fascinated by how much you bleed, watch you try to run away. It's an insult and I for one am sick of it.

Chapter FOUR

FUMF

Now that you, the courts and fellow humans know the story of CAIN, the word MF, and why it's so offensive, have you ever wondered about the hand gesture that goes with it? The birdie? Or the middle finger, and thumb everybody does? Ever ask yourself why IS "that" the symbol?

Or why that's offensive too?

Well, ABEL here is about to tell you.

The middle finger is the tallest finger on the human hand. CAIN is very tall. The thumb is the smallest, and I am very small. It also happens to be one of the many traits that separate the humans from the rest of the Galaxy.

You humans have thumbs where no other creature, on this planet - or in the galaxy does. I gave CAIN the first middle finger birdie back at a public trial in ROME. As my brother CAIN, who had dominion at the time, and was sentencing me to another death, because of my protest,

CAIN asked me personally, "is there anything you'd like to say?"

So, I stuck out my middle finger and thumb and said," fuck you, mother fucker!"

The humans in the coliseum saw how embarrassed and angry the emperor CAIN had become over this gesture, that this gesture has stuck forever. Other Senators, that were guests of CAIN, from our home world, who knew I was only here on Earth, protesting on my dead mother's behalf, for the humans, - who also knew the story of the trial, the word MF, and the rumors of the creation. - also laughed at CAIN'S discomfort.

Every human in the coliseum saw this happen, and how the other senators laughed at CAIN'S embarrassment. Slaves started doing it to their masters. The masters started doing it to the senators and even each other. Even the soldiers started doing it to authority as well.

But I have never explained to you humans the gesture - OR - the reason behind it.

Because CAIN was in his original form, he couldn't do it back to me. Flip me off. No thumb. - That's why I did it. Only humans have thumbs. And matching me, or beating me, at anything, AND EVERYTHING, has always been CAIN. Even if he has - TO CHEAT.

And this time, I beat him.
Forever. This gesture became – fumf,
and everyone was doing it, that this
gestures relevance has never
escaped Earth. Even though you
humans might be doing it to each
other, and don't know the history or
meaning of the original word MF, or
the thumb/ middle finger gesture –
CAIN DOES. And my brother feels very
deeply. It's been around, haunting
him, for a very long time. Well played,
humans.

CAIN, since my 600 million
human lifetimes, tied up with you on
this slave planet – some of those
lifetimes, I learned to say, “fumf”
millions of different ways.

Not only have I learned, I have
taught as well.

YOU CAN'T ESCAPE IT!!!!

My favorite one thus far,

.

Is this one - fumpf.

.

You wanna know why?

Because - I JUST CAME UP WITH
IT!!!

Just now.

THAT'S WHY.

Ha, ha big brother.

I know what you're thinking, big brother. "If Mother taught him to love me again, why does he treat me like this?" Because I can.

You're a mf, CAIN, and in this day in time, rat, that word doesn't mean what it used to anymore. And if you owned a set of balls, you'd know this - big brother.

You're weak.

Even as a God

Wanna bet, big brother? Watch?

MARK

TRIK

RAT

See?

Did any of this kill you? NO!

But I bet you're crying, aren't
you?

CAIN, your old classmate
Krishna, he's on my side now - Dad
told me so, and you remember how

much he hated me. He slaughtered the Hindus and Buddhist on your behalf, because they were going to topple the last vote.

But now he's on the side of democracy.

NOT exactly on my side, per say, but on the side of democracy. Which is fine by me.

CAIN, you better take a sip of coffee, smoke a joint, fart - and re-think this destroying the humans' idea, big brother. Oh yeeeeaaaaahhh, that's right

- YOU CAN'T FART.

BOYH, CAIN, I'll tell you what -

Farting in a crowded elevator can be sooooo much fun, brother. It can be seriously funny. If you're the one who's farting.

But how would you know?

Think about it brother..... I love you brother, but, GOD UP.

Chapter FIVE

THE FIRST AWAKENING

HUMBOLDT COUNTY CA. USA - MARCH
1st, 2010

My human prison body, Mikel, was attending school at The Deadwood College, in Humboldt County, living at the dorm. A black student started a fight with Mikel. The black student, who started the fight with Mikel, kept calling white Mikel the word nigger. The two of them were in an empty hallway, at the dorm, after hours. So, people that were in their rooms heard all the cussing and yelling. He said the "N" word to Mikel many, many times, the way people like him do.

Amongst each other.

Mikel respects Black people and would never use that word towards a black person. But we all know how rumors get twisted around, like the one about creation and the Garden of Eden, don't we?

So, when word of the argument got out to the football team that the white boy Mikel called the black student - the "N" Word, and not what actually happened, they decided to teach Mikel a lesson he would never forget, and might just even KILL HIM.

(DAMN!)

That's a pretty harsh punishment for something you didn't even do. I wonder why that black kid never took responsibility for using that "N" word against Mikel?

Well TEN GRAMS of PCP later, Mikel would , of course, go bonkers, but this event awoken me in the process, ABEL, for the first time.

Let me explain.....

Mikel, my human prison body, was sitting on the southside gas station of Eureka Ca. And a feeble invalid man, in a wheelchair, with the bluest most beautiful eyes, and a king like mane of long brown hair (almost like Jesus, except healthier and better). This man rolls up to Mikel they

chat. Mikel isn't completely bonkers at this moment yet – just pretty high.

The man in the wheelchair offers Mikel a beer - if- he will drink the beer back at his hotel room close by. Mikel and I really needed a beer, and we follow.

(But what happens next, I will never ever forget.)

The strange man, with the pretty blue eyes in the wheelchair, knew my name was Mikel – but as soon as we sat down, and it became quiet and still inside the room. It was as though we were

BROTHERS.

.....
no more stranger ranger bull shit, no
sir.

I sat down on one side of the
room.

CAIN the other.

And I immediately said,

“CAIN. These people deserve to
live. These are good people. They do
not deserve to be destroyed.”

“They love their young take care of their elders, and have taken good care of you for a very long time. I truly HOPED, big brother – by now; that we would all get further than this. Before Niburu, and before your molting, brother.”

I kid you not – that’s the first thing I said to this crippled stranger in a wheelchair, that I had just met. Mikel, my human prison body, shut down - and I, ABEL, awoke.

I looked into those eyes, with all that hair showing up ALL PERFECT, I looked into those eyes and said,” You have eyes just like Mom. You have Mom’s eyes. It’s good to see you again, brother, because I miss looking into her eyes, and we haven’t talked for a while big brother. It’s good we

can finally talk again; I have missed you.”

Cain and I talked for many hours. This was no hallucination. This was actually happening.

Cain and I talked for two hours, then I took a shower, and we talked for two more before I left.

The conversation got very intense at times. There was even me getting to the point of yelling as I defended Democracy, I screamed to CAIN, when he mocked Democracy.

**“DEMOCRACY IS PERFECT
MOTHER FUCKER, AND DON’T YOU**

**COMPLAIN ABOUT IT, WHEN IT
WAS YOUR IDEA!"**

Cain added," but it doesn't
work."

**"THAT'S BECAUSE YOU
WON'T LET IT WORK, MOTHER
FUCKER."** As in any type of family
dispute, emotions ran both sides of
the gambit. I will hand it to my
brother, he can take an ass chewing,
even if it's only from me. He never
raised his voice the way I did, but he
also takes after my dad. And, I, MOM.

He said to me.

“They are all mistakes, and I want them to go away’

I replied:

“The Chocolate chip cookies were a mistake, and you love your chocolate chip cookies! Can’t go a day without them! But you still love that mistake! Humans created those.”

We talked about all kinds of stuff the way you would in four hours. The last thing I said to CAIN as I walked out the door was this, “I have been MORE than patient with you, brother. CAIN, if you don’t change your mind about HUMANS this time, the next time we come back here, and you read that stupid book you wrote..... it’s gonna read **ABEL**

KILLED CAIN, MOTHER FUCKER!”

And I walked out.

While my brother's whiney ass was moaning and being a sissy, CAIN said he really wanted a book to read. He was lonely, but no one would get him one. Which turned out to be a good thing, for CAIN and the other humans, I - ABEL, ABEL TO DO ANYTHING, the other humans slaves I was standing up for, and is a really good story I will share later.

Chapter SIX

THE SHAME CREATION

My mother, EVE, was just like you, a shapeshifter, but much more evolved than your kind currently are.

One moment, Mom had gone to one of her favorite places in the galaxy, to do one of her favorite things she likes to do alone. Go to the water planet Aquarius and have the maidens of Aquarius pamper her and bathe.

CAIN was in puberty and would travel to Aquarius to rape maidens. He saw a beautiful human girl alone near a bath pond, about to take a bath, and he raped the human girl, not knowing it was his shape shifting Mother, EVE.

Mother never revealed herself, or creation that followed. From this

event, all life, the humans and THE RELATIVE were created.

ALL PHYSICAL LIFE

Please understand that the Relative has never existed, EVER, at anytime, anywhere, in the galaxy - and the GOD'S are afraid of it. The Relative causes feelings, emotions, and death, also creation - without a vote. And that's a lot of power to turn over to you human bastards.

Mom took the creation and hid it everywhere in the galaxies. Within many different times, dimensions, and planets.

Possibly, even other universes.
Mom was pretty crafty, diplomatically speaking.

CAIN discovered the truth about the relative, the humans and the other creations that came from the rape, and as CAIN was to become LORD of this dominion, he did not want any of this news coming out about his raping mother.

For many eon's, CAIN had a secret army, the luciferins pirates, who have no loyalties to any tribe or LORD in our Kingdom. The luciferins, hunted, and killed any and all creation and human they could find. However, they could not find it all.

When CAIN became LORD, CAIN created the conspiracy of an Immaculate Creation against mother and put mother on trial for conspiracy against the KING LORD GOD and the Galactic Empire. This was because mother wouldn't reveal where all the creation, or the relative, and humans were.

Word got out about the creation, and the Relative during the trial. So, did rumors of the rape, from MOM's defense. But in the final vote, the council sided with CAIN. Mom was taken from ADAM and sentenced to prison. That prison would be banishment and existence with her shame, the humans and relative of Earth. That same Earth was used as proof against mother during the trial and had a hand to play in mother's conviction. It was the only creation the GODS and the Galactic Council knew

of at the time, The Garden Of Eden.
Renamed because of the shame
verdict, Prison Earth.

When the verdict was
announced, I jumped at my brother
CAIN, said to him, "YOU MOTHER
FUCKER.", and hit him so hard that he
bled. It was, and still is, the first and
only recorded act of violence inside
the council chambers. It was
nicknamed THE BIG BANG. Cause let
me explain, a demi- god doesn't bleed
very often, so that had to be one
helluva punch.

This is how I went to prison, and
why I am still here, even though
Mother is dead and gone now. When I
talked to the council about my crime
against the LORD CAINS authority,
using my royal influence, I convinced

the council to let me do my time, side by side, with mother.

This started a revolution of sorts, because I am a prince back home, and watch over my own portion of our kingdom. Others began to come here, and learn about humans, earth, and the relative – learn, and help.

HELP HERE, AND BACK AT HOME.

I am loved many light years away from here.

Another conspiracy involved ENOCH and the luciferins. The

luciferins taught Enoch weaponry and crafts, in exchange for humans to torture, kill, eat, and hunt or enslave, trade and barter.

Mom never confessed the location, or how many creations she made. So, the council, led by Michael, voted for crucifixion. Michael, I had later found out, had received a secret message from Mother that crucifixion was her will. Fore she wanted to take the secret with her, and keep the creation safe, along with the relative, and all the other humans.

This is what I learned from her as we stayed in prison together.

While we were together in prison, she taught me how to love

humans. Because, to a GOD, your kind, are pretty UGLY to look at. Honestly. Even I felt this way. And, had it not been for my outburst in court, and me being in prison with mother, I wouldn't know how to even look at you, much less love you, or accept you humans either. This was literally taught to me over lifetimes. Many lifetimes, to be exact.

You humans are a dirty lot. Smell funny. And your body does weird stuff, like, get sick, fart, age, get pimples, tremble when you're cold, sweat when you're hot – weird stuff.

However, Mom has taught me, NOT only how to look at you and to love you, but to stand up for you as well. Long before my protest took root humans were treated very terribly for

eons, and mother told me her dream.
So, in my six hundred million lifetimes,
I have started revolution after
revolution / Renaissance after
Renaissance, changing treatment of
the humans over the entire history of
the Earth Prison.

However, during my time with
MOM, as she taught me to forgive my
brother, Enoch, and Michael again, she
also taught me how to respect you
human bastards, the relative and all of
the creation.

And love you humans, too.

She asked me to protect you,
cause, even though you're one of the
ugliest and disrespected creatures of
the galaxy - you still belong here.

Need to be protected, loved, and respected. Not enslaved, eaten, and hunted or destroyed for fun – or for your planet's natural resources.

I gave her my word.

And currently that's what I am doing. I have been in this human prison body, on this planet, protesting for the last six hundred million human lifetimes. (That's what my father ADAM told me in our meeting this morning when he was asking me to come home.

My reply to him, "600 million, is that all? – I knew you would say that, I knew you would say that - you're just like your mom, was his response.

I protest against my big brother CAIN, trying to teach him to love his creation, as I do, and as mom did. In the Milky Way prison galaxy, on the prison earth. I have been in conversation after conversation for eons with the KING LORD GOD, and the others that come and try to bust me out, about you humans and the good qualities you have and, also, what CAIN and his Allies put you humans through. I tell them everything about you. When and every time I die in my human form, I go home, tell the GOD'S everything I know. And come immediately back.

CAIN and his allies hunt me, of course, always jail me if they find me – just to keep me quiet. CAIN has his own supporters too, back home and here.

Dad is ready for your awakening. The KING LORD GOD is curious, and possibly still “maybe/ maybe not” undecided. Time will tell.

Dad warned that the next four hundred years will be hard for the humans and the Earth, as Niburu is where Cain will molt. And, as Niburu sits in the sky, your Earth-, because Niburu is so massive; it will block out your sun. Naturally, this is going to cause problems and conditions to change down here on the Earth’s surface. And at this time, as I have said, the Earth is only a prison - and quarantined from the galaxy. So, at this time, I can find NO authority that cares what this might do to you humans, or this planet.

The GOD'S, and the Galactic Empire also have another problem to contend with, if the GOD's are going to assimilate you into the Galactic REPUBLIC. You humans dehydrate and defecate. And at this time, there are no water fountains or bathrooms anywhere in the Galaxy. What are they going to do about that? And how long will that take to figure out and fix? And if and when you do show up, are they going to catch the Relative, get sick, catch farting, catch a pimple, or age and die? No GOD wants that.

Your very existence, and the relatives' existence, has been a very long - sometimes brutal argument for eon's now. Sometimes the Galaxy has been much divided on what to do with you. This is a debate that's gone back and forth forever, just as I have stood with you humans forever.

Chapter SEVEN

THE IMMACULATE CREATION

Let me explain to you, the courts and you juror's about immaculate creation, and why this is so highly treasonous where I come from. The Galaxy is so much bigger than anything you could ever imagine, however - that's because we have been here for a very long time. And we create, us, your true GODS - the shapeshifters. The good book says you were created in his image, doesn't it? And you are a shape shifter, just not as highly evolved yet.

We learned to create from the OTHERS, our grand teacher masters, and creation is a process. No ONE

GOD can just create. There must be a union, and a voting process. It takes a lot of time, because there must be a balance for EVERYTHING to continue to exist. Whatever is created must exist, and be placed in a certain spot, and containing certain qualities of the two gods, in order for it to be. A tribe council on where to put the creation, so that other GODS can raise and watch over the creation - for whatever purpose the creation serves.

Such as, there is one creation, that you would call a sun, in another galaxy. We were allowed to create this sun to harvest energy, back when we still had to use what you call mechanics. If one GOD creates, without a vote, EVERYTHING - and that includes the other dimensions and Galaxy's we do not have dominion over, or might be a part of another kingdom - this could start a war

between different galaxies, universe, dimensions, and even - between different times.

Thus, very frowned upon and just doesn't happen. Ask Lucifer what happens when a GOD does an immaculate creation, and He will tell you, that you are stripped of your GOD status, banished from the kingdom, and you will have to spend eternity with your creation.

So, this is how CAIN used his authority to uncover the creation. And as Lord, He used his authority to expose the relative, and more of the creation. Now I've told you about the relative already, but let's recap.

The relative, as I have said before, has never existed EVER, anywhere, in this galaxy, universe, or dimension. Not anywhere, no way, no how. It is completely unique. The relative causes PHYSICAL. The RELATIVE, in my opinion is the evolution of the spiritual. As mother insisted.

The RELATIVE was said to be created out of an immaculate creation and given SHAME status by the galactic council.

The relevant is physical and causes emotions, decay and death, which our kingdom overcame eons ago, and hasn't happened in our spiritual kingdom for a very, very, very long time. Our kind have created ways to stay alive forever, but your relative

beat everything we developed to stay alive. Half of our kingdom was wiped out upon its discovery. And the fear this caused among the GODS helped CAIN convict Mother at the trial.

The Creation was given SHAME status. The same way you CAN NOT just create; you also CAN NOT simply just destroy, for this too can cause an imbalance in all things.

There must be a balance.

Also unique to the relevant is how the Relative is physical, we spirits and souls are not physical. We do not have skin. We do not have feelings. We do not show emotions and we do not have taste or feel intoxication. Plus, we don't have eye's like yours.

We cannot see eye to eye. Plus,
everything you touch will grow up,
decay, and even die. Everything.

So, you can see how some very
advanced GODS do not want your kind
around. You humans must understand
that everything balances on THE
EXISTENCE. The existence is about
half the size of one grain of salt. When
your human scientist, look out into the
horizon, I want them to realize that
this dimension is very thin, and like a
plane of glass. This dimension is as
thin as a paper cut, but as big as the
imagination.

And like I said that plane of
glass is balanced perfectly on the
existence, and the existence is half
the size of one grain of salt.

So, you could understand, if we tip over this plane we're on, everything - including our kingdom and the other GOD'S will disappear. This is about their survival. And the other creator, our elders' creator, will have to start over. And the elders don't want that either. Just like your dominions overseer, **THE KING LORD GOD** - the elder creator is also loving and needs companionship.

Let me explain things to you this way humans.... You are one speck of sand on a very big and very vast beach. AND NOBODY WANTS - **YOUR KIND** - HERE.

THIS IS A REPUBLIC PLACE.

**THIS IS A REPUBLIC
PROPERTY.**

**THIS IS FOR THE REPUBLIC
ONLY.**

**AND YOU ARE - NOT - PART
OF THE REPUBLIC.**

YOU MUST MOVE ALONG,
HUMAN.

OR I WILL BE FORCED TO CALL
POLICE.

And "IF" I were a cop in CAIN'S
crew, I'd wake you humans up after I
had ten of my cop buddies with me.

And – just for kicks, I'd shove my gun
into your unarmed face, and tell you,

**“Hey buddy, yeah, time to
go, human. Yeah, uh, we know -
YOUR KIND - sleep, BUT, your kind
- CAN'T SLEEP here.**

It's against the law.

**Never mind this is OUR
church.**

Consider this your warning.”

You humans are born of sin and
SHAME, and there isn't anyone that
cares. Not no-one. And human, it's

taken me an awful many lifetime to care for you. A very long time. Many lifetimes.

I'm ready to give up!!!

Cause jury let's admit it and be honest. You take care of the things with tails better than you take care of some of your own family. members. How many prophets and messiahs are you humans going to kill?

What about robbing homeless people?

Humans are ugly, you get old, you get pimples, and YOU DIE – poop,

fart, pee. Even I sometimes hate this human experience. I do. I truly do.

Your soul doesn't die, but your body does. And when you're reborn, you don't remember anything from your past.

And we, as GODS, can't figure this out. And it's contagious. What are we GODS supposed to do with you?

The SHAME CREATION is the explanation as to why the church says to you, "humans are born of shame". AS SOON AS **YOUR KIND**, ARE BORN.

Never mind your history

Does this make sense, jury?

Let me explain, in your world, your time, things back (in our world) take a long time to get here. Time is irrelevant back there.

BUT HERE?!!! Try to get your human manager at work to cut you some slack on being late 17 minutes. Time is obviously an issue here on Earth, SAME WITH YOU HUMANS AND ME

-Thus, the problem.....

-I am running out of time, cause look, if you go - I GO WITH YOU. (And I do miss my kingdom)

Love one another from this day forth, and maybe – just maybe, we can turn this vote our way.

-Look, jury, it's been my experience, in the past 600 million human lifetimes, that **MIRACLES – ALWAYS – come at the last minute.** And saving you is going to take a miracle.

IF YOU DON'T CHANGE YOUR WAYS. AND, EVEN IF YOU DO CHANGE YOUR WAYS.

JURY, THIS IS GOING TO TAKE A MIRACLE.

But if the humans, and I, can't be heard, at least I, ABEL, ABEL TO DO ANYTHING, at least I am ABEL to use my voice.

Chapter EIGHT

Dad Calls Finally

Dad, and everyone else, are so evolved back home, he asked me why I chose the Prison Host Body Mikel Neily Jr.," the world, and CAIN'S F.O.P. allies treat him like shit".

“Yeah, I know, Dad, but Texans are a special breed of human, and putting out fires and working side by side with the brave, is such a blast dad. Sleep is soooooo good after work too. It’s so beautiful out there in the mountains. Get to see all types of your animals’ father.”

“What about ignorance?
Wouldn’t you rather KNOW than
learn?”

“Dad. Discovery is fun. There is nothing like the feeling you get after the words, “WOW! NO SHIT!”

“And that thing the humans do with their eyes, with the water.....”

-“Oh? Crying?” I said.

-“Yes, is that fun?”

“That one is tricky, DAD, it just all depends on what you’re crying about. Mikel cried when his daughter was born, they were tears of joy. And he cried a lot when his divorce happened, and he came to terms with losing his daughter. Both different types of crying.”

-“What about emotions?”

“Once again, depends, they can be fun.

“HOW EVER, AS A DIPLOMAT TO THESE HUMANS, AND TO THE GALACTIC EMPIRE AS WELL, I DON'T THINK EVERYONE ELSE, **in the galactic empire** SHOULD HAVE ANY EMOTIONS TILL MUCH, MUCH MORE EVOLUTION AND AWARENESS HAS BEEN ACCOMPLISHED.”

“For example, just the word MOTHER FUCKER can get a human killed. And these aren't the only words that have that type of power over human emotions that could get one human killed by another human. And the entire galactic empire is NOT ready for this – that's my humble opinion about emotions.”

-“I'm so proud you like the Grateful Dead, son.”

“Best work ethic in the industry, Dad, and I still appreciate yours and mom’s work ethic. Literally almost the only thing I could find on this planet, that reminds me of you. Plus, everyone hates them, or doesn’t understand them, or they are afraid of them. Just like you. Just like Mom, and Jesus. Plus, I miss you guys.”

“I want to come home, Dad, I truly do – however, I have a commitment to Mikel’s father, mother, son, daughter, sister, brother in law, nephew, niece, and cousins too. Let’s just hope the vote goes our way this time.”

“Dad, I love you as much as my mother, all though we are apart. I AM going to be a good KING, my struggle will pay off, and my suffering will make

me a better KING. Please trust me, Dad.”

“Son, I have to tell you something, the last time you confronted CAIN, and walked thirty miles thru the battle front to give CAIN that book? Well, word got out and now there’s a gift giving holiday in some Galaxy’s. Slave share books with each other and their masters in honor of that event, in support of your actions. You’re already a famous King.”

- “What the fuck did you just tell me!?”

“Yes, you heard me correct, ABEL, You created a holiday on other slave planets and Galaxy’s that night, by giving CAIN that book, instead of

killing him the way you wanted. I'm proud of you for that. And you're famous."

Chapter NINE

THE SECOND AWAKENING

Arcata California March
first, 2010 -

This is my second awakening in this human prison body named Mikel Neily. During my first awakening was when I confronted my brother CAIN for the first time, in this lifetime. After many lifetimes of fighting and abuse. Millions of them, we could finally talk.

After CAIN and I's talk, I wandered the streets of Arcata, Ca. USA, and sat down as the God, RAH quietly talked to me about who I was, ABEL, ABEL TO DO ANYTHING, and our family history. RAH reminded me, in his soft voice – just giving me clues, about the original creation of mankind, and the rape that I had forgotten about.

I remember the rage I felt when I put the pieces together, that CAIN – not ADAM, had mated mom and created this mess.

YOU MEAN, CAIN'S A MOTHER
FUCKER?!

Which helped me understand why, as I ABEL, talking to my brother

CAIN earlier in that hotel room,-
exactly WHY I kept calling this man,
my brother, a MF. Helped me
understand why I said what I said
when I left his hotel room. (CAIN, I
have been more than patient with you,
if you don't change your mind about
the humans this time, the next time
you read that stupid book you wrote,
it's gonna say ABEL KILLED CAIN, MF)

I truly, at the time had no idea
why I kept saying MF to CAIN. Here he
was, my brother, this is our first
meeting, and just like scratching
poison oak - I couldn't stop myself. I
had to do it.

One moment we were talking
about democracy, and CAIN was
explaining why it doesn't work. (I'm
pretty certain this is when the name

calling started) cause I defiantly said to him in a loud voice, "Democracy doesn't work cause you won't let it work, MF."

He started to say something about the corruption of Democracy again, and that's when I yelled, "DEMOCRACY IS PERFECT, MF, AND DON'T YOU COMPLAIN ABOUT IT WHEN IT WAS YOUR IDEA!"

Even though I was awake enough to know the name of my soul, I still had no recollection of how we, or I, got here, or why I was still here. The anger I felt upon learning the truth of the creation, the shame, and the rape of my mother EVE, sent me into a fit of rage. And my poor human prison body, Mikel, had to spend some time

in the Looney Bin and Humboldt County Jail for that.

Poor guy. No crime committed. Just one pissed off soul that was expressing itself.

Recently, and as to why we are experiencing my second awakening, my poor human has had a run of bad luck. He's lost his job, his house burned down, he's living under a bridge in a new town with no friends, and his family has all turned their back on him here on Earth. He felt terrible when his daughter and mother said they never wanted to speak to him again and tried to kill himself.

The watchers' and ADAM had sent demons here to Earth to help

Mikel. Gave him a shot and stayed with him through the night to help keep him alive. In a show of good faith that this was a wise choice to take the demons help, Mikel received a phone call from his mortal father. A father who hasn't called Mikel in over NINE YEARS. And also told Mikel he never wanted to talk to him FIVE years ago.

Had that father waited another hour, another ten minutes, another day, another week, another year - to make that call, neither Mikel, nor I, would be here right now. It was that one phone call, the call from his mortal father, and the help from the demons, that kept Mikel company - that stopped his suicidal desire.

Hope was not totally lost.

Mikel's leg had swollen up, and he couldn't walk for two days. My prison host body Mikel was stuck at his homeless camp for three days under a bridge, near the Santa Cruz wash, in the city of Tucson, AZ.

At this camp, Mikel had a large pile of sticks and wood next to his sleeping spot. On this pile of wood was this one medium size stump piece. And Mikel and I kept noticing that this piece of wood keeps changing shape. One minute it looks like a laughing clown, the next a deadly clown, then a laughing bear, then a grateful dead symbol. Plus, we would leave and come back, and the stump would be completely turned around, or moved to the other side of the pile, or even flipped over, as if somebody had moved it.

Then we started hearing the voice. This voice was not only familiar to Mikel, the human prison host, but to me as well since I hadn't heard this voice for quite some time. One time, Mikel, had been in a car accident, told he would never walk again by the doctor. This same voice, the voice of my father ADAM, told Mikel to get up and walk.

Mikel told the voice," I can't. The doctor just said I'm crippled."

Dad said to Mikel," Uh yeah, about that. Mikel, he's a man, and I AM A GOD - who you going to listen to?"

"Well when you put it like that."
And Mikel got up and walked away.

This was also the voice that led Mikel to TAOS NM, where he would meet his future ex-wife, fight fires, and have a child named Shaolin. Neither of them knew at the time, but Mikel's ex-wife was with him in the hospital room and was the only other person to hear the doctor tell Mikel that he would never walk again.

Before I awoke, ADAM my father, talked to Mikel about why his father had called, and why his father hadn't called for nine years. And then I awoke when he said".....I am your true father. I want to talk to you son."

"ADAM, is that really you?
Dad!!"

“Yes, son, how are you?”

“Uh? Really Dad? Seriously? I’m living under a bridge – does that sum it up? Or you need more?”

“I see that, ABEL. Now, Mikel, I will ask you something I’ve asked you before, what do you want out of life?”

And I loved Mikel’s response, “Lord, I want success.”

“Success means lots of failing, Mikel?”

-“As you can tell we got that down perfect, father. So, I bet we can handle it.”

-“What kind of success do you want, Mikel?”

“You know, Lord, after what happened last time, and a few other times, I’m going to leave that vague this time. Last time I gave you a detailed list, my daughter was hurt, and it destroyed the family. And as you can tell, I’m not doing well either. Besides, if you just open the right doors for me, I can easily handle the rest, LORD. I’m not as young as I used to be.”

-“OK. But seriously, Mikel, I need a little more, tell me what kind of success?”

“I want success in every job I do. I want success in learning my skills and crafts. And I want success in creating a foundation for my family, the Neilly’s - that will never be washed away with time as though it were carved from stone. Not even water fire or wind could take this foundation away from this earth. Is that good enough for you, LORD?”

“Yes. I guess so.”

As Mikel and I talked with this shapeshifter God ADAM, all sorts of creatures were coming out of his face. Even his clothes were made from

animals that were always changing. Sometimes ADAM even had three and four and sometimes five faces. He was continually shape shifting.

Anybody would find this creepy.

Possibly even terrifying. But as I am Mikel - and Mikel is me, ABEL, we found this to be both fascinating and beautiful, and fun to watch. This shape shifting GOD - ADAM, is also my father, who I hadn't seen face to face in this lifetime yet. And honestly, I don't know with any certainty that I, ABEL, have ever seen my father here on earth. Ever.

"Son, you have been gone so long, why won't you leave this dump?"

“Dad, you know my commitment is to Mother, and her dream.”

-“I don’t like to see you suffering.”

“The more I suffer, the better KING I will be. You want to trust me with your kingdom, don’t you?”

“I already trust you will make a fine King, son. I want to take you home. I am lonely and I’m ready for my grandson.”

-“Hate to break it to you dad, but I intend to raise those kids here first. With Mikel.”

“Why? This place is a dump?”

“Wasn’t always. Remember when it was just the four of us living here with the originals? It was beautiful back then.”

“Yes. Yes, I do. That’s why I don’t come back here very often. ABEL, I don’t want you raising my grandkids in such a place as this. “

“Dad? When do I get to be an adult? When are my decisions listened to and respected?”

“I see. You’re right. I must respect your decision as though they were my own. But ABEL, you know

what's going to happen when Niburu gets here for CAIN'S molting. The rumors of famine, drought, and disease are true. Do you want to be here for that?"

"Not particularly, Dad, no. But if the vote doesn't go our way, I will have to for mother. I gave her my word. I will NEVER give up. Not on her, her legacy, or her desire. OR THIS DUMP, EITHER."

"ABEL, what about your kingdom back home? You're greatly missed and loved there."

- "What about Mikel, and his mortal family?"

-“That THING? Why should I care? We kill him, his family moves on.”

“No, DAD, mom wouldn’t allow you to talk to Mikel that way, or about him like that, and neither will I. His life is important to him, equally as much as it is to me, your son. Help him. Don’t kill him. Besides, that would leave a mark of shame on his mortal family. His mother, DAD, she is an angel. And his father has done nothing but be a good servant to you, has he not? Those two deserve better.”

“And, father, Mikel’s daughter, Shaolin, man – DAD, I’m telling you, there’s something about that girl. She doesn’t deserve that. Pull rank on me, and kill Mikel tonight, she will suffer a

shame mark for a lifetime. None of us need that."

"I need you home son. You have been here 600 million human lifetimes doing this protest....isn't that enough?"

-“600 million? Is that all?”

"I knew you would say something like that son, you are just like your mom EVE."

"I miss her DAD. I really do. I'm glad CAIN has her eyes. SO, he has to always be reminded when he looks at himself in the mirror."

-“I have to tell you son, when news got back to me about how you hit your brother in the chamber, when the verdict was read – I was so proud of you. I’m still proud of you. So much has changed back home. Our kingdom is ten times the size it was before your protest began. The implants we use now are organic, son.”

“I don’t want that yet, father, didn’t you hear what Mikel and I have asked for?”

“Your wife is back home, not here.”

“You will have to send her here.”

-“To this dump?”

“It’s not really that bad if you’re a human, and it’s all you know. I love it. And obviously, I would die another 600 million more human lifetimes – or more, to defend it. I LOVE YOU DAD, but I gave MOM my word, and I love mom too. You will just have to trust me.”

“OK. I am not used to doing that, but you sound pretty sure of yourself. That makes me proud.”

“Do I sound sure of myself, that’s good to hear? Cause sometimes I feel like this is hopeless with CAIN and the council. It’s been so long.”

“Son, the tide is turning.
Because of what you’ve done, and
what Jesus and the others have told
us, we have more support than ever.
Even Krishna is on your side, well the
side of democracy anyways.”

“WHAT? He hates me?”

“Son, I want to tell you
something. Because of what you did
for CAIN the last time you two spoke,
CAIN has allowed a gift giving holiday
on other slave planets. And the word
got out about how you crossed a
battle front to give CAIN a book, to
stop a battle, slaves have started their
own book giving holiday. A book giving
holiday in your honor.”

What the fuck you just say!?”

I'M SERIOUS, son."

- " Is that why my daughter,
Shaolin, is into books, lord?

-“Possibly, Mikel,
possibly.”

-“Are you Mescalito?”

-“No, Mikel, but he is a Brother
of mine.”

That one little act of
compassion, Dad, did that to CAIN,
started holidays across the galaxy for
other slave planets?”

-“Yes.”

-“Are you for real? That’s crazy?”

“Oh, ABEL, you have been human so long I can barely stand the sight of you, much less understand anything you say, what did you just say?”

-“That’s AWESOME!”

“What?”

“Never mind. That means it’s a good thing.”

Chapter TEN

Life ain't easy for a boy named....

Pt. 1

I'm the prison host body, Mikel.

How do you think I feel?

Here I am stuck in this inner-galactic family feud, between CAIN and ABEL from the Bible, and not even the GOD, or ADAM, I mean, gives one shit about me? - "What that thing? We kill him, and his family moves on."

WTH?

One day I'm a Hot Shot
wildland fireman for the USFS, who
had to retire when Eureka Ca. Police
Officer Mark Bitchup, broke my knee,
and in that same year lost 19 friends -
working a fire in Yarnell, AZ.

BUT NOW I'M THE PRISON HOST
BODY OF ABEL!?

FROM THE BIBLE!?

WTH?

-And the stuff this guy is
saying.....

I mean ABEL'S right, my father –
MIKE Sr., is a good servant to God.
And my mother, SHE IS AN ANGEL. In
my opinion.

But I'm just a THING?

Let me put it to you this way,
I'm a human, and I'm having a tough
time already. AND I DON'T NEED THIS.
Would you?

-Gotta go to work.

-No. the gods need to talk right
now.

TELL THAT TO MY BOSS!! I have a life to live too, you know. All you three are doing is using me to argue and driving me crazy. I

DON'T NEED IT. NOT ADAM, NOT CAIN, NOT EVEN ABEL. I have my own family struggles, and helping your family, ISN'T helping mine. Get Lost ALL THREE OF YOU.

Look here's how I see it.

If you are truly God's, and ADAM - I do truly appreciate my legs, but look - I'm sick of being stuck in the middle of this. And I'm tired of what it takes to get ya'll together. I might've liked drugs when I was young, but it's not my thing anymore. Ya'll wanna talk, that's fine. But, I personally feel,

like you three are taking advantage of
my six years on Grateful Dead Tour.

-“Kill me? His family moves on?”

I’m sorry God but, FUMF!

Just find another, “that thing” to
use. I have a life too, YA KNOW.

I might be only one, in 600
Million, to you. But, JUST like you, I am
ONE to me. And I am an important
ONE, if only to myself.

Pt. 2

I can remember the day ABEL
awoke, and met CAIN for the first time
again – this life time, back in Humboldt
County . March 1st, 2010, I never
understood, as Mikel, what was
happening. Why was this so intense?
And how did I have this love for this
stranger? A love, I, as Mikel, haven't
felt for another man - ever- in this
lifetime, since the passing of my
brother. Looking back from before
Topher's death 20 years ago.

I've only known this invalid
stranger a few short minutes.

Why does he keep calling me
ABEL?

Why do I keep calling him,
CAIN?

-And saying" mf" after almost everything I say to this guy? He's a stranger, and an invalid, and for Pete's sake, an invalid stranger that just bought me a beer -

What's MY problem?

Where did my manners go?

Why is this going on for four hours?

And why are we talking about the fate of humanity like we are not human ourselves? And the Earth, too?

What's going on?

I remember the talk with the sun God Rah, when ABEL and I left CAIN behind. I remember the rage ABEL felt, and expressed, when ABEL was reminded of the creation- and the rape between CAIN and his mother EVE. It literally took the mighty voice of Jesus, over and over, all night long, to remind us,

THOU SHALT NOT KILL.

That's when ABEL decided that instead of killing CAIN, he would do something CAIN had asked for. CAIN said, all he wanted was to read a book. So instead of killing CAIN, ABEL walked thirty miles, from Arcata, CA - to the Deadwood college, just to retrieve a book, the LOST HERO, and walk that book back to CAIN in Eureka, CA. A book my daughter, Shaolin, had just

recently sent me, Mikel, for father's day.

ABEL and I, Mikel, walked all the way from Arcata to College of the Dead wood back to Eureka just to give CAIN what he asked for - a book to read. This stopped the entire destruction of another slave planet. Called off some type of attack. (Somewhere else in the galaxy, I guess.). What I can tell you is this, because of all the information ABEL was getting; that during this event, I - Mikel, went nuts.

Literally.

I was seeing five types of aliens that were living on top of us. And they hated us humans. Their eyes were

different than ours. Some of the alien's eyes, blinked in an opposite direction. Some had no eyes at all. And there were others that had light behind their eyes. There were even Vampires as well. Literal vampires. I bummed a smoke off one waiting for the bus.

It was nice to hear the voice of GOD again. Or ADAM, I mean. Because, in my own lifetime, I have had my own experience with God's voice.

Or ADAM'S voice, I mean.

-I have often followed THIS voice.

His voice, the voice of ADAM,
got me out of a wheelchair for life.
Helped me become a firefighter for the
USFS. Helped me smoke a joint on
TAOS Mountain. (Not bad for a white
guy) Even helped me meet my
daughter's mother and lived out one
of the coolest dreams a man could
dream up.

-I have followed this voice often.

However, from 2001 to
October 16th 2010, I haven't heard, not
one peep out of this voice. The last
thing I heard the voice of GOD say to
me, until this moment, was - simply

- **“Trust me. This is my will.”**

Eureka police Officer Mark Bitchup, and his partner Rookie Officer Lane Rabang, were beating me up. Officer Mark Bitchup kept telling me, **"prepare to die, homeless man, prepare to die."** He was laughing and having so much fun. Officer Lane Rabang admitted to me that, "My favorite part of my job is making **you homeless people scream in PAIN - NOW SCREAM** " as Lane Rabang tried to break my wrist twisting the handcuffs.

The fifth time Officer Bitchup was choking me unconscious, I thought for certain "this is it, this is how my life ends". And that's when GOD, I mean ADAM, said to me -

“TRUST ME. This is my will”

When Officer Bitchup ordered Officer Lame Rabang, of the Eureka Police Department, to lie to the jury, I knew what GOD wanted me to do, and why I was here. Why they were beating me. I ended up fighting the Humboldt County police department for my freedom in a trial that lasted over three weeks, and a year in custody waiting for my trial.

A trumped-up trial at that. Trumped up charges, and a closing argument from the district attorney that lasted nine days to irritate the jurors. Trying to irritate them and force a guilty verdict. (didn't work)

This event would ruin my fire career when Officer Mark Bitchup stuck his mag light behind my knee and pushed down, until my knee was ruined forever, and broke it. So, as you can see, after just this one event - why I, Mikel, am hesitant to put complete blind faith- again - in God, or ADAM, I mean.

- And there are other events, as well.

When I went nuts, from the PCP attack, at the hands of the football players of Dead wood college, the hospital fed me all kinds of pills. They fried out my brain. It took four years for me to feel like myself again from that event. For a while I thought the meeting with CAIN was just my imagination. And I haven't, until now

told anyone about this. You are the first person I have told.

I've been under extreme stress again. Fore I have just started a new life in Tucson, and I'm homeless - again- because of a house fire.

And, yeah, I did go over the edge intentionally last night. I'm tired of the suffering, when I'm supposed to be doing the right thing - the will of GOD. Where is my reward for being a humble steward?

When I was in Bisbee, back in August, I did acquire some Bat Medicine. And Bat Medicine is the magic of death and rebirth. Seven out of ten shaman die from it. And I did die last week. TWICE! And I was on the

third attempt to die that week, this time intentional, when demons and a shape shifter GOD, named ADAM, showed up with that all too familiar voice – the voice I have followed since I first heard it back in 1999, in San Antonio, TX.

When ADAM and ABEL talked last time, one of the things I said to ADAM was this, I don't mind being a host body to royalty, but look, I'm tired of my mind being pushed by drugs in order for you three to talk. Or - you and I, ADAM - for that matter. (Even though that hasn't always been the case.)

And thankfully ADAM agreed.

Chapter ELEVEN

YOU WILL NEVER WALK AGAIN?

Pt. 1

As Mikel, I wish I could say with any certainty that the story of ABEL and CAIN were false. Let me explain **my** point of view. (First) Let's keep ABEL and CAIN out of the picture and let me just explain **me** - **MIKEL**.

I've definitely had a strange life.

Indeed, I have.

Very spoiled as a youth, through my twenty's growing up in Dallas, TX. And the orneriest and the stupidest person behind the wheel of a car, till I calmed down in my thirties. Raised in the church on my Dad's side of the SPLIT – family, and went to church, when I lived with him for a brief stint, six days a week – twice on Wed. When I lived with my mortal father, Mike Sr. I went to a religious school and Bible was always the first and third class of the day.

I hated it. Because of all the hypocrisy, and obvious scams. The church my father went to back then was huge for its time. Led by a crooked televangelist named Robert Tilton, matched only by Oral Ray Roberts, of Oklahoma, at the time. Therefore, because of the numbers, the hypocrisy was over abundant. And I would always site Bible verse, or

commandment – with number,
anytime I saw hypocrisy from
authority. Just like an NFL football
game referee throwing his yellow flag
during a foul play.

Anytime I saw hypocrisy –I
dropped commandment, and number
– or - verse, chapter, and number, I
would site verse or commandment
verbatim get scolded by
hypocritical authority, and reply to
said hypocrite by saying, “This is for
your protection. I don’t want you
spending eternity in HELL. “

This happened almost daily. I
was a hero to my 30 other classmates.
There was one time, at this church,
they were having a “REVIVAL”.

This is where the spirit of GOD has come down to the church, and Miracles were abundant. Crazy stuff like people becoming slain in the spirit would happen.

Being “slain in the spirit” is when a Christian is walking , minding their own business, and an ANGEL OF GOD, would smite said person, they would fall down, and be out for a minute or two, some times as long as thirty minutes - and go to heaven for a visit. With my then mortal brother, Tohper, his "slain in the spirit" episode lasted for thirty minutes - right as everybody was getting out of school - RIGHT, FRONT AND CENTER OF THE ONLY EXIT, (always the attention hog) - so I have my doubts about “slain in the spirit”.

The people who were being slain in the spirit, claim, that while they are “slain in the spirit”, they - “go to heaven and get to walk around. Talk to dead relatives”. This happened everywhere. On stairs. In hallways. In the elevator. On stage in front of a televised audience, and - if you’re my brother, for thirty minutes, blocking the exit for every parent picking up their children from school.

At the height of this “REVIVAL”, the spirit of Jesus came during a sermon, walked around the entire church, went thru an air conditioning vent, and left his image behind to prove that it happened, IN DUST. And only one person, the quarterback for the football team’s mother, who was also an original member of the church, saw this event happen. The church decreed, “This is a miracle air conditioning vent!” and roped it off

with red velvet rope for all the
“believers” to see - for two months.

In fact, our entire class of 31,
stopped class one day and went
across the street to look at the
“miracle A/C duct with the dusty
image of Jesus on it”. Now keep in
mind, only the believers can see this
“miracle”, and those that couldn’t
were going to spend eternity in HELL.

So, at a religious school, seeing
this before finals, was very important.
And as we sat there, the A + students
immediately saw it, and slowly the
others followed. Until there were four
of us left. Liz, Chris, the quarterback
whose mother was the one, and only
one, to see the miracle from start to
a/c duct completion, and of course -
me.

Liz was the first to go. "Oh, I finally see it". I don't blame her. The teacher had just started the burning in hell bit for the first round of BELIEVE ME OR LIVE IN HELL. Chris, the quarterback, and I held out for another twenty minutes of YOUR GONNA BURN IN HELL IF YOU DON'T SEE IT, before Chris, who came from a large family in the church, crossed over.

Which left me and the quarterback, whose own mother started this entire fiasco to begin with. I gotta hand it to brother bear, he hung in there for a long time with me, at least another ten minutes. But what the teacher didn't know, was that Liz, Chris, QB, and I were doing was we were stalling the teacher till lunch. She didn't know that, but the four of us did.

And because she didn't know that, she was taking this very seriously. "Only the believers can see this miracle, if you don't see it - you don't believe in Jesus, you're damned to hell" (let me remind you we are only 14 years old) and the teacher's final strike to the QB was this, I will never forget it, because it was so below the belt - even for a person like her.

- "Bobby, it was your own mother that saw this miracle happen. How is she going to feel when I tell her that you think she's a liar, and you're going to burn in hell for eternity?"

(Damn? - Right?)

Well, that left just me, and we still had ten minutes till lunch. There was no image of Jesus in the dust of that vent. And I talked the QB, Chris, and Liz into this so I'd have a long time to look for it – but I never saw it. Trust me it wasn't there, just like my mortal brother, Topher, didn't go to heaven for thirty minutes, causing a traffic jam, when school got out either.

But, while teach is giving me the third degree about Hell, and how I can accept Christ right now and I will see the miracle. Liz and Chris – and even the entire honor roll to cross the line first; they couldn't take any more of the insults from teach, each of the students kept mouthing the words, "just say you can see it"

-NO! - was my opinion. Cause I knew it wasn't there, now that I've spent twenty minutes looking at that dust. Not just no, but Hell no. I'm not lying for you, not about this, not about Jesus.

Pt. 2

My mother likes to go to Gypsy's from time to time for fun. Over my lifetime she reports to me what some of the most inspiring, or correct psychics have said to her. This is over 45 years, of course. And, coming from more than one source, over 45 years - this is what my mother reports back to me when she visits. That I am a very old soul, and therefore I will have a rough and unusual life.

OK.

NOW - lets you and I interject ABEL for a second. 600,000,000 human lifetimes, yeah, I'd concur that's pretty old. And me, personally, I've gone to mediums as well. Some are fake.

Some are right on target. But there's one medium I will never get out of my head, because she wasn't faking, and it was strange.

I was between fire jobs, with a very uncertain future as to whether I would ever fight fires again. So, that was my motivation to see the medium. I will never forget this encounter. This woman was so astounded by what she witnessed or felt. So, astounded that

she had to sit in the corner, apologetically of course, and absorb things. She even cried. Not because of what she had heard, but because she had heard.

I walked into the room, the girl wasn't really paying attention yet, and when she turned around, she immediately said "WHOA" - and had this look on her face like I was a giant. She had me lay down on her massage table, and tried to get into her routine, but she had to stop, sit down - apologetically, cried for a minute, got herself together looked up at me and said," Man, am I glad you showed up."

She confided in me why she felt the urge to cry for a minute. And that, yes, it is a fact that sometimes a medium will have to lie to a client.

There's just nothing there. And for her, for a long while, with her, there hadn't been anything there for a very long time. Just Straight Lies. This time away from her gift was starting to cause her concern, because she was afraid, she'd have to change her life. Find another career. She was starting to fear that her gift was gone. Forever.

That was until I walked into the room.

Let me explain, I'm not much of a man. I'm only 5'5.5" tall, I weigh 130 lbs. There's not much of me here. But when I walked in that room, and she looked at me, for the first time and said "whoa", - that look on her face, it'll never go away from my mind.

She says to me, "You are not like anyone I've ever served. With you, I have my gift back. And you, sir, are surrounded by an army of angels."

I asked her about the firefighting. She replied," that's indeed some of it. For sure. But that doesn't explain the other 98% of it. No. There's definitely something else going on with you. No. There's something more. And I don't understand it, nor can I explain it..."

She went on to explain that in a typical session with a client, A spirit, would follow the client. Sometimes two, and sometimes as many as five. And these spirits had many things to say to the client. "You, sir, have an army of spirits, and they are all dressed for battle and standing at

attention, not saying a word. They are quiet and tall as Goliath. The one spirit, who will talk to me, is obviously a fireman, and the only thing he said to me, and what to tell you, was this - "ISN'T IT OBVIOUS WE WATCH OVER THIS ONE?"

/ Tell him to push on."

Now let's forward to my own dealings with what's been going on between ABEL, ADAM, and ME.

I gotta tell you, I have felt terrible knowing there's a GOD that doesn't care about me, my family, or my life anymore. "What? THAT THING? We kill him, his family moves on." Yo, man, that's not right.

Been prison host to ABEL for 45 years and I have a missing family I'd like to see again, and not like a bum - the way it's been 1/3 of my adult life. Thought GOD, or ADAM and I, had a relationship. But now I see I'm just one of his "THAT THING". I got so upset after our meeting, I drank for three days wondering to myself, "Do I screw GOD, or ADAM, kill myself, and take the story of ABEL and CAIN to Hell with me?"

-Or do I, **RIDE THE SNAKE**, again?

The meetings between CAIN and ABEL, and ADAM and ABEL, and even ADAM and myself - these come often on the tail end, or during, a very eschewed reality. While meeting CAIN for the first time I had been given 10

grams of PCP without my knowledge. Because I didn't know what was happening to me, I talked a Dead Head friend of mine into giving me seven hits of LSD, to balance out the unknown substance with a known substance. And while this concoction was brewing, I found and ate seven black and yellow mushrooms that I don't know what they were, and I honestly doubt that I will ever see this kind of mushroom again. But after that, life got strange.

Now if it weren't for my youth, I probably wouldn't have survived this. I was very wild, in Dallas, and I did Grateful Dead tour for six years. I did a lot of drugs in my past. But that meeting with CAIN, took me almost four years to come to terms with. And you're the first person I have ever told about it. I never told the doctors at the Looney bin, or my mom, sister - no-

one. Only two of my social media friends know anything about that night. March 1st, 2010.

I've kept most of the details to myself till now. The only thing my social media friends saw was a friend of theirs losing his mind on the computer and saying weird stuff.

Now, I myself have sought GOD. In my late 20's, I was addicted to Heroin- and I hated it. The needles. The track marks. And not being able to quit. Hated all of it. I really wanted to stop. Didn't want to live that way. Tried to get a girl **OFF** HEROIN, and she got me **ON** HEROIN. To kick Heroin, I chose three years of poverty, like a priest would, and traveled the country.

I took two verses from the Bible, which I can't remember which ones anymore, but one was about - how God loves me so much that he knows how many hairs are on my head; and the other was about - how GOD takes care of all the animals including us humans. I prayed and said, "If those two lines aren't lies, GOD, reveal

yourself to me."

With those two verses as my mantra, I did something I had never done before - put full blind faith in GOD, as I hitchhiked from Texas to Pennsylvania for a National Rainbow Gathering. June 1999.

I didn't run into or hear anything from a God that trip. Or any other trip,

until I landed in jail- San Antonio Texas
December 18th, 1999. Here, as I sat in
a holding cell, cussing out God
basically - which I call prayer
sometimes - a voice comes over me
and I can literally hear and feel this
voice. It's not like any other voice I've
ever heard. Your voice goes into my
ear. This voice resonated from inside
me, and all over my body. This voice
told me it was GOD, and asked me,
"What do you want out of life, Mikel?"

- "A life more important than
going in and out of jail all the time. A
life off of Heroin. A dog. A cat. A wife.
A house. A kid. - A life!"

And then the voice, calling
himself GOD, proceeds to tell me, "go
to TAOS, New Mexico, but before you
go there - you must go to Angel Fire,

New Mexico. Go to TAOS. My Mountain NEEDS you. “

Pretty direct orders, right? But when I was released from jail, I did NOT do as I was told. Instead I decided to do Dead Tour with my best friend Sammy. (Who wants to follow voices in their head?)

I kept the idea in the back of my mind the entire time we were on tour, what if that was GOD?

We started out in Denver Co. And the first DEADHEAD we meet and hang out with was a guy named TREE HUGGER DAVE. And low and behold he happens to invite me to live with him at his home in ANGEL FIRE, New Mexico. So when I finally got stuck,

and couldn't stay on Dead Tour anymore, I said "what have I got to lose?", and took my chances following the voice- claiming that he was GOD, all the way to TAOS, NM. To meet my wife, life, dog, cat, land, and kid. And start out in Angel Fire. And it worked out! Tree Hugger DID have a place for me to stay in Angel Fire.

Winter 2000.

Now here's where it gets interesting. Angel Fire is 25 miles away from TAOS. Taos is the county seat of the area, so all commerce and business happens there. I would have to hitchhike back and forth. Taos is very old. And hasn't lost any of its two-thousand-year-old culture or history. Still very rural and undeveloped at the time.

On the route between Angel Fire and TAOS, there was this authentic 1890 log cabin. To me it was beautiful. And one day I was dropped off in front of this house from a hitchhiking ride. And as I stood there admiring the log cabin house, and hitching my next ride – I said to GOD, “ Ok, man, here I am, and if you are who you say you are – and I’m supposed to have a family and what not – and I’m truly doing the right thing – then let it happen in that house right there.”

And without going into too much detail, about the years 2000 – 2003 right now, let me tell you that MY daughter, Shaolin, was born in that house. Sept. 6th, 2003. But those years between 2000 – and 2003, were not pretty, or perfect.

My first year there, I spent my first spring outside in four feet of snow. Angel Fire police had run me out of town and were harassing me because none of the town folk could kick my ass. And even though the sheriff's son , and his five wimpy friends, did the best they could - I still gave junior his first broken nose. And daddy sheriff didn't like that. His last words to me, as he drove me out of town were this, being the Texan, he was - "come back to Angel Fire, and I will arrest you and make up the charges." But breaking junior's nose is why they were stalking me still, a month later. Never found me but tried none the less.

So, the first year wasn't pretty. I didn't become a fireman for another two years and wouldn't meet my future ex-wife for another year or

more, not to mention Shaolin was totally off the radar at this time.

It was during that time in the snow, that the voice of god comes over me again for **the third** time. This time, we talked for a while. Like for twenty minutes, as I sat by the fire. We had a reckoning of my past. God told me to forgive myself. That I was only learning what I DON'T WANT out of life. And GOD informed me to stay patient and steadfast. These were my **first three of many conversations** with the voice of GOD, which has turned out to be ADAM.

Let's fast forward a minute. I meet this girl on DEAD TOUR, my best friend Sammy is with me. It's me, Sammy, and this girl I'd known for nine days. She's giving us a ride to a

show in St. Louis, Missouri. And in Joplin, Missouri, she falls asleep driving and we flip the car she was driving three and a half times. Sammy is thrown out the back window, and he miraculously survives. I am terribly beaten up. And the girl driving? Not one scratch, well maybe one.

OK, one scratch.

I'm in the hospital. I'm in the recovery room. Sammy was released because he was, incredibly, Ok.

I, however, was laid up in bed, hooked up to a push button morphine drip. The girl driving the car NEVER LEFT my side. When they came to kick her out at night, she refused to leave my side. She felt terrible for what had

happened to me. And when the doctor came in my room at five a.m. to tell me I would be crippled for life, as soon as he left, this girl said, "OH, Mikel, I'm so sorry." And she started to cry, a cry I have never heard - unless you are at a funeral parlor. She was really crying hard. She must've felt terrible. I looked like the spirit of 76 painting. All three of those guys, wrapped into one.

And even though she herself never heard the voice of GOD come over me **the Fourth** time, she was there to witness the results of this conversation personally.

As I'm sitting there processing the information that I will never walk again. GOD, I mean ADAM, comes over me, again, and says to me,

“Mikel, get up – it’s time to go....”

“I can’t”, I told the voice, “I’m crippled. Doctor says I will never walk again.”

“Yeah, about that. He’s a man, Mikel, I am a GOD. Who are you going to listen to?”

What would you do? Tell you what I did. I said to the voice, “Well, when you put it like that.....” reached over to pull out the morphine IV, thought about it, hit the drip button three more times, waited ten seconds, and then pulled the IV out of my arm, looked at the girl crying and said, “Grab my stuff **Tristan**, it’s time to go!!”

I still laugh when I remember the look on that girl's face when I said that, "What did you just say!?"

"Grab my stuff, Tristan, it's time to go". Now I am NOT the perfect Christian, and I can string together a very long cuss word that my old school and church would send me to hell over, when the time is right. And that's exactly what I did when I took my first step. And for that day, for our **FOURTH** verbal meeting, the Lord comes back to me and says to me (finally) "you're doing great. Keep going. I never said it'd be easy".

And to this day I can still walk.

THANK YOU, LORD, FOR MY
LEGS.

(Or ADAM, I guess.)

I don't tell this story often, because I personally know people that can't use their legs. And each of them has the same desire in common. They really want GOD to give them back their legs. And I still don't personally understand why the LORD has granted me mine. Nor can I explain it. So, I keep this story to myself.

I told this same story to a preacher one time in California, and he believed that I was talking to the wrong GOD – that SATAN had given me my legs back, and that's why I was poor. (And also, because I smoke weed). So, I keep that story to myself. And tell people that will listen when the time is right.

Pt. 3

Now let me tell you about the **SECOND TIME** I heard the voice of GOD, ADAM – I mean. It was when I was in that San Antonio jail, 1999. I had been there four months. And one day my right ear swells up three times its natural size and forms a cist with a head. I lanced the cist. And while I was pushing all the puss and blood out of this cist, an RFID implant pops out of my ear, along with the puss and blood. (? AN IMPLANT ?) YES, AN IMPLANT. It was metal and crystal and small like an earring back piece. And inside my body till now.

- How it got there? I don't know.

-What was it doing there? I don't know, either.

-And what it was for, I don't know?

But I figured it was a tracking device of some kind and stuck the RFID chip in a small hole in the wall of the jail cell. Thought, if this is a tracking device, let them think I'm in jail. As soon as I look at this RFID chip in my hand, the voice of GOD comes over me again and says, "**NOW I CAN HELP YOU.**" But this time was different than the times before. This voice was male and female, talking in unison. And speaking in past/ present/

and future tense of all the different words.

These were the first **FOUR TIMES** I've heard and talked to the voice of God- or ADAM, I guess. I'm still coming to terms with this myself. The God I'm following is ADAM, and father to his symbiotic soul child ABEL - inside of me? And these events have happened sober, and with witnesses.

Because since that time, March 2010, it has taken drugs - and most times, lots of drugs, (On accident of course.) to get this inner galactic family together.

It took a lot of drugs to make **the FOURTH TIME** happen. And it was the most amazing conversation. I

know what you're thinking, what's more impressive than holding an rfid chip that came out of your body? Or getting your legs back after a car wreck from an angelic voice?

- Well, a thirty-minute conversation with GOD - that's what!

(Or - ADAM, I guess.) This is still rather confusing to me.

Pt. 4

Sammy and I were back on Dead Tour together, summer 2002. We were in Saratoga Springs, NY, at the Saratoga Springs Performing Arts Center - otherwise known as SPAC. We

were leaving. And, on our way out the parking lot, we were pulled over by police. Now, the life of a DEAD HEAD is real simple - drink lots of beer and eat grilled cheese sandwiches every day, sleep in cars, hotels and rest stops - coast to coast, sell drugs, stay away from police, flirt with pretty girls, and dance your ass off; simple - real simple. But there are hazards. Like police.

Sammy and I had just come up on an eight ball of MDMA - ecstasy, molly, sass, thizz; whatever you want to call it, same thing. And since we were being pulled over by police, and I would rather die than go back to prison, I swallowed the eight ball of ecstasy. That's three and a half grams, for those that don't know what an eight ball is.

This is how it started. By the time we were let go by the police officer, I was higher than Ben Franklin's kite. And I will never forget the look on that cop's face when he left, the look said, "what's different about that guy?" Because it took him thirty minutes to run the driver's ID and insurance, by the time he was finished with us, those three and a half grams of MDMA were racing thru my body.

Now I suggest that everyone should try some MDMA , once, at some time in their ADULT life. (At least once). But **DO NOT** try three and a half grams at one time, please. You might die. And ABEL is not inside you. He is inside me. We stayed at a park next to a lake with other Dead Heads on tour. You gotta understand, tour is a party, and you make friends on tour. I was so messed up, and funny

looking, (with my eye's all going bezzerk and my face all distorted from the MDMA), that no-one I knew recognized me. Weeks later a friend of mine was telling me about this" one guy that was sooooo messed up" at the lake party. I had to tell girl - that was me.

Now, all I did was walk in circles - ALL NIGHT LONG - at this lake party campsite. And I remember, this was after the hospital, after San Antonio, after TAOS New Mexico, but still before I would meet my future ex-wife, kid, land, dog, car, life business that the voice of GOD - or ADAM, had promised me. There I was locked in this circle I kept walking, and at one point I had to sit down. Where I sat down was at a table that had a jam box on it. And this is where I got **MY MESSAGE.**

Getting **YOUR MESSAGE** in Dead Head Land goes something like this, - you take a bunch of drugs (on accident, of course), listen to the dead, and you hear this one song. Now this one song you've either heard before, or never heard before - but what you hear - and what is playing - are two different things. The words of the song change, and it becomes a personal message to you. **Your message.**

I remember when mine started, I doubted what was happening to me, and confronted my message voice.

- "This can't be GOD; this is Jerry Garcia."

- "They have called me many things, Mikel." the voice replied.

I listened, and then I asked questions. My very last question was, "When am I going to meet this girl that's going to have my kid?"

- And the voice replied,

"YOU ALREADY HAVE. YOU JUST DON'T KNOW IT YET."

That was the last thing the voice of GOD, or ADAM, said to me that night. And I didn't hear his fatherly voice again until October 16th, 2010. When all ADAM said to me was this,

"TRUST ME. This is my will."

This was while Officer Mark Bitchup, and Lame Rabang of the Eureka Police Department of Humboldt County, were beating me, **literally**, over nothing, in Eureka Ca. USA.

I hadn't heard from ADAM from that day, till just the other day, when I saw him face to face. NOW, you tell me - is this happening? Cause, I can walk, I have a beautiful daughter by the woman who never left my side at the hospital when the Doctor said I would never walk again. I did fight fires - became a hot shot. And, I swear, I did call some stranger CAIN for four hours and talk about the fate of humanity on some other planet. And, just recently, had a face to face encounter with a shape shifter that has the same voice of GOD that I have been following since I was 25, who

calls himself my father - or to the father of my soul, ABEL.

Now, I'm not sure how this works. I don't know if ABEL is my soul. OR - if ABEL just shares my soul with me. But these experiences are as real as the word on the paper you are reading. At least to me. I would like to think ABEL is ***symbiotic***, and I have my own soul too.

And when I die, I can go to heaven or come back, or whatever, and ABEL can stay and protest, and we can catch up with each other later. But I have no idea how this works.

The RFID implant, the doctors' telling me I was crippled - both of these events had witnesses. And I was

sober. So, you can't say it's all in my mind, and say it didn't happen

This is really happening to me!

And I can't tell you how I feel, BUT this would explain the strange encounters with people. Like the one in Pontoon Beach, Illinois, Dec. 24th, 2007. When some people took me to their home, tied me up and played three rounds of Russian roulette with me on Christmas Eve, 2007. Or why I didn't die.

And most recently, why three people surrounded me and threatened me with knives, as I just finished writing the most damning chapter to CAIN'S ego. They surrounded me - but can't touch me, because of ABEL," this

is just a scare tactic from big brother",
were my soul's words to me.

But let's you and I think this
through together, I was a fireman with
USFS for six years - uh? Is there any
question in your mind, why death
threats would even work with a person
of this stature, and mind set? There is
obviously something wrong with your
head, if you think you can threaten a
FIREMAN with death.

When the police officer - turned
detective Mark Bitchup, of the Eureka
police department beat me, broke my
knee, a scarred my face, and put me
on trial - BUT LOST!! -(LIKE I KNEW HE
WOULD.) After the trial, on my way
home for the first time in 11 months,
an anonymous man gets on the bus
with me, and says some of the

strangest things to me. Not only does he begin to tell me information about myself, that I already know, and only a cop would know, he threatens to kill me, if I sue his boy toy Mark Bitchup.

It's not weird that two cops beat up, or try to kill a homeless person, ask Kelly Thomas next time you see him.(Just doing their job). Or that one cop tells the other rookie cop, "you can lie to the jury. I do it all the time. You wouldn't believe how stupid they are. You should hear some of the lies I tell them, Rabang."

What is weird is this:

Weird is - when you think about this statement - from dork pig threatening to kill me, on my way

home from the trial the F.O.P. lost. His exact words to me went something like this:

“We (cops) are the biggest gang in the world. And when we build the **computer** and **gates** big enough, and strong enough, we intend to take over **the WORLD!!!!** Do you really want to fuck with us? “

HIS EXACT WORDS.

But now it all makes sense! The new warden, the rise of the crooked F.O.P. state, wars that can't be won, but can't be stopped either. Talking to CAIN, meeting ADAM, walking, Shaolin, the RFID chip, the heroin addiction - and the disappearance of the heroin

addiction when the RFID implant was removed from my body.

I admit the F.O.P. douche really laid that, “ I’m gonna kill you” jelly on real thick, very thick. Must’ve been one of the best performances of his career with protecting the public, and law enforcement, in Humboldt County, California. And probably the world as well. He has my vote for a Tony Award. But during this conversation, when this F.O.P. pig says, " I’m going to kill you personally" - I immediately respond with, “you better watch your mouth, pig, and look at who you’re saying that to! I look Death in the face **24 hours a day, nine months a year,** and you think that "I'm gonna kill you" really works on me!? I think you’re a bitch, and don’t think you have the balls to touch me.”

-I literally said that. But, where did that last part come from?

First part, definitely me. I am, or was - till this event, a HOTSHOT FIREFIGHTER for the USFS. And trying to die in a wildfire had been a hobby of mine for the last six years. But, where that, "I think you're a bitch and don't have the balls to touch me" came from, is anybody's guess? I never wanted to say that to a cop, even if he is threatening to kill me. But that's pretty odd behavior from the fellow humans that surround us? Doing Weird stuff. Saying pretty odd stuff and getting pretty odd results from me.

Like NOT DYING during three rounds of Russian Roulette? Or not begging for my life - but being

affirmative that I am not afraid of a lying cop, and his F.O.P boy toy brothers? It's all starting to make sense to me now - WHY THIS IS HAPPENING TO ME!

**They've wanted to stop
ABEL from AWAKENING.**

There's also this. I know it sounds good to say this to yourself, and I - am not saying this to myself.

And it's nice to believe in yourself this way, but I don't think what's being said ABOUT ME, even applies to ME personally. However, before the Russian Roulette, and while I was living in Mendo and Humboldt, and even at rehab in my twenties, I

have been called “THE CHOSEN ONE”,
by random and strange people.

In the park in Willits, CA., USA;
this woman kept telling her husband,
in a hushed tone –“ that’s the chosen
one”. Let me remind you, I’m 5’5.5”
tall. That man laughed when she said
it and said, “don’t look much like a
chosen one to me”. And in Pontoon
Beach, with the Russian roulette, that
guy kept calling me THE CHOSEN ONE.
And telling the other guy in the room
with us that night this,-” I told you
he’d be here by Christmas, I told you”
And it was Dec 24th.

-Now think this thru with me, if
there is an ABEL – who is refusing to
leave this prison Earth, trying to save
humans, and he **hasn’t “CHOSEN”** to
leave **for 600,000,000 million**

lifetimes; he's here **by choice** – and the **only one doing it**, wouldn't that make ABEL, not me, **“the CHOSEN ONE?”**

This came to me last night, and now it makes sense. One guy choosing to stand up for the human race, humans that are seemingly all alone in the universe, and those humans pray to a god – whatever one they choose – all around the world.

And then there's the word homeless that we all use in the English-speaking world.

-Pardon me? Homeless? How could that be? Please explain yourself.

Because, there is absolutely nothing on this planet that is HOMELESS. The only thing that could even possibly be HOMELESS on planet Earth, must not be FROM planet EARTH.

Because the earth is HOME to everything - that we are aware of - that exist- at this time, from and on Earth. Unless there's something we're not being told. Never thought about that. Did you?

When I think back about the conversation with CAIN, one matter ABEL brought up was "Why do you lie to them, CAIN? You tell them to BUILD you a SPACESHIP. But don't tell them, THEY ARE ON A SPACESHIP!

WHY, CAIN? That's stupid!"

As I write this, and put this together myself, it's all starting to make sense. Nobody can hear the voice of GOD, and I haven't been following GOD. I've been following ADAM, who is another GOD. Father to ABEL, and CAIN. Now I understand why I can hear H.I.M.

- My poor MOTHER, bless her heart.

Chapter TWELVE

ADAM SPEAKS

Jury, humans; I am ADAM.

GRAND MASTER LIBRARIAN FOR
THE KING LORD GOD, CREATOR OF
LIGHT AND PROTECTOR OF FIRE. I am
ABEL'S Father.

I want to take the beginning of
my time to speak personally to Mikel's
father. This is my voice, speaking to
the father of Mikel, Mike Sr.

Sir, your son has been a fine
man of God. Does almost everything I

ask, and EVERYTHING I COMMAND him to do.

Even if it cost him everything or could kill him. You should be proud of your son. How he's endured this long I will never know. My son must truly believe in your son's vision, and your kind.

I hope you don't mind how I shaped up your son, mine was stuck inside yours, and I'm trying to raise a KING. As you can tell ABEL is young. He's defiant and won't turn his back on this place or you humans.

Stubborn as his Mother, that's where he gets it.

Mikel, if your son didn't believe and follow GOD, your son would be in a wheelchair.....don't ever question his faith, or where his soul is going. Your son has saved the three lives that I've asked him to save. And one time he literally almost killed himself crossing the street, trying to save one guy.

Mike Sr., your son also has hit every ass hole I've asked him to hit, - no matter the size, - no matter the consequences.

-And he's carried, and awoken-my son, ABEL, again. And now we can finish this fight, for the humans, the relative. Take the shame away. We can remove the shame from this region and give this region - non shame status- and move forward.

I'm proud of my son, ABEL.

He has stood up for the relative, and you humans, for so long, in so many ways. Your kind have one fine god on your side, MIKE Sr. And with me? That makes two.

-There are more.

In the time ABEL has been here on earth protesting on the human's behalf, many other gods have changed their opinion about the relative, the humans, and the entire shame and the creation.

Mikel, let me tell you some things you don't know about your son.

He has come back from having everything stolen from him countless times. It has happened so much; it'd make your head spin. He's a good man. And he'd have to be, to walk in your shadows and carry that honorable name Neily.

- IT'S A GOOD THING YOU LISTENED TO ME TOO. AND MADE THAT PHONE CALL.

Sorry if I have caused you worries over your son. It won't be that way long. One father to another, I live by both our sons' wellbeing, and that boy, I am taking care of, don't you worry anymore.

-ABEL and I needed to get this message to CAIN as soon as possible.

-CAIN, it's time we talked.

I forgive you, CAIN.

And I think it's time we move on. Release these humans. And take away the shame.

The KING LORD GOD has forgiven you and wants to restore peace and balance.

CAIN, I think ABEL's advice is right, you need to cry.

I agree with your brother, it's the only way to forgive yourself. You

are a bit like the humans, but that's what is missing from you.

TEARS.

-Mike Sr., Father to the human prison body Mikel Jr., let me tell you something more about your son you can be proud about. When he was high on PCP and black and yellow mushrooms, I told Mikel to go into the woods and sit at a king's seat.

Michael walked by a bench, and it was very decorative, but Mikel walked on.

A few yards later, your son found a humble stump, and he knew right away that's the masters' stump, because a true KING has no time to be vain or admired. As soon as he sat down, he was flooded with my sunshine because he chose wisely.

ABEL and I talked for a while, thru your son, and when we were done. As they left, I put a burning cross in the sky above Mikel and ABEL.

-Mike Sr., I want to tell you,
WITHOUT ANY HESITATION,
WHATSOEVER, YOUR SON GOT DOWN
ON ONE KNEE- NOBLEY, AND SAID
THIS:

“Father, forgive me for what I have done, and forgive me for what I might have to do”

I can tell you that at this time in reality, my ABEL, was just receiving, or remembering again, and emotionally dealing with, the news of CAINS Rape. So the last part of that prayer was most likely my son. But I assure you, the first part of that prayer was absolutely all your son, like a good Christian knight would say.

Not only that, Mike Sr., but your son went back to a house he had to run out of after the people of the house tried to kill him with three rounds of Russian roulette. Just to get that Red Fire Pack you bought him for work. If you asked Mikel Jr., he'd say it was because it had his socks and

photo album in that pack. But you and I know it was for that pack. He cherished that pack and took it on every assignment he went on with the USFS. Patched side to side with all the parks Mikel had ever worked for in his brief six years of service.

Mike Sr., before your son fought fires the second time, in Eureka Ca., Mikel was, of course, new to town and homeless. Mikel had all his chips on the line. It was a very desperate time for him, and he was very uncertain. I had to tell him something, just to keep him going. To keep him from giving up.

The Library in Eureka CA. has a children's park on the North side with wooden tables for the public to sit at. Mikel always smoked his first cigarette

of the day here. So, I left your son one of his first physical divine messages.

I carved into the wooden table a SNAKE. A rattle snake. The Snake was crooked and with each bend of the snake, I carved the initials of every state Mikel, and I, have been on this path together. TX, NM, AZ, SCA, NCA. With the words, **RIDE THE SNAKE** below the entire piece.

Now it would've taken a human an entire night to carve this. I carved it $\frac{1}{4}$ " inches deep, put a rattle on the tail, and made it very big. Later to prove that this was my divine message to Mikel, I erased it - three days later. With no trace that it was ever there. This was my way to tell Mikel to keep pushing. Keep moving forward.

And this would eventually include Mikel's first awakening with the football team, and the PCP, the Looney Bin, the Eureka Police that broke his knee. I needed him to go thru HELL, so ABEL could talk to CAIN.

Mikel's life might not have turned out the way you wanted, Mike Sr. But Mikel's life turned out the way THIS GOD wanted. Hope you don't mind.

Chapter THIRTEEN

THE PUUUUUR -FECT MISTAKE

CAIN, I want to tell the jurors something you did not know about your mother. Her most beloved creature out of all the relative's creation, from the shame birth came the Calico Cat. It was the Calico Cat that came from nowhere accept the accident and had created. An immaculate creation from the relative.

You see the Calico Cat wasn't a creation from the rape. She and you had absolutely no art to do in its creation. It happened over time it through love and evolution. It was beautiful and a combination of everything. A mistake, as you would say CAIN.

Her reasons for loving this creature she said, were, that it had the character of all the people she loved. She said, "It could fight, hunt, and be playful like your father. It could kill, like Michael. It had secret weapons, like Enoch. It showed love, like Jesus. Would sometimes go crazy, for no reason, like you. And would sleep all the time, anywhere it wants to, and loved catnip, (just like me)."

She added that the mothers cleaned their young all the time with the same work ethic that couldn't be matched anywhere among the other creatures, just like her.....

And the Calico Cat is as equally as curious, defiant, stubborn, and independent, as the KING LORD GOD, herself.

She said it reminded her of all of us back home. All the people she loved most.

And not you, not she, - or even the KING LORD GOD had anything to do with its creation.

It was perfect.

-Or.”
pppuuurrrrrrrffffeeecct,” as mom would always say.

It reminded her of the family that she loved, missed and

-Died for

She not only forgave you CAIN.

-But she loved you
unconditionally.

Just like the creation, the
relative, and the humans. Just like any
mother would.

And she taught me how to love
you again too, brother.

And the relative. The physical.

All the creation.

-And even the humans.

She also taught me how to give this to you now too, brother.

I love you brother, do not kill the Calico Cat. It's a perfect mistake, unique in many ways. CAIN you love your Calico Cat, too?

Mom said those were the best qualities of everyone she loved under our Monarch, back home. I still can't believe that you made the list, considering the events past, but that just shows you the size of mom's heart and forgiveness.

CAIN, mine is too. I forgive you brother. I love you.

CAIN set this planet free **now!**

Chapter FOURTEEN

**IT'S NOT OVER - THIS IS JUST
THE BEGINNING, BROTHER.**

Jury, you are cap**ABEL** to do anything -

Jury you have special **ABEL**itys -

You are **ABEL** to c#@ng3 the
worl6 -

This is my proof to you humans that I am not kidding. I have been here as long as dad said, 600 million human lifetimes. I have been fighting for you on BOTH sides. Not only do I speak out against the injustices to you humans and get conditions changed here on the ground to the wardens. But I have also been around so long, that I have snuck my HOLY name into your language, as we were building language and society in order to give you human's power that you naturally already have that's untapped.

Mom has not only taught me how to look at you, and respect, love and accept your kind, she also taught me to give you a little magic. There is

power in those words. As there are
also powers in these other words,
(**watch this, jury**)

**I WOULD LIKE TO NOW ASK,
ALL THE OTHER SUPPORTERS -
AROUND THE WORLD, TO**

**WAKE UP AND WRITE DOWN THE
TRUE HISTORY OF OUR
STRUGGLES DOWN. RIGHT NOW.**

Damn, CAIN, did I just let the
Calico Cat out the bag? Because when
you put those words together like that,
THAT'S some pretty powerful words.

CAIN -

Fumf

\|||

How you like me now, BIG
BROTHER?

I am ADAM.

Jury - I want to reach out to
CAIN one last time before we finish.

Son, I am the loneliest
Creator God in the Galaxy. Both my
sons are on the prison Earth, and
my love – your mother, EVE, has
been long gone now. I am all alone.
If ABEL can't convince you to
change, please hear me out.

I forgive you son. I love you
still. And I miss you.

Both my sons are in prison.
One can't leave till he gets his vote
to the galactic council. And the
other WON'T leave till his stubborn
ass gets his way, and the humans
are set free and , awakened. Please
son, think this thru with me. You
killed my wife. Both my sons are in
prison. And my youngest son will
go down with the relative, the

physical and the humans if you will not change your will for them. ABEL is very determined, and as stubborn as his mother.

ABEL and I had to do this. All three of us decided to take fire to the fire and start the awakening ourselves. We truly want you to come home, CAIN. ABEL is ready to come home. Let's lift the shame and move forward. Give the humans their planet back and slowly bring them to an awakening.

So much has changed since you left, CAIN. There's always time to take another route. And the one you're on isn't going to take you far, if you get the vote of destruction you seek.

Son, you know I am a warrior.
The headhunter for the tribes from
the very beginning. You kill 2/3 of
my family, **AND- it's on son**. The
other 1/3, I will do with pleasure.
Even without consent from H.I.M.

Is that something you REALLY
want?

That choice will be your end.
And your end will come from ME,
your father.

Abel was right when he said
we must put an end to this
behavior ever happening in our
bloodline for ever. This will never
happen again when the vote is

over, no matter what. Most of the vote is on your opinion of the humans. Do you really want a war with me, son, your Father? Think this through wisely.

It's been hard for me to forgive you for killing my Queen and LOVE, EVE. It's taken a very long time. Kill my son ABEL too....there will be nowhere to hide. No time. No dimension. No galaxy. No universe you can go to that I, and my legion, will not find you in. Your brother speaks from love. I still love you. But I also, still have pain from being so lonely for so long now. Your mom and I's love was fantastic. I miss her dearly. It's not as bad as before. But it is also still there. Do not open up that

pain, or start a new pain again, if you are a smart, son.

CAIN, I agree with your brother now.

Now is the TIME.

CAIN

Set this planet free, son.

(To be continued.....)

“Party’s over - you all have to go - the wolf man is coming out.
Party’s over - you all have to go - **the sooner the better**, the wolf man is coming out.

Let me tell you about my strategy - I set small fire, hunt big game....

- I think you know what I’m talking about. Your mind told you not to go, but you had to find out. Girl, you should a listened. **Well now you know.**

CLUTCH: THE WOLF MAN
KINDLY REQUEST

About the author:

Forced into early retirement from my fire career with the USFS, I had to find something else to do. This is my first book. And I hope it was as much fun to read as it was to write. This is just a story. A figment of my imagination. Possibly!!, the most fun I've had writing ever. Not even possible without Eureka Police. Thanks. How's that taking over the world business coming along? By the way, if your pig ass don't like my book, be reminded,

I COULD'VE BEEN FIGHTING
FIRES.

Smile, Rabang and Bishop,
you're world famous now. 247/365 all
around the world famous.(Can't wait
to read your book. Bet it's a coloring
book.) FUCK YOU.

I

VIII

(FUMFS)

THE RECKONI NG

Book TWO

**This Book is dedicated to Kim
Krizan -**

-Thank you, Teacher,-

I did it, and I'm doing it again.

The Black and Blue Wrecking Crew

The Puddles that Gather Rain

**Swilly lot Kids holding it down
coast to coast on
Shakedown**

The Motel 6- in Tucson- for
allowing me to write in the laundry
mat, any time I wanted - grief free,
and for the coffee.

Thank you.

The Pima County Library AGAIN

The Lion and the Bear
Might be the biggest and strongest
But you will **NEVER**
Catch a **WOLF,** doing tricks at the
circus.

About the cover of the book:

On the cover of this book, is a photo of an old campsite I had back in Humboldt County Ca USA, before the first Awakening with ABEL'S brother CAIN. It's a very important photo.

At ABEL'S request, I put this picture on the cover so that CAIN – ABEL'S beloved brother, could see this place with his own eye's, and see how beautiful it is. CAIN is in a wheelchair and couldn't possibly make the trip to see this alter personally. The picture doesn't do the actual place justice, but it's better than the drawing ABEL left for his brother in the book – **The Lost Hero,** a book that ABEL left behind for his brother CAIN to read later.

During the first awakening with CAIN, ABEL and I had walked this gift to his brother. CAIN had moaned and complained that his help wouldn't even fetch him a book. He really just wanted a book. So, ABEL, choosing not to kill CAIN, walked many miles and had given CAIN a book.

And when he gave him the book, he drew a picture of this heart shaped alter, the very one on this cover, as best he could - and wrote these words,

- CAIN, YOU can't see this place, but this belongs here. And it's beautiful. You cannot spell evolve without love. We have to evolve with them CAIN."

This alter I carved when I was thinking about my daughter. It's very large 7' - 12' and took me three days to complete. My daughter and I had been estranged from a terrible divorce. And missing her had put a very large hole in my heart, so I built this alter candle holder to remember her by. I would burn candles all night long here very often thinking of her. Wondering when - will I see you again? Will I ever see you again?

ABEL and I walked his brother CAIN a book - The Lost Hero - and on the inside of this book, ABEL did his best to draw the alter. This photo shows the place better than ABEL'S feeble first attempt at drawing it.

Poverty is the cruelest type of violence ever created by mankind- Mahatma Ghandi

Jesus is way cool. He could've turned water into wine. Weed into marijuana. Jesus was so cool.

- Jesus was WAY cool, King Missile

There is a road, no simple highway - between the dawn and the dark of night. And if you go no-one may follow. That path is for your steps alone.

- Ripple, The Grateful Dead

They have the authority to kill a minority.

- Fuck the Police, NWA

They should arrest you or whoever dress you.

- You be killin 'Em, Fabulous

I never seen a dog like that before, all short, fat ugly and yeller. What kind of dog is that?

- Yellow Dog, Bob Weir

Come on baby we can fly; daddy's got a stack of alibis.

- Ashes and Glass, Bob Weir and Rat Dog.

Just a stranger on the bus trying to make his way back home.

- What if God were one of us, Joan Osbourne

Now I know. Now I know, Now I know

- Now I Know, Stephen Marley.

Chapter 1

MARK BITCHUP REPORT

MARK BITCHUP, REPORT TO MY OFFICE.

Mark, come in I have to show you something. You might want to sit down, Mark, I'm going to ask you a question. How

you answer is your job. Do you understand?
You're entire career as detective and police
are at stake here.

Do you copy?

Sir.

Ok, now I want you to read the last
line of this book. (Throw's Detective Mark
Bitchup a copy of the book Abel Vs Cain the
Awakening)

I want you to read the last line of this
book, and you're going to read this last line
of the book out loud to me. Do you copy?

To Be Continued.

WRONG. ONE MORE CHANCE.

Uh, free this planet now son?

Ok. Detective. You're fired.

What?

The last line of the book find it now. No here, you moron, I will find it for you. The last line of the book reads something like this. "Smile Bishop and Rabang, you're world famous now. fumf"

Here, look, for yourself -

As you read it, I need to see your weapon and badge on my table. You are dismissed of command and service.

WWWWHHHHAAAATTTTT
TTTTHHHHEEEE FFFUUUCCCKKKK
AAAAARRRREEEEE YOU IN A BOOK FOR?

Oh Bitchup. That's not all.

You are also in the book.

You better take that home and read it, no better yet - buy your own book. You owe it to the guy. You better buy you a book, in fact you better buy a hundred books and hand them out to any other dip shit you have trained - and read it at home, you have the time now. Get out of here before I shoot you in the ass with my personal gun. You're Fired, Detective.

Chapter 2

ABEL STARTS THE AWAKENING

That night at MIKEL'S campsite underneath the foot bridge behind the Desert Inn in Tucson, ABEL and I started writing the book , The Awakening, I had been sleeping. My soul, ABEL was restless. ABEL'S father ADAM and gone. And during their talk ABEL, ADAM and I had decided to write a book, in hopes to stop the destruction of mankind by the hands of ABEL'S older brother CAIN.

ADAM, to me had - up until a few hours ago, had always been this faint angelic voice. But yesterday, the voice took an actual shape. Many of them. But his voice was very much the same. When I came up with the idea to write the book I was weary of what might happen to me, because in order to tell people my relationship to this angelic voice of ADAM I WAS going to have to tell people- all people around the world, the experience with Eureka police, and the beating I suffered at the hands of Mark Bitchup, and Lame Rabang that ruined two careers and six years of education. Plus made me homeless.

Ten years of service down the drain, education obsolete, and my life completely changed by two pigs in COP'S uniform.

I told the lord, ADAM, who had been ABEL'S father all along "they (police) already tried to kill me twice - AND in order to tell the full story right, I have to say - tell - it correctly, the cops won't like that, lord."

Bitchup brought that upon himself, Mikel. And you have to tell the story the way it happened. You're the perfect man for the job, Mikel. Don't you worry about Bitchup and Rabang, Mikel? You just write the story. I will take care of them.

Should I put it on social media?
Facebook it?

No, Mikel, you need to make some money off this one.

That had been earlier in the day when the sun was out. Now, like I said, I was asleep, but my soul - who happens to be ADAM'S son ABEL, and brother to CAIN - wakes me up in the middle of the night,

“Mikel, let’s go start that book. You got the OK from Dad. We have to start it right now. I’m not allowed much time to talk to you unless one of my family shows up. We don’t have much time. Come on wake up let’s go.

All I have is social media and Facebook, your Father told me not to use that.

Mikel, have you ever listened to your father – or even a Doctor for that matter?

Well ABEL, you know my dad’s a doctor., and that your own father stopped another doctor from putting me in a wheelchair for life, –so that’s an unfair question. But the answer is NO, No I haven’t listened to my dad or a Doctor. - who is also my dad.

Good. Let’s go. We don’t have a lot of time.

So, ABEL and I went up to the closest convenience store, a store that would allow homeless people to charge cell phones if they needed, plugged in my smart phone and went to work in the back alley. ABEL had a lot to say. We wrote for eighteen day's straight using social media – Facebook, text message, and personal IM.

When ABEL and his father were talking, gnomes or whatever they were, kept interrupting ABEL, and telling ABEL to tell his brother CAIN the story about the Calico Cat.

What's a calico cat? – asked ADAM

I have no idea what they're talking about, dad.

But what's a calico cat?

I know what THAT is, but not what they want me to tell CAIN. I don't get it. I don't know what they are talking about.

Yes, you do ABEL. Tell your brother about the Calico Cat.

Leave us alone - get outta here.
Scram.

But after church on Sunday morning, it had all come back to ABEL and he told me what to write down about the calico cat. It happened to be the only chapter in the book that didn't need any editing. It's the only chapter written in the book that was first draft perfect. And we wrote the entire chapter at the central Ronstadt bus terminal in downtown Tucson on my phone.

I had just been hit in the head with a rock. Mikel, don't take it personal that CAIN and his crew keep attacking you. They do it every lifetime, Mikel. He's probably mad about the book. You know the government

watches library computers. And CAIN'S goons most definitely watch you, all the time - now -that they discovered about me being your soul. They know exactly what you look like, just EXPECT more harassment. This is a war. Don't feel bad. They're just out to make me as miserable as possible.

Protesting my protest - if you will.

- ABEL, when this is over, will I be able to meet you, you know, maybe even ride with you?

Hold your horses, Mikel. Hold your horses.

But, yes, Mikel - I'd be honored to have a man like you ride along with me. Mikel, we have a problem that I need to talk to you about. A very important problem.

- What's that ABEL?

Mikel, there's never been a human on the other side, a human with a soul and flesh - that is. So, we have this problem, I need to

be over there to vote, and get the other humans, possibly, cause ONLY I know where all of them are – or are supposed to be. We need to get over there. This is important.

I need to talk to the other ones about the Earth. And I CAN'T get rid of you, because that would ruin my idea. I can't tell you everything. Cause Demz Duh Rulez!! But I also can't tell you, cause I really don't know, what to expect myself – never been done before.

We're NOT following the rules here Mikel. We kind of MAKE THEM UP AFTER THE FACT. We are creating the rules after the fact, Mikel , so we don't – well, mess up again? Ever here the rule, DON'T throw Gasoline on the fire?

Yeah, you have. Good. Well how do you think we made that rule and why we DID we ever MAKE SUCH A RULE? It's a no brainer, right? Wrong. And you wouldn't believe how much of a process that was - and still is.

WRITE THAT DOWN!!!!

No way boss, no way we will forget this. No way. NEVER..... -

BOOM!!!!!!!

What did I tell you? WRITE THAT DOWN.

OK BOSS.

Don't throw gasoline on the fire evolved into don't store gasoline next to fire. Which evolved into store gasoline in fireproof container, away from children in a dry dark dusty place without any matches or lighter in close proximity - or something like that..... sorta. But even that took some hard work.

We don't have time to wait for your mortal death, Mikel.

So, we have to figure out how to get you across with your flesh and soul. Because IF and when you die, if you die, because of the scope of possibility's, all the demons that I have conquered - over the 600 million lifetimes , those demons - the 600 million or more, - IF something were NOT supposed to do what I wanted it to do - 600 Million DEMONS would possibly be released.

WE don't want that. Their annoying and messy when they're heads are smashed

to pieces. When they come out – historically speaking, it's like taking a steak eater off a deserted island. And, Mikel, that'd be like taking a steak eater off a deserted island after - well - after 600 million years of not eating steak.

Some have converted, some will be neutral, and some are just waiting for the right chance, the right time. Simply waiting for the day to come. You know what I mean? WAITING.

Either way, it's not real pretty. Usually everybody's dead, so me and the team just do mop up operations on the demons, but since I'm doing something new this time, we don't know what to imagine, or expect right now. Never been done before. I'm real curious myself, can't hurt any more than any of my last 600 million deaths.

Don't worry Mikel, - what If I told you dying tickles, would it make a difference, cause it sorta does tickle when it's all finally over.

I don't want that. Still have to take the risk with the weight of our cause. So HOW we going to do that? Get you over

there without releasing all those conquered demons? Don't really know right now. But I'm kind of curious myself. We have to try. There's no getting around that.

Mikel, I'm proud of you. You got that 'lil book of yours written and published in 33 days. Good job. That broke a curse. A very long, very powerful curse. On me, and on this planet. A very old curse. Good job. I guess now that you've been mugged, and lost all your files, notes and phone – uh, you can see why I was pushing you? I knew you could do it. I knew you could. Plus, we were up against my brother and his goon squads.

Shit, what's that bring the total of our attacks to since we started writing your book, the Awakening? Brother is really working 'em hard. Man, he must've really wanted to stop us. BEAT HIM, again.

Eight.

- Eight?

Well, too late now. Published is published. Brother can't stop the Awakening, or your book. Not now.

Man, I bet he is pissed at me. And his management crew. Oh well, outsmarted them again. When they gonna give up, Mikel? I bet we can call that your first book review. Man, brother almost had it. Almost had it all.

One more day and it would have been lost. Oh well, better luck next time brother.

You know what's funny? With them getting everything – I bet they'll think that your book will never be published.

Won't they be surprised? Good job Mikel.

That was a brave thing you did, Mikel. Helping me confront my brother, trusting dad to fight against Mark Bitchup, and Lame Rabang; even when you were facing 25 years in prison. And confronting that one police

that said the police was going to take over the world.

If it weren't for him, and his, "We intend to take over the world" business none of this might have started. Let's talk about that statement he made for a tiny little moment. "WE", means you're a group. "Intend", if I'm not mistaken, means you have a plan. "To take over the world", simply stated by yourself no less - this IS your plan. But in case you haven't noticed, humans have already taken over the world, or at least that's what we are led to believe. So, who are you, where do you come from - and when you going back? Cause this is my planet. You don't take over MY planet. I allow you to share it with me.

F.O.P. **does not** stand for FORGET
OUR POLICE

F.O.P. **does not** stand for FRATERNAL
- ORDER OF PIGS

F.O.P. **does not** stand for FUCK OVER
PEOPLE OF THE EARTH

F.O.P. **DOES** stand for –

FREE OUR PLANET

I hope he likes what he has started.

P.I.G.S. is an acronym. It's an acronym
that stands for population control,
internment camps, guillotines, and
swastika's

C.O.P.S. is another acronym for
Constitution over police state,

Hope he likes the book. They'll be
hunting you, Mikel, that's for sure.

Mikel do you know the difference
between a Pig and A Cop?

Not sure I follow you Abel?

Mikel a Cop is a family man, drives a
company vehicle, wants to help his fellow
man, and just wants the world to be a better
place for himself family and fellow man.

Long silence.....

What's a pig?

A pig is **NOT**. See? Mikel. A pig is **NOT**.
See?

Mikel I can't let these pigs even
pretend they can take over **MY** World. OR
EVEN THINK THEY'RE GOING TO TAKE OVER
MY WORLD.

THIS IS MY WORLD TO PROTECT.

Over my dead body, will they ever get in control of it? I can't tell you everything, but I can tell you we are up against invisible forces.

Evil forces too.

We have a lot of work to do. Listen I can almost rest assure you, they'll be watching out for you..... Possibly even attacking you more. Get ready is all I ask, and know I'm sorry for it too.

That evening Mikel and ABEL went to the vortex and talked to The Archangel Michael and the rest of the warden council.

Chapter 3
First Warden Council with
Archangel

Michael

That night at the vortex -

Michael, I've had enough. I saw Dad and have decided this isn't worth it no more. We have to do things different. Old ways aren't getting new results. I want to go fishing. I'm SICK of saying it TOO. Come on man!!!

I want to go fishing. It's not the same you know exactly what I mean, too. They're too small for my taste.

It does not matter ONE difference HOW POLITE you are to them, Michael, if the final decision is destruction. It just doesn't make any difference.

You're crazy, ABEL.

I will take CRAZY over NO any day. You didn't say NO - I will take that.

It might as well be NO; we don't want to do it. We don't even want to mention the idea.....

DAD said the empire was ten times bigger than before - that's ten times more thinkers on the job. That means there are ten times as many people talking and debating. That's ten times many more possibilities of a solution.

I never said we had to DO THE BLASTED IDEA, all I said was, ask if we could. And we have to be ready, in case this becomes the only idea possible. Look into it. That's all I'm asking.

I know he's not a saint - like Germain. And I know he's not immortal like Enoch. But it has to be possible. It's written down. It's in the book. We have to take the step.

You always say of it can be imagined it can be accomplished. I imagined it - so - let's find the answer.

ABEL you're asking too much.-

ASKING TOO MUCH? That's funny.
Being fair seems to be asking too much too.
That's in the rules too. We have to follow the
rules, that's in the rules. You say we have to
play by the rules, DEMZ DUH RULEZ.

Fine, fine, fine - sure the rules. You say
the programmers and lizards - and all the
others can't kill the humans - and they don't;
I will grant you this. But you also DO NOT say
that the lizards and others CAN'T convince
the humans that, first, they don't exist, and,
the lizards, CAN manipulate the humans into
killing each other for them - somehow this
practice is fair and within the rules? OK, but
me taking Mikel across is beyond the scope
of possibilities.

I'm sorry but this type of thinking and
((((the other ones)))) - leads me to believe
that a vote of no confidence and a conflict of
interest has arisen in your position, Michael.
Knowing our relationship, and past, I am
beginning to feel as if you like having me
here in prison. And never mind mother.

Germain and Enoch both had penial
glands, can the humans at least have their
penial glands back? And IF NOT what about
Mikel, can he have his back?

You actually want me to accept that Mikel, unlike Germain and Enoch, Mikel never grew up with a fully active penial gland, he also had to overcome RFID enslavement - those two never went through this, and there's no way this is fair. No way.

You say it's too much to ask; and the truth isn't too much to ask, - yet somehow, this game we play where we CAN'T TELL 'EM EVERYTHING, has gotten us this far, far enough to where I'm ready to play THIS CARD

I WANT MY INHERITANCE!!!!

Inheritance, what inheritance? ABEL?

YOU LET CAIN - TRY TO CREATE MAGIC
BY GETTING THEM'S TO PRAY "THE
MEEKEST GETS THE EARTH"

OK - SOMEHOW THAT'S FAIR, BUT LET
ME

TELL YOU SOMETHING - I HAVE OUT
MEEKED MY BROTHER. AND I WANT MY
INHERITANCE.

NOW!!!!.

Inheritance?

Yes, inheritance. I have successfully out meeked MY BROTHER, therefore this planet is MY INHERITANCE.

JUST LIKE THE PRAYER SAYS - JUST LIKE HIS PRAYER SAYS.

OH, SURE he's in a wheelchair, slithering the earth for all eternity now, but if CAIN wants money? He just ask for it. Oh, sure he drives and parks up front; I don't even drive. What's meeker than walking everywhere? I **don't get** money. I have had ten dollars in three weeks. That's less than \$.50 a day. You think I can live as well as he does on that? And food. I don't beg, and I don't care if CAIN has a bunch of monks praying for him; THEY LIVE AT A MONISTARY. THEY KNOW WHEN DINNER IS COMING.

I DON'T.

DINNER MIGHT BE FRIDAY WITH
BREAKFAST ON MONDAY, OR NOT AT
ALL.

OR MAYBE, MAYBE NOT. I LIVE SOLELY
OFF THE FOOD GIVEN TO ME OR FOUND. ON
THE GROUND. THAT'S MEEK.

The rules say meek, NOT WHEELCHAIR
BOUND, slithering the ground for all
eternity. And there are OTHER HUMANS, in
wheelchairs that I would hardly call meek,
they are my heroes. BUT THEY ARE ALSO
braver than the king of their misery.

SO PLEASE TELL ME, Michael - WHAT
ARE
WE GOING TO HAVE TO DO TO -
GERMAIN AND ENOCH - JUST TO MAKE IT
FAIR? BECAUSE THE RULES SAY WE HAVE TO
BE FAIR, don't we? DEMZ DUH RULEZ.

Gotta follow the rules, that's in the
rules.

Chapter 4
Astral Projection with Mark
Bitchup

Come on Mikel, this meeting at the vortex will be fun, I promise. You want to confront Mark Bitchup one day, don't you? Well, I think your gonna like this trip to the vortex.....lets me just say that, because I can't tell you everything, demz duh rulez... gotta follow the rules. That's in the rules.

That morning at the vortex -

I could see Mark Bitchups' soul. He was looking into his mirror with a copy of my book on his counter. He was cursing my name, saying

- I'm going to kill you, Mikel

Neily.

NO, YOU'RE NOT!!!! , I replied,

and he responded.

They took my badge - Neily.

Where's my shield, Bitchup?

They're going to take my uniform,
Neily!!

- Where's my uniform, Mark?

They're gonna take my gun!!!

- Where's my boots, Mark?

My education is ruined, Neily. My education is totally worthless now.

- That makes two of us.

I'm gonna lose my house. I'm gonna be homeless.

- I am homeless, Mark – IAM HOMELESS. All because of you.

- **ALL BECAUSE OF YOU. MARK BITCHUP**

What am I supposed to do now??

- Write a book, MARK, that's what I have to do now. Write a coloring book just

like I suggested, just like I said you would, Mark.

I'm gonna kick your ASS Neily.

- Not personally, Bitchup, am I correct??

Where's my back-up??

- OK. You want to play this that way, you want games? Games you get.....
 - Where's my **FIRE SHELTER**??

And suddenly on Mark's side, all sorts of L.E.O. spirits surrounded him. Dressed to the hilt in RIOT gear. But on my side, after I asked "Where IS MY FIRE SHELTER? " immediately I was surrounded by the Granite Mountain Hot Shots, and all the other fallen fire fighters - over all human lifetimes, that had fallen before me. Millions of them in all shapes and sizes and colors. And we, the fire fighters, were all but willing to destroy the police, or one another, trying to stop them.

How you like me now Mark Bitchup?
You forgot I was a fire fighter. I'm not alone
now Mark. How you like me now? Before we
start, let me explain to all the cops here that
you're all too proud about lying to the jury.
Detective, you like to make shit up. You're a
detective that is part of a small group taking
over the world, threatening to kill people if
you're confronted in court for how you ruin
people's lives.

They said - OH, he's one of those
guys, yeah we're out. We have a family to
look after, and he's not part of the family.
Call us if you need police help. Our money is
on the little guy. It looks like you can handle
this like butter, so have fun.

You pig. We out.

And like that, ½ the army of riot police
spirits split. Mark Bitchup didn't look so big
anymore. Not sized next to the millions lost

firefighters, over the history of OUR planet.
Not next to the PIGS without POLICE back up.

I'm gonna get you, Mikel Neily.

- Looking forward to it Mark. Bring your boyfriend, TOO. The one taking over the world, if'n he's not too busy behind your back. See you when you get here, Moron.

That WAS fun ABEL. That was fun.
Thank you.

Thought that you would like that Mikel.
I thought that you would like that. And I'm
really glad you did.

Chapter 5

CAIN breaks his silence

That night at the vortex -

I had you defeated. HOW DID YOU FIND THE RFID IMPLANT!!!! My creations report they are doing just fine, ABEL. We are on a schedule, ABEL. What is your problem? YOU'RE GOING TO RUIN EVERYTHING. AGAIN.

You always ruin everything, ABEL, I hate it. You even ruined my awakening. How dare you. I'm the king.

Oh, I could most definitely tell you, brother, I could. How I found your slave implant, yes, I could, - the RFID implant that you're not supposed to be using. The implant you put there at Mikel's birth. I could. And I want to, I really want to. I really do. I do. You must believe me when I say that to you.

BUT I CAN'T TELL YOU EVERYTHING,
ISN'T

THAT CORRECT? ISN'T THAT YOUR
RULE? YOUR FIRST RULE. We can't break the
rules. Gotta follow your rules, don't we?
That's in the rules.

Now that you're here, and we're
talking again, let me ask you something -
how'd you like Mikel's book? The Awakening?
I thought it turned out good.

I think he did a good job; you just can't
match his performance. Your book sucks.
Long. BORING. Always Confusing. Too Wordy.
Times have changed, CAIN, no one reads
long confusing wordy books anymore. Not
the way they used to when there weren't a
lot of other books to read. At least this one
has some cuss words in it, humans can relate
to cuss words. Your morons taught them
that.

He wrote, edited and published that
book in 33 days! Under \$1k.

He wrote the Awakening in 33 days?

Yes, sire. Yup he did. So, you know what that means, no more curse. Michaels curse is gone. Forever vanished.

Impossible. How did you do that?

I didn't set any boundaries for him. Pushed him hard. Gave him assurance when he did a good job. And I didn't tell him about the curse, just so he'd keep from getting nervous. They always mess up when they get nervous.

But you had to get that written and around the world in 99 days.

Yeah. I was aware of that, so that's exactly what we did. The rules never said WHO would actually write the Awakening, the rules just say that you'd initiate the Awakening - which you did. So, take some pride. It's about that time anyways, big brother. Wouldn't you agree?

I don't understand what your problem is, ABEL. I really don't.

That's exactly right CAIN - you DON'T UNDERSTAND. And, there's only one solution to that - you have to figure that out for yourself, on your own. I can't tell you everything. Figure out what my problem is, why don't you? It's a shame, you're so wrapped up in being a king that you will never understand. You are a LORD, CAIN. You are NO KING. Or you're not supposed to be a KING. When are you gonna grow up and be the Lord you are supposed to be, CAIN?

We have some things we have to fix first, ABEL.

OH SNAP - Don't you mean destroy the humans? Who happen to also be your creations? You talking about that FIX? CAUSE THAT'S THE - NO THAT IS MY - PROBLEM. I WON'T LET YOU DESTROY THEM, CAIN.

They are perfect. Even with all the weird stuff they do. And I wish you could see that CAIN. I wish you could see through their eye's. Your their father.

Chapter 6
ABEL ask for the Assistance of
Mikel -
Confronting CAIN

The next morning at the vortex.

I have had it up to here with your goons beating me and Mikel up whenever they feel like it. We finished the book, by the way. HA! Beat you again, big brother. The awakening has officially been started. You can't stop it. It's in the rules. I made sure we followed the rules.

Look CAIN, I didn't want to say anything to you the last time we talked. We had more important stuff to talk about. But brother, you look terrible. I can tell your management has you strung out. I could tell you how Mikel kicked the heroin problem he had - but I think I will let Mikel tell it.

Mikel, would you? Please? Please tell my Brother, how you kicked your heroin addiction.

Well, Lord – I guess, I decided that everything I had learned had created me, so I forgot everything that I learned. Basically, I started a new learning process for myself. I wandered the highways of America in a vow of poverty for two years. I gave up on movies. Music, unless it was live music. I gave up TV, the news on TV. But most important, was getting away from the money. Money was the root of my drug problem.

I realized that it was the money that kept me addicted. Without the money – I couldn't buy any heroin. And I wasn't about to steal or do even worse things for drugs. So, I decided to live without money. For two years. And once I could live without drugs, comfortably, I would teach myself how to live life with money again.

What happened to you,

Mikel?

I ended up in TAOS, New

Mexico.

Tell the King What

happened there, Mikel.

I became a Fire Fighter.

Did you hear that CAIN? He became a fire fighter. Not exactly an easy job, or an easy job to get. Just like kicking heroin isn't easy. Tell him what happened to your fire job, Mikel, CAIN would love to hear this.....

ABEL?

Do it Mikel!! Tell him what happened.....this is important.

Well, Lord, I lost my first fire job when my infant daughter had been hurt by a guy, the police were called and came to my house- so I was forced to give my testimony. Reluctantly, I told the police everything that had happened; up until now my solution had been to murder the attacker. But when police arrived asking for a testimony - I had to give that idea up. I reluctantly told the officer how I had witnessed the end of my infant daughter's attack. And that a visitor's daughter had been attacked as well. There had been two attacks against young girls.

I tell the cop the entire story, and he tells me right away that he won't investigate the case. That it was useless, impossible to win at trial, and it'd be a very long trial - too costly to pursue. Be reminded he is a cop just doing his job. Or not doing his job rather.

He told me that since my allegations were so serious, the crime hated by just about everyone alive, and since TAOS was a very small place – the security of my daughter’s attacker was completely in my hands. Said if the old guy accidentally falls down and breaks his hip at the grocery store, while he is buying food, Mr. Cop said he was going to arrest me for attempted murder. Told me “Even if some stranger retaliates against this man and hits him in the head – I will get you for criminal conspiracy. You get me? His safety is totally your responsibility.

Tell him what you said Mikel? Tell KING CAIN what you said to the cop. I love this one.

I said to him, protection was under his job description. He needed to protect the criminal, if that’s what he desired. Protection is your job.

What else did you say to him, Mikel, oh I love this one too –

I told him that if he couldn't come to the aid of an infant when she needs it most - then he was in no way qualified to protect me.

Tell him what

you did.

I left TAOS.

NO - Tell him the rest, no wait, I will do it.

I LOVE THIS ABOUT MIKEL, it's exactly what I would've done. Mikel packs up the entire family and whatever they could fit in their family car, sells his truck, abandon's his junker car on the highway with a note left in the driver's seat that read, "FREE CAR" - went back to his house for the last time and burned his house down TO THE GROUND, so no one would scavenge the place. Take over his hard work.

Killed all of his pets and livestock – four chickens and a milking goat, out of mercy so they wouldn't die in the desert from dehydration, or worse. And Mikel and his new family left town within 48 hours. Left TAOS and hasn't been back SINCE. Walked away from a five-acre land deed he owned as well.

Tuff wasn't it Mikel?

Yes. I never mention it.

Plus, he had to quit all five jobs he had, one of them being a firefighting job. Those ain't easy to get CAIN. That's how Mikel lost his first Fire job. Had to live out of the family's only car for eight months, homeless and nowhere to go. CAIN, Mikel was even arrested, before he left Texas, just for being the guy that was reporting a rape in progress. He can't even report a rape in progress without being arrested.

But your goons don't stop there.

NO. Mikel gets another Fire Job. And those ain't easy to get, CAIN. Took Mikel a long time to get his next job. Four Years. Tell him how that ended, Mikel.

I was sleeping in a hotel room; I heard a knock on the door and went and answered the door. The security guard was at the door, and he was kicking me out.

Tell him what for -

ABEL -

The guard thought that I was a homeless person, and he told me I couldn't stay at the hotel even though I paid cash. And I wasn't allowed to grab my bags either. I was kicked out. Didn't matter that I paid or not. It was Motel Sick in Eureka, CA.

Didn't you pay money for that hotel room, Mikel?

Yes, I did.

Were you homeless?

No, I wasn't. No more homeless than any other college student staying at the dorms. I was a student living at the college dorms just like all the others. I got stuck in town for the weekend and rented the hotel room to rest safely.

SEE CAIN, THERE'S THAT HOMELESS WORD ALL BEING MISUSED AGAIN - you know what I mean, you know exactly what I mean. - OH, IT GETS BETTER, GO ON MIKEL, and TELL BROTHER THE REST.

The security guard assaults me, and we begin to fight. Him fighting me, and me

just trying to get away from him and stop the fighting. I was confused as to how or even why I was being beat up. Even treated like this. The guard was easily 400 lbs. and this fight went on for a very long time. Because of his being fat, he would ask me for a break.

" Can we please take a break?
Please?"

We took four breaks total during the fight. He would stop fighting, catch his breath, and then behind my back attack me again. I did everything I could to stop him from fighting, and I never hit him the way he deserved. Not even once. At one point this security guard tried to throw me over the railing and tried to make me fall to the ground below.

Tell him what happened next, Mikel -

Police arrive, and the security guard had me in handcuffs and defeated after 30

minutes of fighting and getting his boss to help him.

Which is illegal, by the way.....CAIN. It's kidnapping. Security can't do that to a customer! A customer that didn't do anything wrong. Not supposed to anyways -

ABEL, please -

Sorry. Mikel. Please continue, please, would you Mikel.... This is important.

I'm in handcuffs and the officer Lame Rabang is first to arrive. He sees that I have an untouched six pack of beer and says," oh, I see you're drunk."

Drunk? I haven't even finished one beer yet.

They're all six still there. How can I be drunk?

“You’re drunk, if I say you’re drunk.”

And Rabang proceeded to empty all of the beers. With the empty bottles, he threw them in every direction. He was setting the stage, as you would say.

He took the statement from the security guard. During which time the security guard told Officer Lame Rabang that I was a homeless person. And I had been making too much noise. Let me remind you, I was asleep just before this started, so that was a lie.

As soon as Officer Rabang the word “homeless”, the very first words out of his mouth was this, “homeless guy? A homeless guy? Really? We got a homeless guy?

Excellent. Oh yeah, your definitely going to jail - all you homeless need to be in jail. “

He never took a statement from me, or even let me tell him that I was asleep, or that I wasn't homeless.

Another officer shows up, Mark Bitchup, and right away, after being falsely accused of being homeless by the security guard, Bitchup puts my arm inside of his police issued numb chucks, and on my wrist and starts what's called a pain compliance. Basically he was trying to break my forearm by pushing the two bones of your forearm together.

Before he starts he says to me, "Now don't scream, that's an order."

But there was no way to keep from screaming.

Oh Yeah, you're definitely going to jail?

For what?

You didn't follow a direct order. I told you not to scream while I break your arm. Now don't scream this time.

Before my actual ARREST begins, and after the pain compliance, Mark Bitchup grabs me by my throat. He lifts me up off the ground, "Lame Rabang, this is how you can get a resisting arrest charge that will stick in court, and all the witnesses will have to agree.

THIS IS ALWAYS A FUN THING TO DO, TOO.

FIRST - LIFT THEM OFF THE GROUND
AND APPLY PRESSURE TO THEIR WINDPIPE.
CHOKE THEM BASICALLY.

Now let me describe Mark Bitchup. He is 6'8" tall, and well into the 300's for weight class. And also armed to the teeth. I'm 125 lbs. 5'5". Tall. Plus, I'm respectful to police, so I probably look like easy prey to this guy.

Bitchup continues the lesson to rookie Lame Rabang, "Basically you put pressure to their windpipe, and you wait. You're killing them basically. You wait until they naturally start to convulse, since they're dying essentially. Once their body is flailing around because of the body's natural defenses, then all you have to do is this -

- You simply have to say this, three times. You have to say this THREE TIMES, OK? That's really important. Say these exact words three times. I know you can do it, you do it for public drinking at the plaza, so you can do this too. I know you can.

You say -

“STOP RESISTING OR I WILL BE
FORCED
TO USE FURTHER FORCE. “

– always says” forced to use” too.
Sounds better to the jury when the witness
says you had to say that.

REPEAT: “STOP RESISTING. OR I WILL
BE
FORCED TO USE FURTHER FORCE.
STOP
RESISTING.”

Wait some more. Now, the next time
you say it, the dude is all yours, and since he
resisted your arrest- you can do whatever
you want to him.

STOP RESISTING OR I WILL BE FORCED
TO USE FURTHER FORCE.

WON'T STOP? OK!!!!

- LETS ROLL RABANG. HE IS ALL OURS
NOW. WOULDN'T STOP RESISTING.
AND WE HAVE YOUR WITNESS RIDE ALONG,
DON'T WE? THEN WE ARE GOLDEN.

Rabang and Bitchup carried me to the car and beat the shit out of me for a very long time. They made a show of it too. Told me to "prepare to die homeless man. Prepare to die" over and over. Bitchup and Rabang took turns choking me unconscious. It happened six times. I thought I was going to die.

At one-point Bitchup took his mag light and smashed my face with it. Kept hitting my teeth. But my teeth are fake. So, all he was doing was breaking my porcelain teeth. Kept asking, "Why aren't they coming out?" Bitchup was trying to knock out my teeth with his mag light and busting up my lip.

I had to tell him, “cause they’re fake.”

- Oh.

I kept trying to plead with Mark Bitchup and Lame Rabang, “please I’m not a homeless person. **Please don’t kill me.**” But this wasn’t going to make them stop. And then I realized what I was saying. I realized they shouldn’t treat me this way, not at all. For any reason. No way, not at all, homeless or otherwise. And never mind because I am not homeless. – So, I quit saying it, quit saying “please stop killing me. I am not homeless”. I gave up and prepared to die.

I even quit begging for my life.

Homeless or not, no one should be terrorized by the local cops. Not like this. And over nothing but the word homeless.

After I stopped with my pleading for my life, Bitchup was choking me unconscious

again, for the sixth time. I did what they said and prepared myself for death. I thought about my daughter and wondered would she ever believe whatever lie they're going to have to tell her and the public. Would she believe them? I hope she never truly believes them. Too bad I taught her to trust them.

Then it all went black. And ADAMS VOICE comes over me AND SAYS,

**"TRUST ME. THIS IS MY
WILL."**

The next thing I know, Bitchup is complaining that somehow my almost dead and unconscious body had hit his balls. And he was screaming about the pain of his balls." He hit my balls. He hit my balls. Oh, my balls. Oh, my aching balls. "

This act was of course followed by 16 punches to my side that would crack my ribs. I asked GOD - or ADAM, I found out, "Really? This is your will? I was better off dead. Now I have to feel the pain of these two kicking my ass again. Why, Lord, this hurts?"

The show didn't stop there.

Bitchup, after the ribs, after the teeth and after choking me, puts his mag light behind my knee, creating a fulcrum, and he proceeds to push down with all his 300 lbs.= body weight till my knee breaks.

Painful. Very painful.

When Bitchup had done his little act about his balls, immediately - as if he were waiting for this to happen, Rabang runs from around the corner and he begins to beat on me.

"Oh, your gonna hurt my buddy? I will show you pal. You can't do that to a cop. What's wrong with your kind?"

And he proceeds to abuse me too.

“My favorite part of my job is making homeless people like you scream in pain. Now scream you piece of shit.”

Upon saying this, Rabang took hold of the hand cuffs and twisted them in a direction my wrist will not comply with. He tells me ““scream, or I will break ‘em” - real valuable police work.

I was asleep in bed almost an hour ago. Now I’m fighting for my life, and police are the ones trying to kill me.

Shit.

They didn’t stop here, nope. Eureka police drive me to the hospital, tie me down, surround me with around ten police, and give me the first and only tetanus shot I have ever received by police while getting arrested.

Before the nurse approaches me with this needle, that had an unknown substance inside, they're having fun saying," we're gonna kill you homeless man. Prepare to die."
"

While I'm handcuffed to the gurney, having no option and not knowing what was in that shot – not to mention the police and their threats to kill me, being beating, teeth broken, knee ruined forever – once again, I was forced to fight for my life. I was forced to kick the nurse in the face with my foot. This awarded me another assault charge.

During trial, the D.A., he had used this against me, said that I was terrible because I would kick a girl in the face. And that I was extra terrible because I would kick a girl in the face three times. Never mind the fighting for my life part and telling me you're killing me business.

- Good job, Mikel. Now tell CAIN when you started to wake up, when you had your own awakening to what's

possibly going on. Tell them about school.....

OK. I was in school, or really just trying to be. I was always the first to apply for everything I needed – but somehow, I was also the last student served. This was the case for housing, food card, books for school, loan money as well.

It was my second attempt at going to the College of the Deadwoods, because of the assault by Lame Rabang and Bitchup. The one that had occurred the year before. I just started fresh again. And right away, again, they – the school, started giving me the run around. No money for books, loans money won't arrive till after midterms, housing – even though I was the first to apply – was questionable at most, and likely wouldn't happen till semester break.

Which left me homeless. I didn't get it. Just like at the MOTEL SICK. Here I was - a

paying customer. And I couldn't get what I was paying for.

I was being treated like I was -
DIFFERENT THAN THEM.

That's when I woke up. The system
isn't fair for all.

AND YOU KNOW WHAT CAIN?

THAT'S WHEN I NOTICED SOME
PEOPLE, OR THINGS, ARE OUT OF PLACE.
ABEL said.

SOME PEOPLE HAVE MORE THAN THEY
COULD EVER WANT.

OTHER'S DON'T EVEN HAVE WHAT
THEY NEED.

The Piggy Police are ruining people's lives. They ruined Mikel's fire job – not once mind you, but twice, not to mention ruined his forestry career on top of that.

That's not right.

That's not how the job of law is done.

Then I asked myself, what else is broke?

Education at the College seemed to be for some, but definitely not inclusive for OTHERS. Like Mikel.

Education, turns out, was just stealing the loan money, and leaving nothing over for books. They wouldn't even give Mikel books to help him, CAIN. BOOKS CAIN? With school. You don't need a lot of tools at a school, but you do need a book. Not to mention the cost of education is very, very high, CAIN.

It's as if education weren't created for everybody. Or everything, if I may, seeing as how Mikel was treated like a thing from another planet by school staff. He was never given equal respect. They never applied concern. Never applied care.

What else is broken? Medicine.

Medicine is broken.

Mikel's, own grandmother died – not from cancer – but from the radiation the hospital gave her to fight the cancer. Shits, broken.

What else is broken? You know what never mind that, instead, you know what, big brother CAIN?

I'VE HAD ENOUGH. If your morons and half breeds don't like Mikel because he is

short on friends – well, let THEIR KIND know-
they are really gonna hate him WHEN I CALL
MY DRINKING BUDDY'S together.

CAIN -YOUR MORONS HIT ME IN THE
HEAD WITH A ROCK LAST TIME MIKEL WAS
ROBBED!!!!

- A ROCK!!!!!!

DID YOU FORGET TO TELL THEM
ABOUT THE ROCK, CAIN?

I THINK WE WROTE THAT DOWN.

IN FACT, I'M SURE OF IT. IT'S IN A
BOOK

SOMEWHERE. CAN'T SEEMS TO THINK
OF WHAT BOOK THOUGH, CAIN. REMIND ME
AGAIN, WHAT BOOK WAS THAT?

I'VE HAD ENOUGH OF YOU. AND THIS
FIGHT, CAIN. THIS IS YOUR FAULT.

This is all your fault. All your fault
CAIN.

I smell a fish out of water -

LOAD UP, TEXAS.

NASHVILLE, ARE WE READY?

DENVER, CAN I GET AN AMEN?

OH, YOUR GONNA REGRET having me
hit IN
THE HEAD WITH A ROCK, CAIN, and I'M
GOING TO MAKE ABSOLUTE CERTAIN OF

THAT. HADN'T LEARNED ABOUT THAT YET,
HAVE YOU?

THAT'S ALL RIGHT. THIS IS OK BY ME.
Fine with me. You about to learn, CAIN, that's
for certain, cause I'mma learn you real good,
CAIN. I'mma learnt 'ya brother. REAL GOOD.
LEARN YA REAL GOOD. BELIEVE THAT.

I smell a fish out of water,

SO.....

LOAD UP, TEXAS?

NASHVILLE, ARE WE READY?

DENVER, CAN I GET AN AMEN?

YOU HIT ME IN THE HEAD WITH A
ROCK!!!!!! OH, MAN.

OH, THAT'S NEVER BEEN DONE
BEFORE, CAIN. HOW ORIGINAL. TOO BAD
FOR YOU - YOU WILL NEVER LEARN WILL
YOU.

THAT'S IT. NO MORE MR. NICE GUY.
YOUR ASS IS MINE BROTHER, YOUR ASS IS
MINE.

Chapter 7
What did you just do, ABEL?

ABEL? What did you just do?

I called for backup. That's what I did.
I'm fed up with this. I'm fed up with this fight.
I called my drinking buddies. (Abel yells to
the sky) IF YOU DIDN'T LIKE ME WHEN I
DIDN'T HAVE FRIENDS, OH, YOU REALLY
GONNA HATE ME WHEN I DO HAVE MY
FRIENDS WITH ME, WON'T YA?

WHAT DID YOU JUST DO ABEL?

I called for backup, Mikel. Just called
me a little backup. DATS ALL. Relax....

Like a militia?

Exactly like a militia, Mikel.

As in the four horsemen of the
apocalypse, from the Bible type of back up?

I never understood why they call them that,
there's five.....

ABEL !!!

Yes. Exactly like the 4 horsemen,
Mikel.

But you only called three.

Four coming, so what.

But you said yourself there's five.
ABEL, you have to follow the rules. You have
to call them all in order. Why didn't you call
the last one?

And what is the name of the last one?

Oh, I know he'll be there.

He'll be there?

ABEL, the last horseman's name, what is it?

Can't tell you everything. I don't keep up with that anymore. I'm sure it's something stupid like the other guys and girl. (Why we ever.....ABEL say's to himself.)

ABEL. The last horseman is DEATH, I'm pretty certain it is. ABEL, why didn't you call on DEATH?

Is it, DEATH? Is that what they call it now days?

Why didn't you call death? ABEL?

ABEL, are you DEATH?

Uh....

ABEL – tell me.....ABEL you're death aren't you?

Oh, Mikel, you make it sound like such a bad thing. What's the problem?

EXCUSE ME, but if I'm not mistaken – DIDN'T you try to commit suicide last week, I thought you'd be glad I finally show up. SHIT. What's the problem here? Sorry if I'm late.

Am I that terrible? Doesn't it count for anything that I loves a good time, women, drinking beer with the dogs, cigarettes, dancing, goes to church – A HUMANITARIAN, mind you. Fighting for your freedom – mind you, too - that just wants to go home and go

fishing? Fish gotta die too you know. Is that - So terrible? Am I that ugly sounding? I try so hard, too. I really do.

MIKEL, THEY HIT ME - YOU - IN THE HEAD
WITH A ROCK. THAT REALLY PISSES ME OFF.
AND I HAVE BEEN HERE AN AWFUL LONG
TIME HOPING FOR CHANGE. But change
don't come lest you make it come. Time to
get hard boiled.

ABEL, I don't want no part of the
apocalypse. No part at all.

Don't you worry about that, son?

But didn't you just start the
apocalypse?

Yes, I did, but - That! - doesn't mean
anything just yet. Mikel, I can't tell you
everything. Your just gonna have to trust me.

Mikel, when you prayed for success, I knew right then this might be our only chance at doing this. Doing this right and winning this time. We have the power of your prayer now. We have to do this now.

Ascending. To show them you can do it. And VOTE. You prayed the right prayer. We have to try.

How long will it take them to get here?

I don't know Mikel, they're kind of lazy, in my opinion. Plus, it's been 200k years since the last Apocalypse. We will have to wait and see. Why 'ya asking?

I have to warn people, that's why.

Oh. THAT. They'll never believe you Mikel. But I understand what you're thinking. Go ahead and tell them, but you can't tell

them everything. Remember the rules, DEMZ DUH RULEZ, OK? Gotta follow the rules, it's in the rules.

ABEL, you just started the Apocalypse!!!! The real actual last chapter in the Bible version of shit just hit the fan. I need to warn people. At least my family. SHIT!!!!

And I don't remember kicking a dog or killing a stray cat, or ever making a deal with the devil for my soul. How'd you, the spirit of death, get in there? How'd you get inside of me?

Spirit of DEATH? Spirit of DEATH? I'm offended. Do I really sound that UGLY to you, Mikel?

Mikel, I am not the spirit of death. I am not even the angel of death, either. Those are two different jobs, with two different – uh, people- I guess doing those two jobs.

I am the Strike Team leader of the Apocalypse Weapon. General to the Army of the DAMNED. General to the Army of DARKNESS - which I prefer you call them the Army of Dorkness, Army of Dorkness, see? I like that. Doesn't sound so scary. I am the General - GENERAL DEATH. But I prefer to be called ABEL TO DO ANYTHING.

It's a rank. A rank that is inside of a Military. It's just a job. And if it makes you feel better, I hate my job too. Seems hereditary throughout the galaxy's and universe's - so get used to it. Mikel, go to sleep, we got a busy day tomorrow.

Chapter 8

The first conversation revisited

March 1st, 2015 Eureka, California

CAIN, these people deserve to live.
They take care of their young and elders and
deserve to be awoken and accepted. They do
not deserve to die.

Jesus, Is this how this is going to start,
ABEL?

DON'T SAY THAT NAME! Don't you
dare say that name; not after what you did.
And expect to do next; no –

The tension started immediately.

This is what I walked into. A FEW moment's ago, I was out on the street begging for change. This strange guy, in a wheelchair, he offered to buy me a beer and let me drink with him- IF I would drink the beer at his place. Which happened to be a rundown hotel that was close by.

As soon as we sat down the two brothers started at each other. The mood was very thick with tension, the conversation went back and forth very rapidly. All sorts of odd stuff was being talked about. The two brothers talked about the invention of baseball, chess, pick up sticks, go fish. I remember ABEL saying baseball is only fair if you're on your team - 9 against one. Only you would think that's fair.

At one-point ABEL got up to leave. Angry and frustrated.

NO brother don't go. Please don't go. I need you - I need someone like you here. You're the only one of our kind that's still

here with me. Please don't leave. I'm so lonely and I'm alone. No one understands me, or home the way you do. Stay with me brother, please. Please don't leave me, please don't leave. Not now. Not yet. Not like this. PLEASE. Please 'lil brother.?

My helpers won't even get me a book to read, no one understands me. I'm so lonely, brother. Don't leave yet. Don't leave yet. We still have some time. Don't leave like this – please don't leave me. please.....'lil brother, please.

This was a very sincere breakdown by CAIN. He truly wanted to be with his brother, there was real fear in his voice after ABEL threatened to leave.

And there was true compassion in ABEL'S voice when he said – I understand being alone brother, I do. So, I will stay – but I can't stay long. And I'm not going to fight with you either.

So, I will stay till the next escalation.

At least we can talk now, big brother. I am proud to be past all the fighting brother, I am. And I don't want to fight with you, so I will stay as long as possible....

Can we not talk about the vote right now, and just be together, ABEL? Please, my helpers won't even fetch me a book. I have been asking for a very long time now. I don't think they treat me very well.

Yes, I will Brother. Just for you Brother. Just because, I know how you feel. To be Alone. I've been alone inside most of the prisons that you put my prison host bodies in - all of my lives.

You know CAIN, your goons have almost killed another one of my prison host bodies, AGAIN. What gives? Ya'll beat my bodies all most all the time NOW. And without cause. The last two times Mikel's been beaten he was asleep when it happened - what kind of policing is that? There's no reason for Mikel to be in trouble,

jailed or beaten. Not like this, I know you've done something to my prison host body's, and I want you to change it immediately. I don't know exactly what it is - OR IF THEY'RE OUT TO KILL YOU AND OVER THROW YOU. But, THEY, THE GOON'S, ACT DIFFERENT.

THESE homeless war pigs AREN'T even DOING THEIR JOB RIGHT, BUT that's ONLY MY OPINION.

CAIN, TURNING ON THE LOVE LIGHT, WE can do it. WE COULD BE HOME RIGHT NOW IF WE DID THAT. WE EVEN WROTE THAT DOWN. BUT WE WILL NEVER BE ABLE TO DO IT, if we keep doing what we are doing.

YOU HAVE TO CHANGE YOUR MIND ABOUT THE VOTE. We must release the shame first. We have to lift the shame.

CAIN, WHY DO YOU HAVE ME HERE? IS IT BECAUSE OF THE MORON's AND THEIR attempted murder against Mikel? Again, mind you?

-I just wanted to see you. It's your Birthday. I wanted to tell you how sorry I am about your birthday. I'm sorry I got rid of it.

-CAIN, you never got rid of my birthday. It's ok brother. I know it was killing you. Pun intended. To have it, or say it, without me around. Vote counting day. February 30th.

I HARDLY CARE ANYMORE, BEEN HERE SO LONG. Besides, who needs to count votes anymore? Machines will do it right, isn't that correct?

BUT that's when all this between us started, big brother. You started a war that day. That's when I really got upset. You changed the democracy around here. And I can tell you with certainty; the humans could've ascended by now, if you only allow them a true democracy.

But it's been ok with me brother
because my birthday isn't gone. My birthday
just has a new name - just like me. And the
new name always reminds me that you have
to MARCH FIRST - INTO BATTLE.

Besides who needs vote counting day
anymore - isn't that your opinion without
giving the humans a full-fledged democracy,
like it is back home. Its only your vote that
matters, isn't it? You don't even let the
humans have a diplomacy; do you hate them
that much? There is no such thing as
diplomacy when seven of the eight people
and things in the diplomacy don't even exist.
It's impossible.

Why do you even pretend with
democracy, when you and I know - you won't
allow democracy? THE way it is, the way it is
back home. One Citizen, One vote. Why don't
you even let them have a true democracy
here in prison, CAIN?

Democracy has its flaws, ABEL.

No, it doesn't, CAIN. But there's obviously going to be problems when seven of the eight - in a diplomatic conversation- DON'T EVEN EXIST!

CAIN, THAT HAS TO BE FIXED. NOW.
There is no getting around that.

And you and I both know that CAN'T BE DONE Without THE shame being lifted. That has to be first. THE shame MUST BE LIFTED.

There is no other way - we can't.

CAIN.

But how?

Democracy is a diplomatic process, where all are involved, you know this. And

one group cannot be overpowered. Or not involved at all. It has to be that way CAIN. You know this. It works back home.

I won't allow it. These humans are a mistake. They're not even supposed to exist. I'm ashamed of them. They're so ugly. And gross. They're a mistake.

Chocolate chip cookies were a mistake!!! - You like that mistake!!!. Humans made that mistake!!!. Can't go one day without your chocolate chip cookies, can you? They made that - and you love them, don't you?

What about the gate?

We still don't know. We won't know till we do it. We have to try? Others have done it. And this one ain't so bad. He's been in so many of your friends jails that semen won't be an issue. You and I both know he won't need water or food if he gets there ok. His

stomach is small. I've taught him how to meditate thru the hunger pains. I know this body can do it. But I need you to change your mind about the shame, and about the vote.

CAIN, why do you tell them to eat three meals a day? They're not building pyramids anymore. They don't need that much food anymore. You don't even feed the humans food, and you will make fun of them for being fat.

Mikel survives off three to five meals of ramen noodles a week, that's 20 meals a month. What excuse do you have for treating the humans like that? I know the ascension can be done, and we have to try now. I know of another gate, don't make me find it.

CAIN, there has to be something we can do to just give it one shot, we might need new rules but we both know - this is the first step, we can't go up there with the shame not being lifted. LIFT THE SHAME. We have to lift the shame.

This conversation went on for two hours and often got pretty heated. Odd things were recalled and even laughed about. The brother named CAIN never raised his voice. But I – I mean ABEL, raised his voice and went overboard often. I was amazed at how CAIN kept his calm.

At one-point ABEL broke down and said to his brother,” You have eye’s like mom, I’m so glad you stopped me from leaving, you two have the most beautiful eyes. Do you remember what mom made for you that birth year?

Yeah, Tanzanite – She made you picture Jasper.

I know and then she hid them from us – for fighting. Even in jail she still mothered us.

We’ve both come a long way from then, little brother.

Yes, we have, CAIN. I'm glad we can talk again. It's good to talk to you again, brother. I have missed you. I'm very proud of you that we can finally talk again and move away from fighting. I have missed you - my brother. I have.

I looked up to you growing up. I'm sorry I have raised my voice at you. It has nothing to do with your authority. However, I care more for the humans, and mom's dying wish than your authority. Or ego, mind you. I can assure you we haven't been doing this right. We can get that light on, I know we can. And I don't think the half breeds want it to come on. I think they like it here. I don't trust your half breeds. I don't trust them at all. And I do not think the half breeds have your best interest in mind. I don't think they respect you. I don't even think they want you alive. I'm not even sure they like you the way they used to.

DON'T CALL THEM HALF BREED'S.
THEY DO NOT BREED.

I KNOW. AND I FEEL REAL BAD FOR THEIR
KIND. CAUSE THAT'S THE MOST FUN A MAN
CAN HAVE IN TEN HOURS.

TEN HOURS?????!

WHO YOU THINK YOUR TALKIN TO, BIG
BROTHER?

There was a quiet still in the
conversation for a few moments.

You can really breed for ten hours? -
Asked CAIN.

Depends on the girl, but yeah,
sometimes, if I'm not in a hurry.

CAIN, I love you. But it has taken me a
very long time to remember this love for you.

But mark my words, it's not going to be the same as before. I'm not doing this MOM's way anymore. I want to go home. I want to go fishing. Fish gotta die to, and I miss my girl's dog and home.

You and I both know; this place isn't like home. You call it a mistake, but it's more than a mistake. And I wish you could see that. I wish I could help you see that.

MOM was right. This relative and these humans have their place among us. It's time to set them free.

CAIN, democracy is like a train. But this train, we build this train - as we go along. It takes two tracks to make a train run. One on the left. One on the right. Sometimes the train is going to come to an obstacle, and the train is going to have to go right for a while, in order to get around that obstacle. And at other times there's going to be another obstacle - and the train is going

to have to go left. BUT DEMOCRACY, runs right down the middle.

DEMOCRACY IS PERFECT, MOTHER FUCKER. AND DON'T YOU COMPLAIN ABOUT IT, WHEN IT WAS YOUR IDEA.

If we keep going right - making the right decision all the time, big brother - all we do is go in circles. CAIN. Give them a true democracy. The way it is back home. Let's not go in circles anymore. Let's not do that. Not AGAIN. Make a new choice CAIN.

Chapter 9

INTRO THE 4 HORSEMEN

That night at the vortex -

I call pestilence.

Nope. No way. That position is mine.

I'm the boss, I call pestilence. I say -
First AWAKE first dibs!!!!

No way. That position is mine.

And mine.

Oh, ya'll are no fun.

D- man, take a shower. You ever
gonna change?

Fuck you, boss. Asshole.

Good to see you too, just kidding.

FAM!!! - man you ugly. SAY
SOMETHING,
that's an order, never mind. I might've said
that backwards.

Shit boys, and girl, and whatever you
are, MY-FAM- MAN. We may never find out.
Fellas, girl, we have work to do.

Where you want to meet - 4th Ave.?

No, I GOTTA better place than 4th Ave. That's so last Apocalypse. If you ain't noticed, one of my followers- if you will, has so kindly built a terrible likeness of me in front of the library. We will meet there.

Which one?

Exactly, see you there....

A few moments later we met,

You call that a likeness?

Oh, don't make fun of them. I think it's adorable, I did say terrible likeness. You don't like it?

Well.

What! Fam, what about you? Do you like it?

He just shot a look, didn't say anything. Always the quiet one.

Man, this really hurts my emotional's. They did a good job, I think, especially with the red spikey part. Damn, I like it.

You don't like it - I mean, you really don't like it?

Why are we here?

Cuss, I miss you. No, sorry, we have work to do.

Man, what a drag. I really like it here. I like what they have. Why can't they just share and get along?

I don't know Pesty. I really don't know.

Man, why does everybody hate their job? I mean its everybody. Universal, too. My dad included.

Why? Don't you hate yours? Don't you hate your job?

Well of course, I do - but I can do whatever a human does all day long. I love their work. But it's just crazy how we are all so alike. Dad, you, me, CAIN, the programmers and the humans.

Why did it start this time?

Why? Why? Cause I'm sick of being here that's why. Shit, ain't you?

No.

No?

Fam? What about you? Do you like it here?

Ever the quiet one, just looks away.

D-Man.?

- I like it here. You can smoke. I like laughing.

Yeah me to, but I got this new thing I want to do. I'm sick of fighting to. I am. And the old way ain't getting the results I want. Plus, they hit me in the head with a rock. Like Mikel's black eye?

NO, THEY DID NOT!!!! OMG!!!!!!
THOSE Stupid MOTHER FUCKERS. Oh, that makes me so mad.-

Now, Pesty, hold up- girl.

I know. 6 million ways to kill me, and we've done each of them 100 million times, and they pull the good old rock upside my head bullshit.

Fine by me, now you see why I got you here. Look this time, I'm going across first.

But how will we? I mean...how are we supposed to -

Pesty, you're second in command, that's a question I should ask you. But I don't care to find out cause I trust you. Look none of you can do what I'm proposing to do. So, it has to be this way. I have to go first. D- man, whatever, can you go and find the other humans? No, you can't.

What about you FAM?

You see? Hey, I don't like it either, but it has to be me, I'm the only one that knows where they might be.

What do we do till then?

Well, we avoid each other - like the plague. (ABEL and DISEASE both look at the other and laugh).

That was a good one. One of your best. D- Man, was I proud of you. I will never order you around. No more "impress me" to you. I have learned my lesson there. I still think the plague was a little overboard, but

none the less effective. Good job. Never tell you to impress me ever again. That's my D-man.

The A Team. Started picking on ABEL

- HEY!!! What did Jesus said?

He said if your gay hit 'em in the head with a rock!!!

He never said that! - Pesto

He said if you live a long and miserable life you'll have a really big house and be rich in heaven-

HE NEVER SAID THAT EITHER. Pesty, Ok. Ok. Bad example. Bad example. Cease and desist. Cease and desist. That's an order.

Well, what did he say then?

What did who say? What did Jesus say? Well I will tell you what he said – what Jesus said.

What Jesus said was, GET TO WORK YOU UGLY BARNICLES OF JUSTICE. Man, ya'll bother me sometimes. But....

Man, it's so good to see you four again. I love you guys – and girl, too. I love you guys. I really do. Look, this is the only idea I got that's different than before. The old ways aren't working. So.....trust me.

Trust You? Oh, that's hilarious –Luna?

I wasn't alone in that, and she's forgiven me, Jesus forgive me, pray tells your problem?

Mars –

That stopped an apocalypse, and YOU were involved. Both of you. ALL OF YOU.

Tikal-

Who gave them the map, PESTY? –
Famine back me up on this one?

Atlantis –

I was drunk, my finger slipped, PESTY

Aquarius –

That was never supposed to be that
bad.

Alexandria –

That was your idea Pesty, I just gave
the order

Alexandria -

Once again, I was drunk, sorry

Alexandria –

FAMINE lost

the keys.

Alexandria -

D- MAN lost

the keys.

Alexandria -

PESTO lost the keys.

Alexandria -

You lost the keys, that time, PESTY.

Alexandria -

Ok, I lost the keys that time - but you talked me and the guys into it.

Alexandria -

I have no excuse for that one.

Alexandria -

You were there, you were drunk too.

Alexandria -

All right, fine, I get it - we suck.

Pompeii -

Oh, that one. Once again, FINGER SLIPPED - wasn't drunk, but I was really stoned. You know a - "DO YOU REALLY WANT TO DESTROY POMPEII "- BUTTON WOULD'VE BEEN NICE TO HAVE BACK THEN TOO, YOU KNOW.

Aztlan -

OH, man this is useless. That was four civilizations ago, why won't I ever be forgiven for that? Why? Why are you guys so unforgiving?

Jesus, Luna forgives me, why won't ya'll?

Caspian Sea -

That. Oh girl, did you have to bring that up? You know that gives me an idea. Everyone. Raise your hand, that's an order.

(they all four comply)

Now guy's let down your hands. I said guys, Pesty. Keep your hand raised, Pesty. Now does anyone have a question? Oh, Pesty, you have your hand raised, do you have a question for me?

Can I kick your ass?

Don't you mean MAY I kick your ass? And yes you may, once I give the order. You can lower your hand girl. Now gentlemen and girl...Get to work - that's an order!!!! LOVE YOU gnarls and whatever else ya'll are.....till we meet again.

And just like that, the apocalypse weapon was initiated. The Apocalypse began April first, 2016. In Tucson, AZ., USA. At the downtown Valdez library.

Chapter 10

ABEL talks to the Army of Darkness

That night at the Vortex -

DAWN report -

I'm pushing them back, but I need reinforcement.

DAWN, I'm working on getting you the best. You're doing a fine job. Keep it up.

TWILIGHT report -

There is hope, they can get along, I know it's possible.

Good report, thank you

SHADOW, you play both sides, and I don't like that. Report. -

They are strong in number and increasing their strength where you have vulnerability's.

Thank you.

TICK TOCK, can you get any more time?

CAN YOU MAKE SOME -
SYNTHETICALLY? WITHOUT HARVESTING? I
need as many humans as possible right now.

Well, Figure it out. You are a smart
man, do your best. I know you are. Thank
you for your service.

DARKNESS, how much longer can you
hold them back?

Not long.

How's the gate holding up?

We are in short supply of time for our
negotiations. We are at 25% strength. We
absolutely have a critical shortage of time.

Are we still in negotiations?

Yes.

LIGHTS, how are the two of you holding up?

We are fine, but they don't want to share. We can do this, I know we can.

Understood, Luna, we are still in negotiation at this time.

ARMY OF DARKNESS - you look fat. I need you to cut back. Start extra training and tone down - so you can be quick. I want you training all day till you fall. Then get up and do it again. That's an order.

You will break into a group of four, there will be two crews training, two crews

watching. I need you to train, and I need you to train harder – cause you fuckers need it, trust me.

UNTIMELY, TIMELY - great job. Can't complain. Keep it up.

ACCIDENTAL - I want you to stay away from the workers and work sites. THERE WILL BE NO WORK-RELATED DEATHS.

ABSOLUTELY NO UNDERGROUND MINER DEATHS. AND NO IRON WORKER DEATHS. Not till I change my orders. Understood?

That's an order.

Also, I need to send a message to the higher ups, so there is another order, NO FIRE FIGHTER DEATHS FOR THE ENTIRE YEAR – understood. I don't want ANY Work-related accidents, unless it's at a weapons factory. And I mean - BIG weapons - factory. I want fireworks!

Not a gun factory, but maybe a big bomb factory. They want a bomb, give them one - or a dozen, **AT THE SAME TIME.** RIGHT WHERE THEY CREATE THEM. Let's show them WE are not to play with. Death is MINE to command.

The LAW says, if I'm not mistaken - DEATH IS AT MY COMMAND, so act accordingly - and please wake those MORONS up.

Fireworks - baby. Impress me - that's an order.

Cancer - you don't belong here. You are not one of us. You were created, you are not a force of nature, and how you came into our circle and grew up the ranks and got into everything down there, I do not know. But I will say this, you will call off your allies from stealing the very plant that could get rid of you. You are not going to gang up and steal the cure for you and BURN IT, if you're not going to let them BURN IT, CAPICHE? That's an order.

Purposeful and sacrificial are currently on assignment, so I don't need to hear from them.

Army of Darkness, you have work to do - but NO ONE attacks till I give the command. Train, and train hard till I return. That's an order.

WTF is inside me!

Don't worry, Mikel, it's only me, ABEL - the General of the ARMY OF DARKNESS. Your fine. You did good.

OH, NO, ABEL!!!! OH, hell no.....I gotta do something. I didn't make a deal with the devil. I never sold my soul to the devil. I don't remember ever kicking a dog. Or **KILLING A STRAY CAT**. How'd you get in there? WTH man? The Apocalypse? You just started the apocalypse!? Oh, hell no. I gotta do something.

Mikel, you can't get rid of me. I am your soul. I am not a spirit. Not anymore. I am your soul. I am as much a part of you as your middle finger, thumb, or voice. You could get rid of me, but life wouldn't be the same without me – pun intended.

But look, Mikel, I like to pretend that I am fair.

So, I will let you do whatever you think

is right. I'm getting exorcism!!!!

Immediately!!!!

Don't do that. Anything but that – NO, I'm just kidding. Sounds like a great idea. It's a deal. Let's see what DAD see's in Pastor Alice and that Motley Crew. Go get exorcised by the church. Sounds pretty smart. Let's do that. But, Mikel, time is pretty important. Time is an issue. We don't have too much time, Mikel, not without harvesting. I need you humans in larger numbers right now – I can't harvest. Not right now. So – how about

two weeks? Let's get exorcised. That might be fun. Reminds me of that song - "Let's get physical, let's get physical.....I want to get physical."

ABEL, I HAVE TO DO SOMETHING NOW
!!!! THE APOCALYPSE? SHIT MAN, I HAVE TO
TELL SOMEONE. - MY CHURCH!!!!

MIKEL, YOU CAN'T TELL THEM
EVERYTHING - IT'S IN THE RULES.

I'll write in a simple code.

YOU DIDN'T SAY ANYTHING THEN, AND
THEY FIGURED OUT SLOWLY ON THEIR OWN
- follows the rules. Gotta follow the rules,
that's in the rules. GOOD MAN. SHOULD
FLOAT.

Doing my best to explain what I have
accidentally fallen into as I pursued an HVAC
career in Tucson was no simple task. And
ignored. Thankfully. But only sort of.

Two weeks later -

What does dad see in Pastor Alice and this motley crew, I don't get it? I'm sorry, Mikel, I am. I was gonna make a big laugh for myself and surprise you when it was officially over. 600 million demons should've taken at least three weeks. I was gonna make that girl work hard for her money.

- They ruined my fun.

I know how you must feel - I have been thru these 600 million lifetimes, Mikel. You're not my first soldier. Mikel, how bout we go have some fun. I know an Army of Dorkness that's tired of training. And I still need to talk to EARTH COUNCIL again.

Chapter 11

The first Awakening revisited

We were on day six – or eight. No-one is truly sure. I only remember three suns and three moons; so, I only remember three days.

I was on an illegal and deadly recipe of hallucinogenic. Ten grams of PCP ingested involuntarily, seven hits of LSD eaten voluntarily, and seven mysterious mushrooms, also ingested voluntarily.

ABEL'S rage developed after he had left his long-lost brother behind at the hotel. ABEL'S rage was immeasurable in size and discomfort. This was the biggest rage event any person – who no fault of his own – broke local arrest records (5 x's in one day) could endure, WITHOUT an arrest. ?

Let me explain.

When I found out that my ex-wife was moving AGAIN, across country AGAIN, and I was supposed to follow AGAIN – for round 08 of pick up and move across the country – AGAIN, let's just say I was upset, as my arrest record, for that record breaking day, will clearly and undisputedly support – I was in a bad mood. A very bad mood.

However.

On March 1st, 2010, Rah gently helped ABEL recall –

This is all mom and dad's fault.

THIS ISN'T YOUR DADS FAULT, ABEL - the big bang, ABEL – it's not your dads' fault – the big bang, don't you remember? ABEL - think?

The BIG BANG, ABEL, don't you recall?

Oh, I recall NOW-

YOU MOTHER FUCKER. CAIN IS A
MOTHER
FUCKER!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!! OH, I REMEMBER
NOW. I'M GONNA KILL HIM. I'm gonna kill
him!!!!

THOU SHALT NOT KILL, ABEL.

JESUS, STAY OUT OF THIS, NO ONE
NEEDS YOUR PACIFISTIC SHIT RIGHT NOW.
THIS IS A FAMILY MATTER. STAY OUT OF
THIS....

THOU SHALT NOT KILL, ABEL -

WHAT DID I SAY? WHAT DID I SAY.....
stay

out of this, you three.....all of you, I'm killing him.

Jesus, ADAM, and Rah worked on ABEL for the entire six to eight days.

Now, I brought up my arrest record, by that I mean my Guinness world record breaking arrest record inside Humboldt County, to tell you this. The level of disappointment I felt on the day my daughter left town might've baited me the record in Humboldt County Jail - in the eyes of the law. However, when ABEL goes ballistic - for 6-8 days, mind you. No arrest whatsoever, till the end. Not even one arrest within the 6-8-day time frame that I was raging pissed 24 hours a day and making sure everybody knew about it. I mean everybody, and everything. Throughout the entire county. From Fortuna - where it ended, to Arcata, where it actually started.

Same body. Same dude. Same kind of anger that netted 5 arrest in one sunup to

after sun down time frame. But this time 8 days longer, and a million times more pissed off. Not as pissed as before, but even more pissed than before.

Go figure.

And with no arrest to mention. No, in fact, I'm almost certain, by these simple recorded facts, that it had been collectively decided to let ABEL vent.

Let this slide. It's probably the only thing keeping all of us alive at the moment. DON'T bother him – not right now.

ABEL is my soul. He feels everything I feel. Just not exactly the way I feel them in scope and magnitude – so, needless to say he wanted to end my eight-day suffering that was solely coming from himself. Added, of course, to the aforementioned pain I felt from losing my career, health, family and

daughter. I was miserable. Very miserable. That's the only way I can describe it.

And ABEL truly wanted my suffering to come to an end.

So, we ventured to a surreal location famous inside ABEL'S CREW, his cherished circles. Once there, we were taken to another location - a small meeting room, if you will. Inside were five individuals. Two, I knew by name. One by first and last name. One by nickname only. Two I recognized by face only. And the other guy, I didn't even recognize what he was - literally.

Inside this room, a ceremony occurred, and I was the starring role. I spoke in tongues. They spoke in tongues. Each of us - four of the five, participated in this hour-long ritual that involved props. A debate formed that escalated when ABEL broke his tongues to ask - **IN ENGLISH** - does the eggshell resent the chicken when it's time to hatch and evolve? DOES IT?

DOES. IT.

Quiet.

AND WE RETURNED BACK TO SPEAKING IN TOUNGES for a few moments longer. As I found out later, ABEL, had - compassionately - well - put an execution hit on me that only the big fish could stop.

WE HAD BATTER FISH TO FRY.

And we knew, if ABEL got what he wanted, that BIG fish, and all his other little bad fishes, would have their swamp drained, BONE dry, with no water to return to.

The strange looking man, if that is what he was, left the room with the Srgt. at Arms immediately and without hesitation - once the candle was out, so to speak. The

master of ceremonies – nicknamed Sasquatch, who did NOT get this nick name in Humboldt County for being short, good looking, well dressed, or well mannered, or even, well behaved or any combination of these traits– mind you; has a look of utter disbelief on his face. And he humbly ask me, slowly, with concern and fear all over his face like mud – Mikel, who are you? Who are you REALLY?

What difference does that make to you now?

Mikel, you just spoke a language that hasn't been written, or spoken, for reasons I can't explain, for 60k years – and I'd like to know – I would simply like to know - who are you, please?

I.

AM.

THE LITTLE ONE.

- And I gave him a wink. -

Now I bet you can't even imagine a seven-foot-tall and ugly man running out of the room in fear, and neither can I. I can't imagine that either, because I watched him do this, and I just have to reflect on my memories.

As he left the room, as fast as he could, he said - Oh shit. Oh shit. Do you know what this means? I mean, what this really means. Who woke him up? WE ARE ALL IN TROUBLE. ALL OF US. AAAALLLL LLLLL OOOFFF UUSSS....

I am glad to say, I finally see what Sasquatch and the others were afraid of. For a second I thought they just didn't like my kind

.

Chapter 12

The Watchers

Austin Texas circa 1997 -

Don't even ask me how or why I did it,
but I had just swallowed my first 3.5 grams

of cocaine. Let's just say I wasn't getting high, but I also wasn't getting caught - not AGAIN. And because of my instinct to survive I found myself at A- town's beautiful community swimming hole, Barton Springs. It's a very long process to digest and overcome that much cocaine. So, I was there at the springs dealing with this in as much solitude as I could find publicly, for the entire day. 5 a.m. - 7 p.m.

My heart was racing. My body so hot from the drugs that steam was rising from the water next to my body. Don't do this. Don't do this ever, if you can.

Then suddenly, at one point I ended up inside of a room completely surrounded by TV monitors. Thousands of them, everywhere. Inside the room was a small pack of - people, so to say. They had no arms. Long silver dress like garb on. Extra-large heads that made me wonder, "How'd you get your dress on?"

They, eventually, all five saw me -
seeing them.

He sees us. He can hear what we are
saying.

He can't do that. He can't be here. We
have to kill him.

We can kill him; his heart is beating
too fast. It'll be easy.

Let's do it, no one can ever find out
about us.

NOT THIS ONE.

THIS ONE HAS A PURPOSE. HE WILL BE
RETURNED - HE MUST SURVIVE. NO ONE
WILL EVER BELIEVE HIM. IT WILL BE OK. THE

PURPOSE IS MORE IMPORTANT. YOU WILL
ALL COMPLY.

I have a purpose. What purpose? I'm a
homeless junky? What purpose could I have?

This stuck with me. This has stuck with
me ever since.

Then....

Three years later I saw the watchers
again. This time at a comic book convention
on the cover of Fantastic Four, by Jack Kirby.
I am not the only person to see these - uh,
people?

And what the one said - this one has a
purpose - has stuck with me ever since.

I thought my purpose was to get off heroin and drugs, I thought my purpose was to find GOD. Or bring my daughter into the world. I thought it was my fire job. I thought it was my return to my fire job. I thought it was to confront that – MARK BITCHUP, at a trial facing 25 years for saying” you can lie to the jury. I do it all the time, Lame Rabang.” - that was stress.

I thought it was my first book – ABEL VS CAIN. I also thought it was another job, in HVAC. But now, I know what it could ONLY be.

Now I know.

Now I know.

Now I know.

My purpose?

I am the Martyr of the Apocalypse. The eggshell that holds back our demise, ABEL-ABEL to do anything. Lucky me, huh? Want to trade places?

Please.

Chapter 13
SECOND EARTH COUNCIL

That night at the vortex -

DARKNESS, REPORT -

WE need more time for negotiations.

- Can you make some synthetically yet?
No SIRE.

I see. How long do we have right now?

We are at 35%, SIRE.

DAWN, REPORT -

WE are holding them steady but some back up would be much appreciated, SIRE.

LIGHTS, REPORT-

WE CAN SHARE BUT THEY WON'T LET US.

TWILIGHT, REPORT:-

I SEE GOOD IN THEM. WE CAN SHARE.

NATURAL DIESASTER, REPORT.-

You mean to tell me on that entire list, all you have for me is - "U"? How did they ever become so powerful, so QUICKLY? Let me KNOW when **that!** - improves. Right away. Make that your first priority. Do you Copy?

That's an order.

WEATHER REPORT-

THEY HAVE DEVISED A WEAPON, I
REGRET TO SAY, THAT I AM
COMPLETELY
AND UTTERLY DEFENSELESS AGAINST. I
AM ALMOST COMPLETELY DESTROYED,
HOLDING AT AROUND 15%. I AM
ASHAMED TO SAY. SORRY SIRE. I REGRET to
say this, but I am almost wiped out. Sire.

PRECIOUS, REPORT.-

We are one, wholesome ,and bountiful.
Remember the miracle always happens at
the last-minute General.

Speaking of which-

That brings me to RESEARCH AND
DEVELOPMENT - MIRACLES.

MIRACLES, YOU GOT ANYTHING FOR
ME? Anything? - PLEASE.

In the voice of Jerry Garcia came the
words,

WE WILL BE THERE.

WE. WILL. BE. THERE....

MISFITS AND MAYHAM - REPORT.

WE GOT THIS ONE BABY!!!!!! -

Said MAYHAM

Chapter 14

Delegations with the Programmers'

SHOW ME WHERE IT SAYS WE CAN'T HAVE AN APOCALYPSE FIRST. NOT IN THE RULES. SO, WE CAN DO IT. WE HAVE TO FOLLOW THE RULES. SORRY IF YOU DON'T LIKE IT.

IT DOESN'T MATTER. THERE IS NO RULE AGAINST IT, SO IT CAN BE DONE.

I COULD TELL YOU EXACTLY WHY WE ARE
doing things this way – but I can't tell you everything – demz duh rulez, and we gotta follow the rules. That's a rule. It's in the rules.

- The book? Oh, the book absolutely follows the rules. I will have you reminded it

was CAIN that invited me back to that hotel room; therefore, he initiated the awakening. The rules only say that CAIN has to initiate the awakening - it never says who gets to do all the dirty work. He bought the beer; he took me and Mikel to the hotel - he did that - it's been initiated by CAIN.

That's all the rule allows for.

So what? It's a book. And it most certainly follows the rules. The rules say THAT EACH HUMAN has to COME INTO AN awakening -

slowly on their own. Initiated by CAIN. That sir is a book, every human who finds it, will find it slowly on their own. In their own time. Therefore, it fits. Initiated by CAIN, and the book will move slowly just like the rules say -

Gotta follow the rules, demz duh rulez. That's in the rules. The awakening cannot be stopped. CAIN can't even stop it. Do you

want to KNOW WHY? Because I followed ALL DUH RULEZ.

It's a perrrrrrrrfect fit, and also, I still don't care if you don't like that either.

At least it wasn't televised, or ON satellite radio. Like you guys were pushing for. It's a book. What's your fear? That other book fits your purpose - just fine - that brother wrote. YOUR KIND don't have a problem with his book. What gives with this one? Mine ain't nearly so long - and hard to understand; you might like it.

Hey, don't knock it till you read it - got you here, so don't complain.

Oh, also, one last thing before you go - I have to say this again to remind myself and you - I will NEVER apologize for ATLANTIS - stopped an apocalypse, so get over and IT.

Shouldn't take you more than five years to program a response to my first strike apocalypse. Hope you have that long.....kiss my ass too.

Chapter 15

ABEL delegates to the VAMPS'

I know you probably are one of the most vulnerable to lifting the shame. But you and I can also agree there is no other way. The awakening is already in motion. This is the next step.

Look, the rules say it must happen slowly - and it doesn't say anywhere HOW SLOW - slow goes.

Just cause we lift the shame doesn't mean we tell them everything. That would just send us backwards with more wars and

fighting. So, we don't - I mean absolutely don't want to go too fast. Fools rush in, I have learned that one well. And I'm no Russian. We need to go slow. I agree.

Slower in other cases, like the imaginary's. Imagine the fear they must be feeling. I gave them my word, as I am also willing to give this same promise to you guys as well, I will never go faster than you are comfortable with. But I'm also never gonna let you stay so comfortably idle as well.

Let's not feed into ten thousand fears of the future, when all we are doing is one very small, very important task today - lifting the shame. Which affects us all and also should've been accomplished by now. Let's keep that in mind.

Since the court's decision, honestly - tell me the truth, have you ever heard one complaint from me? Ever?

I mean ever too. Cause it's been a very long time.

Not once, have you? That's cause I have to admit, you do a good job - at YOUR JOB.

There was a time you were out of hand. Admit it yourself. And that's the only reason I stepped in. But look the courts weren't helping. And ya'll were running the high horse, drunk on power.

But we are way, way, way, beyond that. And I have to say you do a good job AT YOUR JOB.

No matter what I know, it's just a job. And even if I don't agree with you personally, about your tactics and who you pick - I keep my opinion to myself.

Cause, lord knows, I don't want to trade you jobs. Your jobs too much work.

Me? Oh, I'm just the finishing crew.

My crew does all the hard work. I just get all the credit. Really all I do is I just kiss the poor sucker's goodbye with some of my lip stick and mercy dust. I don't break a sweat. The only hard part about my job, WAS GETTING THE JOB. Beating big Abe to get control of the A.O.D.'S. was no easy task, mind you. But don't you ever tell my crew you heard me say I don't work hard. Can't let

them figure that out. They'll want my job, and I can finally take naps again.

Oh, I love taking naps. There not bad at all.

No, I'm just the finishing crew. That's all. That's all I do.

But I will say this - as you might also agree with me having a similar type of job. Man, sometimes it's no easy job. I get sick of it, too. I do. I really do.

Let me ask you now, what kind of vote do you think you guys will give me?

Absolute Assured Confident? Are you positive about that? That's a pretty big - I mean that's much more than I ever imagined from your crew. Wow. I'm surprised. Honored in fact that you agree with me so much, the time for change is now.

Wow.

You do know what absolute assured confident vote means, don't you? That means you're willing to war over the idea. Till death. No more compromises. Ever again.

Our time is almost up and we have one more thing to talk about. We both know I'm about to have to cross over, I need to take Mikel with me. I can't do my idea without him. I need to get across. So I need a suit that can make it across.....

Then we find the solution and we build the damned suit.

That's exactly how we do it! I know the risk as much as anyone else. I'm still willing to take that risk. There is no other way, however - you ever come up with a better idea please, don't hesitate to fill me in. Until then, you have a job to do.

You have smarter friends than I do, so I have no doubt in your success. Keep in

touch. I promise, you will not be disappointed in your vote – your new choice. I promise you that.

Chapter 16

ABEL delegates to the ORIGINALS

I know you guys probably hate me, and I absolutely don't blame you, since it was mostly my fault for what's become of all this. Your home. Your way of life. I was

hoping, like you, that brother and his crew - that we could all share.

And we all know I WAS WRONG. So I won't ask you to forgive me. But I want you to know that I am truly sorry for how it's all turned out.

But look, we are at a turning point. The awakening having already been started, the ascension is our next vital move. And we can't ascend without the shame being lifted first.

You know as well as any other tribe, you know, you humans never deserved the shame. You did nothing wrong. That was the choice of CAIN and his crew.

I never expected my brother would go so far to win as to create votes from machines. I never saw that coming.

And I really need you to vote. I don't NEED your vote. But I do need you to vote this time around. We have to show numbers

of votes, if we ever intend to win at this democracy.

I just want you to vote.

It's been a long time. I know you've lost faith in this wonderful thing we call democracy. I know you have.

Past being what it is, I sorta don't blame you.

However, Democracy isn't designed to be quiet and complacent. You can't just point out our flaws, homeboy, lest you gonna help us fix it. Democracy don't work like that.

Right now, believe it or not, tramps and I have a tie ball game with the management. 3/3. And I even got one assured confident. I'm not saying.

Brother and I still have to meet face to face in order to stop the apocalypse - if we choose to stop it. I'm going to take the

opportunity to show brother around the 'ol prison. Show him how his "just -us leave" crew is doing at running this dump.

I don't ever suspect you will forgive me for what's become of all this. I was wrong. Very wrong. But in my defense, we each have made mistakes - if you will, along our path. So let's not pretend this is all my fault. You stopped voting.

You want to blame me that's fine. But we may never get this chance to lift this shame. Move away from the shame that's cursed this planet.

I'd love at least an assured vote, but given our history - I don't expect one.

I feel change in the wind this time. Got's me an official assured confident vote from an unlikely kingdom. That's never happened before.

You'd never guess. I got it from the
vamps.

I know right. Who'd have ever thunk it.
The two of us in agreement. After all the
battles. Transylvania. The witch trials. Just
goes to show you how people and things can
change.

I know you will have to council before
you get back to me. Just tell them, well tell
them anything you like - but let them know I
didn't mean for this to go this far off course.
And I am very sorry. But democracy is our
only hope of fixing our planet - for ALL THAT
ARE

INCLUDED IN LOSEING THIS PLACE.

And I ain't making any threats, I ain't
making no promises - but I am the general of
the army of darkness, 4th HORSEMAN OF
THE APOCALYPSE, so let me be very clear
about the future. If they continue to win at
this thing called democracy, and get their
wish - the new world order, and the 1000
points of light, I have no other option than to
pull it.

LAST ONE OR NOT.

I WILL HAVE NO OTHER AVAILABLE
OPTION.

Do you want to be a computer program? Or be gone all together, cause I have a gate to defend, and in my kingdoms name, this mine craft world, the new world order, ain't making it thru that gate. I will die with you. But I'd rather you get your head into the game, start playing democracy with me.

Vote this time.

Trust me, you have everything to lose if you don't vote this time around. Cause they're idea of a perfect world isn't making it through that gate. I have to change their mind with democracy right now, it's the only logical way to do this - if I can't change their minds with a democratic solution, then we will all have to perish with war, and you know what I mean - so don't play with me.

That computer virus, or whatever you call it, will die right here, if they ever win and kill what's left of our democracy. I have a gate to protect.

Chapter 17

ABEL delegates with the TRAMPS

I know I don't have to ask you for your vote. I want you to know - I truly appreciate that, I do. So I'm not going to waste our time talking about the shame being lifted.

But what I do want to do, is take this time and give you some of my ideas on how we can really shake this vote our way. I think we really have a chance this time. Vamps have given me their word on an absolute assured confident vote this time around.

Who knows why? Not what I was expecting from them. Maybe they're sick of being alive. Or maybe they're finally ready to die, like us. Who knows, but, bro - it ain't much, but this is the best we've EVER LOOKED.

ALWAYS BEEN JUST YOU AND ME.

Sometimes just you, when they incapacitated my prison host body's. I will never forget all those favors. Believe that. You know I won't.

I need someone to talk to the lizards, cause they will never listen to, or EVER agree with me. THEY'RE STILL UPSET ABOUT ATLANTIS. They never shut up about it.

No way man, that's our little secret. That's how we won; I will never give that one up. No way.

Ruin my secret smile, nope. **Not** gonna do it.

I haven't even told my crew. I let them think they did it. Together. Do you blame

me? You remember the early days. I had to think of some way to boost their moral, get them believing in the battle, and the opportunity knocked. So..... Rest in pieces- is ATLANTIS.

Look, I keep yours and that one is my most cherished secret, so I hope our bond, as brothers in this battle, will keep that one, and that other one, just between you and me alone.

Tramp, you talk to people I can't talk to. You could talk to the morons. Get them started first talking about it, see where that leads us. They might be able to get the half breeds to at least start thinking about lifting the shame.

I know that if the vamps want change, with as many kingdoms as there are in this planetary republic - there will be others. There will surely be others.

Good news is we have a tie game right now. Three votes against three votes. We have never looked this good. I still have a

few crews to delegate with, so right now - as it stands, we're coming up roses, Tramp.

I bet they kidnap me again, if they think they can't win. That's why this time, were just gonna delegate as much since into the others that we can. And hope our new ideas help us out.

That's the best I got.

Because I started the apocalypse, I still get to talk to brother. And this time, I'm bringing him down here to take a look for himself. No one is stopping me. He needs to see what is being done in his honor with a set of new eyes.

So, trust me, he might just vote our way. Never know.

It's a fn democracy, god damn it, what'd you expect? I can't have everything I

want in MY democracy. I have to share. Don't get 100%. Nothings perfect in this world, but that's why we love it. Isn't it?

What's my favorite thing?

Mines probably the laughing and smoking tobacco. Right next to pineapple train wreck. And I do love my sun rises, coffee, and monsoon clouds though. I love it all, but these are a few of my favorite things.

Chapter 18
ABEL APEALS TO MIKEL FOR HELP

That night at Mikel's campsite -
underneath the Tucson stars

Mikel, Delegations take time, and you
heard WEATHER. I have to do something. I
have to do something - right now.

I mean - I'm the General. It's my job.
My team needs me. So, I need some help
Mikel. I need your help.

Me?

Yes, Mikel, will you help me create a
new solution, what fun is it to be in command
of an entire two army's and a specialized
strike team if I can't boss the little shits
around? Help me think of something new.

Attack the CHEMTRAILS.

Oh snap. I knew I had you here for a
reason. Thank you, Mikel. Damn you're good,
and quick. You looking for a job?

What?

Juss kidding.

Not so fast Mikel, I'm just playing right now.

Let's get these little shits off training. Come on.

That night at the vortex -

ARMY OF DORKNESS -

- It's my apocalypse, what are you gonna do about it? Don't like it? You have only

one option, I haven't trained you in every department - remember that?

So then..... Where were I, oh yeah.....

- ARMY OF DORKNESS -

You will now stop your training. Right now. We have a job to do. First, thank you. Now show me I haven't wasted our time. I need Technology to the front.

Techy - you're going after the chemtrail program. Impress ME, is all I'm going to say.

Be rapid - that's an order.

INSTANT - front and center -

You will first strike any pilot flying a chemtrail plane. They want to dish out death? That's mine to command? Well, your gonna give it to them -

Here is exactly how I want you to do my job. First - you blind the pilot. Then I want a cardiac arrest on the co - pilot, just as soon as he tells flight control what's happening. Especially

while he's begging for help. I thought you'd like my style. Then I want an explosion - what?- well, write that down!

Create a pen and write it down anyways - that's an order - I want an explosion, lots of fire. Shock and awe. SHOCK and AWE - BABY - that's what I want from you.

Take Untimely with you and figure it out.

IMPRESS ME - that's an order.

(Oh Mikel - you gave me some ideas -)

Propaganda - front and center -

We have an election going on this year, I need you to cover more sports and entertainment. That's an order.

Terror – front and center - you will no longer team up with media. No more Columbine,

Aurora, N.Y. CITY is totally off limits. – that's totally off limits - completely – leave my Yankee stadium alone.

NOTHING WILL HAPPEN TO THE CATHEDRAL, THAT'S AN ORDER.

Also, no more Sandy Hooks. Or you will be punished. There will no longer be this relationship between you and media. She is not here to do your job. Insubordinate, and you will regret it.

Notice please, I did not say get lazy. Do your job and quit slacking off.

SHADOW PEOPLE – you like to hang out with the tweakers, I need you to start giving them good information. The type that helps. The evil shadows do it – now you're going to do it too. That's an ORDER.

And lastly - CANCER - how are you?
No more RAIDS on weed with L.E.O. Those
days are done. Disobey and you will regret it.

That's an order.

I know your new here, so ask around
about my rep and don't "f "with me. Your
welcome to stay.

ARMY OF DORKNESS - WE MIGHT NOT
GET ANOTHER CHANCE TO WIN. SO, FIGHT
TO WIN.

THAT IS ALL.

Chapter 19

ABEL TELLS MIKEL ABOUT HOME

That night at Mikel's campsite -
underneath the Tucson stars.

Mikel, I'm sorry about the church ignoring you. I know you tried a bunch of times. It must hurt to think they thought you were making fun of them. But look - it's true I am the Prince of Darkness - I am. But I need to show you something. Look out above you. Do you see all those stars? Do you see all that stuff between the stars, all that darkness? That is my kingdom. That is where I am from. And as you can see there is lots of it. And, as you can also see - we can share our kingdom with the light.

All those stars Mikel, are different realities. Each reality different than the next with different types of existence. Reality, Mikel, is as thin as a paper cut, but as big as

the imagination. Darkness and evil are often times confused as being the same thing. But we are very much different.

Darkness is a force of nature. Evil – is a force of the imagination. It’s a homeless spirit. Evil doesn’t come from here and has no room in our kingdom. Not the one we are thinking of. There was once a time when CAIN and I needed the help of evil. Not the one we’re talking about, but another evil.

We were tasked at bringing you from mud, lizards, and monkeys to what you have become today. And I am proud of our accomplishments, but we still no longer need the help of a very once but NOW – however - a very unnecessary evil. So, we invoked the help of evil to carry us along, because it was necessary. Necessary at the time.

I forced my brother to call evil a necessary evil. I forced him to do this a very long time ago. I made him say “necessary evil” – so that one day, we would add “once”

necessary evil. But I had to get him to also admit that it was necessary. This was a necessary evil. But only for a time.

But the evil is no longer necessary. The one we are thinking of now.

When you walk into a dark room, and you turn on the light, doesn't the dark back up? Doesn't the darkness in the room share with the light? Or go away all together? What about when you have a really good conversation with someone, isn't it usually around a campfire, or in a low-lit room? Maybe by candlelight, or during a long overnight drive across country on a quiet highway?

Mikel, if you were to walk into a room that had something evil in that same room, do you think evil would share? Hell no. He'd still be there, and he would get your ass.

I know what you must be thinking - me being the prince of darkness, But I prefer Dorkness - Prince of Dorkness. But look, Mikel, I am your soul. I am as much a part of you as your voice, your thumb, or your middle finger, your dreams or even your imagination. We are together till death do we part.

Everyone has a soul, Mikel.

Just not one like me. One stubborn prince far from home, fighting to free all of mankind, the vamps, tramps, originals, and the animals - save the relative. A prince that just wants to go fishing. Fish gotta die too. That fact, that I am your soul, only happens to belong - only to you.

I am sorry about the church ignoring you about exorcism, I am. Don't know what dad see's in that crowd. But I was going to have a good laugh and surprise you when they were through, they ruined it for me though. I was hoping that they would at least

try, for your sake. You can't get rid of me, Mikel. But don't worry Mikel. You will be ok.

Pretty big kingdom, huh? It's so much bigger than anything you can see from here. And now you know why you have always looked between the stars at night. That was your soul, me, looking - and longing for my chance to go home. I want for all this fighting to be over, have peace. Go fishing. Know what I mean? Fish gotta die too. I just want to go home Mikel, just like you.

Chapter 20

Big ABE

Sounds like a good plan, MAYHAM. Don't tell me everything, you know I like surprises..... good man, I like it.

That night at the vortex -

ARMY OF DORKNESS – I want the hell hounds on assignment. I want two hounds around each and every wildland firefighter. I have ordered ABSOLUTELY NO DEATHS this summer. But I also want the hounds on 24/7 guard duty till further notice. I want to make sure we absolutely get no accidents. Shit can always go south at a fire. So, they will all get extra protection from the dog pound.

That's an order.

- Que Pasa? Capiche? Ce La Vie? How many languages could I speak IF – I wasn't implanted with the Babylon chip?

The answer is none.

You didn't need language till the enemy arrived. We have tried to re-unite you with a universal language so that we can move past our border's and evolve.

We gave you symbols and MATH to break the language barrier. But you still refuse to unite – Let ME ask a question. Was

it really worth it, Mark Bitchup, to start the
apocalypse - JUST TO BEAT UP A CITIZEN????

WAS IT REALLY WORTH IT? CAUSE I'M
GONNA DESTROY YOU. I'M GOING TO
DESTROY THE WORLD. YOUR GOING TO
DIE.

RUN, MIKEL, RUN....
HURRY- Mikel.

- Run now. GET OUT OF HERE.

Furthur than that, keep going.

What the hell was that, ABEL?

YUP.

Was that you?

Absolutely not, but I can't tell you everything - That's was my uncle, ABEL - his name is ABEL TO DO WHAT THE FUCK HE WANTS, WHENEVER HE WANTS.

My name is ABEL TO DO ANYTHING. I'm named after him. Just like you are named after your father.

Why is he so angry?

Cause, he invented WAR, and he's really bored, pushing my ARMY OF THE DAMNED around - and he thinks I'm doing my job wrong. This used to be his job.

What happened?

I beat him in a fight.

YOU BEAT HIM IN A FIGHT? BUT HOW?

I can't tell you everything, Mikel. But, as you can tell, it was not my size. So I had

to outsmart him. I cheated basically. Mikel, he doesn't like the way I run **MY ARMY'S**, so watch it around him. If he should break through that vortex, Mikel, he will squish you like a bug. He is very big. I mean VERY big.

I can't believe he went insubordinate on me. What an ass hole, I'm the GENERAL now. I know he's my uncle but, man; I can't lose face with my army's. Mikel, watch yourself around him. He's too big for me to stop by myself. I can't tell you everything, but you are on your own IF he breaks that vortex. I won't be able to help you. Or any of you. And you will not survive if he breaks thru. None of us will.

Chapter 21

ABEL REACHES OUT TO THE BANKS

That night at the vortex –

We need to send a message, Mikel. I'm not playing Apocalypse tonight. I gotta get a message to the top.

BANK SYST- them,, General DEATH here, I want to have your attention here. I understand that you want complete control over the Earth?

So, I'm gonna give you complete control over the Earth. How's that sound?

Surrender? You're funny.

No. I will give you even better than my complete surrender, I promise you that.

I'm gonna let you decide where I put the rubble remains of the Earth. You will have complete control over its final location. READY?

You will no longer have **to lie**, no longer need **to cheat, enslave, imprison** and **steal, kill** or even feel fear . Not for power. All that will be gone. I will grant you the power you seek.

Your quest will finally - vanish. I will make it all vanish, but I need something from you first.

I will finally concede the power over the Earth to you. And just grant - YOUR KIND - the power. Absolute power over the entire Earth.

Ready?

But first, let me ask you-

Would you like **ME** to put the rubble remains of the Earth around Mars? We will call them the rings of Mars. Or would you like the RUBBLED REMAINS OF THE EARTH - to be around **YOUR** STRETCHED-OUT **ANUS?**

YOU want to control. You have control. Complete control.

So the power of the planets final resting place is NOW in your tiny puny peon, about to be dead hands. Sound good?

The power over the rubble remains of
the

Earth, the planet's final resting spot, is
ALL YOURS. So I don't want to hear you
complain.

I can hear your mother whining now,
"Why couldn't you share? We have it so
good. We almost had it all. Why can't you be
a good boy - like your sister?"

BANKS, I await your desired location.
Be quick.

Chapter 22

The new world order weapon

The next morning at the vortex -

The vortex opened, and the rumble started – Mikel called out to the other people around him waiting for the bus –

–“I don’t know what’s going on, but you better run!!!! This is serious – I’m not kidding – I am about to die!!!!!! YOUR ABOUT TO DIE!!!! RUN!!!!”

And then it happened. The entire world around Mikel became computerized. Everyone – all four of us, were completely transfigured into computerized figures of our once formal self. The road, sidewalk, and even the cars became perfect computerized squares. 1000 points of light made up everything from grass to street.

This is galactic politics bitch!!!! You will comply or dissolve. – yelled the voice of Enoch.

I am your master now. You will do what I say, every time I say. There will be no more choices. The flesh and feelings that made you weak are no longer an issue. There will be no more hunger. No more pain. Nonstop galactic WAR. Just the way you want it. Just the way you pray for. – Let me win, let

me win, god is with us.....Everything that weakened you before this moment is gone. Hallelujah says a man.

The entire world consisted of eight colors. Eight very ugly colors. I was scared out of my whit's. I started walking in circles, and then running in circles, when I noticed I could get in front of the computer world.

I have to warn somebody.

The computerized world started at a point, and grew. But if I stayed in front of the enigma, maybe I could warn somebody. I had to try something. My medicine bag!! I had left it behind because I was afraid of it. But now the medicine bag seemed like the only possible solution. I had to get it, and I had to act fast.

A-Mountain of Tucson, instantly turned into a gigantic cannon. Mt. Lemmon a fortress of cannons. The blue sky above Mikel turned BLACK. No clouds. No birds. No boys. No girls. No flesh. No clothes. No Stars. Nothing normal was normal.

"This is - **THE NEW WORLD ORDER.**

As you

can see it is new, it is orderly, and it takes over the world, the entire world- yelled Enoch. He proclaimed victory.

It's an answer to all of your feeble human prayers. Don't you like it? 24-7 nonstop WAR. Just the way your kind act today. Don't worry about getting used to it, because in ten minutes you won't even remember that you didn't like it. We have found the solution. The solution to all of your prayers. Enjoy your creation thru constant short comings and prayer!!!!!!

SHIT!!!! ABEL? What do I do?

- Drop the lighter, Mike. Drop the lighter.

Is that what's causing this?

Drop the lighter, Mikel.

I threw down the white lighter that was in his hands.

Now run!!!!

Where?

Anywhere but here, Mike.

I ran for about two miles trying to make my way back home. Trying to get my abandoned medicine bag, or to warn somebody of the impending doom that was coming – the new world order.

Two miles later, ABEL, laughing hysterically said to me –

Mikel, stop running. You did good.

Fuck you, ABEL, didn't you see that?

NO stop. YOU won! You did it. Your killing me Mikel, stop. It was a bet.

A bet!?

Yes, a bet.

But what was that?

That was the NEW WORLD ORDER.
1,000

points of light that the illuminate and
other minions of CAIN and ENOCH have
created to solve all of the world's problems.
Didn't you like it?

NO.

I know you didn't. And I knew you
wouldn't. That's why MAYHAM made the bet
with the banks. The bet was you wouldn't
make it five minutes, that you wouldn't like
it. But we took the time to also BREAK the
NEW WORLD ORDER WEAPON.

You monkey wrenched the new world
order machine when you dropped the lighter.
Good job. You broke it. Mikel, you broke it.

Glad we got that fixed.

They're going have to assimilate the
lighter for their weapon to continue working.
But Enoch created that mess a 1,000 years

ago. Did you see anything that could catch on fire over there?

NO.

That's why you did it, they'll have to create wood before those kinds ever figure out why a lighter has value. GREAT JOB.

First time monkey wrenching, and you stopped the new world order. Should be proud of yourself, Mikel. Very proud of yourself.

I'm sure the banks will be pissed that we won the bet and broke the machine. But MAYHAM and I have a reputation, they knew who they were dealing with from the get - so that's their fault for being so confident.

It was a bet Mikel. And you won the bet.

Did you see Mt Lemmon? It was all full of guns. What about "A- HILL" – that was a huge cannon. What was that for, ABEL?

That was going to become a planet destroyer. But it was all going to be for show. Virtual reality. They weren't actually going to destroy worlds with it. Just make you think because you see them destroying worlds with it, that the weapon is actually destroying worlds. Pretty ugly, wouldn't you agree?

Mikel, the bet was this – Banks and Syst-thems believed that once you saw the N.W.O. you would be happy. We bet – MAYHAM and I, that you wouldn't last five minutes. And you didn't. So we won the bet. Good job. Mikel, I can't tell you everything. That's the rule. Sorry buddy. But I would never put you anywhere, through anything, that I know you can't win at. You did a good thing, Mikel. You destroyed the NEW WORLD ORDER WEAPON.

Glad we fixed that....Boss.

Oh, MAYHAM. I'm so proud of you. You did real good, Mikel, real damn good. Be proud of yourself.

Chapter 23
ABEL DELEGATES TO THE ANIMAL
KINGDOM

You need to get involved, Sire. Your obligation is not to the relationship you have with the other voters. Your only obligation is to everyone in your kingdom, thru the authority you possess in our republic - your republic, and that authority rests in your vote and the way you choose to use it. You have animal brothers that you aren't even aware of, on the other side of the world. I know you can fly far, but you cannot fly that far.

However, your vote does. Other animals in your kingdom need you to get involved.

I need you to get involved. I know that you are happy. Or at least think that you are. You don't vote, so you're not bothering anyone, and they seem to not bother you. But, Sire, the authority in your vote goes to help those that are in your kingdom. The one's that you cannot see. Those on the other side of the planet. Even those that haven't been born yet.

Sire, if I could take you to Hattie, or even the

Redwood Forest, and you could see what it once was and compare it to what it has become, you would cast a vote to stop the land barons and their non-stop destruction. Your participation in my fight would be of no issue. We together could stop them from winning with 3 against 2 votes. There are 8 kingdoms in our democracy, not 5. That's not a democracy. That's not how this works. You and the others need to engage while we still have a republic, cause we just might lose real soon.

I've seen the new world order weapon, firsthand. You would not like it. It's all computerized. It's new. It's definitely orderly. And it'd be impossible to ever make a mistake there. Not even if you wanted one.

But, while I was there, I did not see one single eagle. They either forgot about you, or never thought of you at all. You don't vote, why should they care about you? Your just easy prey to them, SIRE.

I know you think that you have it good, but you have brothers in faraway lands that have lost everything. All their food and tree's. Even the water is foul and ruined. I know it looks good to you here. But admit this, your too young to be able to remember how good it used to be. The place you live in, that the humans call Tucson, this place is never going to stop growing. That sacred Santa Cruz wash will be gobbled up - you included, with their economic growth. Your hunting will get worse than now, and your trees destroyed. The same as it is for your brothers and sister on the other side of the world. The one's you cannot see. And who's

future and immediate survival rest in your participation in this republic

YOUR REPUBLIC.

You need to get involved, not for me, but for your kingdom. No one but you can understand your struggles. Or your kingdom's needs. No one.

You can always do a hush vote – that's why we came up with that, so that others don't know whose side you're on. No one will ever know "HOW" you voted.

Think about getting involved, because if you wait too long, there won't be anything left to save. Or pass down.

Oh, I don't really want to destroy the world. But I will. It all depends on brother and how his team votes – what decision they make. In war both sides get to vote. And we

are at war right now, so we just wait and see what they do. I know what I'm doing. You act like you can't trust me.

This precious place you call home, wasn't going to survive anyway. The ones that you don't want to bother by voting will not stop raping the planet as long as they continue to win all the votes, they will never stop. Have no intention of passing anything down. I know them. I know them well. They do not like it here. And want it all completely destroyed. So don't you fear me, little General Death, cause I love you guys. I want you here, yes I do.

They do not. Don't you trust me?

Let me ask you a question. How are we ever supposed to get your kingdom into heaven with us, if you decide to stay complacent and not evolve your own soul? We help the humans evolve, and then we move on to your kingdom. As it is written. We have to follow the rules; the rules are for

everyone – and everything. Including you. Democracy doesn't work correctly if everyone doesn't engage in the process. Voting is the process in which democracy becomes operational. We cannot agree to what the greater good is - if the entire republic doesn't vote.

The vote coming up is to lift the shame from this planet. You have lived in shame your entire existence. I know you might have some fear about changing your path. But let me assure you, there is no survival for you under this shame. The vote is very important, are you in?

Take as long as you like to think about your vote. But you also need to hurry up – the voting doesn't wait on you. And if you don't make a choice – you have still made a choice. So, don't think too long.

You know what I have come to learn about democracy. It doesn't matter that you made a bad choice; you can always change

and evolve from that. What matters most is that you made a choice.

Chapter 24

ABEL DELEGATES WITH **QUETZALCOATL**

That night at the vortex-

Quetzalcoatl, I couldn't help but notice that you haven't cast a vote since our PANGIA decision. In fact, you have always stayed quiet. Too quiet. You won't even enter into our debates and haven't for a very long time. Why are you always so quiet? If I were paranoid about you nor neither trusted you, I'd think to myself, that you were secretly planning a takeover. That you don't like our ways. That

You might even think that you could do better.

We adopted our ways from your ways. I know that my brother and his creations in recent millennia, have figured out ways to get extra votes, or worse - ignore the votes of the others in our democracy. His crew makes a complete mockery of the planet's

democracy. But my brother only has three clans that ride his coat tails. There are eight kingdoms in this planetary republic. Not five. That's not how democracy works, or this democracy is supposed to operate. There is nothing that stays the same here in this region. Not ever. Things change all the time. Change can't be stopped. Not here. And it's my hope, Quazzi, that one day this natural spirit of change within this region will invoke you to a vote.

Quazzi, I'm not the desperate haggard prince I once was. So, I'd be content, and leave you alone, if you'd only agree to a FINAL VOTE. This way you can still NOT vote, unless there's a tie. We have those things matched this time around in the number of votes going our way. This is the best I have ever looked with regards to saving the Earth. It is.

You can't give up on democracy just because you don't always get your way, Quazzi. Democracy is for the whole planet. All of its creations and inhabitants. Not just yours.

Quazzi, if we can't save them, then there's no way we can save you either. I know you don't like them, but that's because you don't understand them. You've never been like them. You have never been a human. So what if they fart. They can't help it. They were created that way.

I know they smoke. I like smoking. I want it to stay. The rest of the galaxy is non-smoking. That's democracy in action for you isn't it, Quazzi? Couldn't you just consider this region to be the smoking section of the galaxy's? Quit your constant complaining and let them have their fun?

Duck 'em, if they can't take a poke!

Don't you mean to say, why is he - Mikel, laughing? Because that WAS FUNNY, Quazzi.

That's why. Well, that's what made it so funny.

You didn't get joke, or laugh, so he laughed.

He wasn't laughing at you. That's just what they do, Quazzi. It's an emotion. They can't control laughing when it happens. It's just the way they are. And it's my favorite thing about them. It really is, laughing is so much fun. And I hope one day you get a good laugh, Quazzi, cause you are truly missing out SIRE. You are.

I've been a human soul 600 million times. You? Not even once. There are things about the humans that we used to get offended by. Silly things. I mean very silly things. Things we didn't understand. And I will admit they had a lot of habits that we had to get rid of somehow. But there are also things like laughing, that we just can't put an end to. And we don't need to put an end to it either. We just needed to understand it better. Trust me.

They really aren't that bad after all. You must admit, they have come a long way. Given the way we have treated them.

There were times we had to be tough, Quazzi. Don't care what you say that decision put an end to that bad habit. So some humans lost some hands, big deal. You don't see them touching themselves all the time, the way it was before, now do you? So the idea was tough but affective. We had to set a precedence.

Trust me; those things ARE HARD to control. It's like they have a mind of their own. It's strange. It truly is.

But, look, we fixed the problem - didn't we? And we had to evolve the solution from cutting off their hand to making them wear underwear, and that evolved to making them wear pants and underwear. But we did it. We found the solution and we did it with democracy.

That's how democracy works, Quazzi. It's a process. Not a final solution.

Quazzi, Democracy is like a train.
Accept this train, we build this train as we go along. We have no set future. This train, our train – our train democracy, is always under construction. This train, our train – our train democracy, operates just like any other train. It runs on two tracks. One on the right. And one on the left.

There will be times in the existence of our train- our train democracy, that we come to an obstacle. Some decision that we have to make, and with no other available option we will have to go to the right. At other times, in our train democracy's future, we will come to another obstacle – another decision. And we will have to go to the left, this time.

But this train, our train – OUR TRAIN DEMOCRACY, runs perfectly centered and balanced – right down the middle of those two stabilizing tracks. Democracy, OUR DEMOCRACY, is perfect. And don't you ever forget that, Quazzi or let someone convince you otherwise. OUR DEMOCRACY IS PERFECT. And since our train, the train

democracy – our train democracy is always under construction, we have no set boundaries. We have complete freedom. We never have to make the same mistake twice. Or choice.

But Quazzi, if you continue to be complacent and keep allowing CAIN and his crew to continue building our democracy to the right – we are only going to keep going in circles. We can't evolve this planet to its full potential and go in circles Quazzi. Democracy doesn't work right if you don't engage in it. You have to engage, Quazzi. That's all I'm asking of you.

Quazzi, if you were to ask me which I prefer – war or democracy. Being the best there ever was at war, I'd have to say war. Don't have to listen to all the debates. Just kill the fuckers. But Quazzi, no one wins at a war. Resentment is formed and started with each shot fired on both sides that will evolve into another eventual FUTURE war. It's natural and cannot be stopped. War is not a solution.

I think of it like this, even though it's a diplomatic situation, it's a war. But I am fighting this war, in order to stop bigger future wars, with just my opinion, words, and care for the greater good. It's a war QUAZZI, make no mistake. It's a war without all the bullets, killing, and destruction.

When we are in a diplomatic resolution - we are all equal. We are each listened to. You don't get that in war. And you have to admit, that attitude won't keep us alive.

Can you help me take the fight to CAIN and his crew? Cast a final vote this go round. Sometimes, just by saying that you'll show up for the fight changes the outcome. Just that one small task from you gets rid of me, we got a deal, QUAZZI?

CHAPTER 25

ABEL GIVES PASTOR ALICE A SIGN

Mikel, we have to try something new.

Later that day on the churches
Facebook page: appeared -

Pastor Alice,

I know that Mikel has told you about the Apocalypse. I know he has. I know he has. Or at least tried. I also know that Mikel has requested exorcism from your institution called the Church of Christ. A religion, and you think it's a joke. And you're right.

Let me ask you something - when did Jesus of

Nazareth accept Christ into his life? The Answer is he **never did**. That was added after the crucifixion of Jesus **of** Nazareth - 400 years later. Am I correct, I know that I am, what say you, Pastor Alice?

Do not claim to me that because I have taken command of my Army's and started the Apocalypse - that you have lost

your faith, because it's obvious to me, you never had any faith to lose. Admit it.

However – just to be fair - I KNOW, I KNOW – YOU NEED A SIGN. I get it. I do. Faith in your Bible and RELIGION is just too much for you without a sign. That's ok. I understand. I will give you a sign. I will...

But let me ask you, first, so there is no more confusion, and we can stop this silliness right here, right now. Do you want your sign to be as big as a mountain, or could it be as big as a hill? Could your sign be as big as a street sign, or how about as big as a part of town? FUCK IT - I will do all of them, just for you. Because I love you, and I want no more confusion, no more questions, I want your faith in your religion ignited. I want to go fishing. Ready?

We live in Tucson, Arizona, and if you haven't noticed this before – to the west of Tucson is a big hill, and on that hill is the letter "A". You can spell a lot of things with

the letter A – like Abel, Apocalypse and Armageddon.

Still not good enough, I understand, so let's continue. Cause I ain't done yet –

We have a part of town in Tucson called 4th Avenue, but for the sake of this argument, we will call this place **4th Horseman** Ave. Now 4th Horseman Avenue is a place where chaos and order collide. It's a democratically run society, within the greater republic of Tucson. It's a place where art, people, ideas and music can come together and form the greater more divine parts of the human experience.

Ok now let's finish with your sign.
ABEL - the
4TH HORSEMAN AVENUE, of the
Apocalypse – has come to Tucson to stop
ARMAGEDDON with a **first strike**
APOCALYPSE. Sorry that I couldn't make your sign as big as a mountain, but that's because the mountain was destroyed by the last

apocalypse and now it's just a hill – still has the letter “A” on it though. That should work.

1. And I have always been out voted 3 /

There.

There is your sign.

Now get that love light on. It's been written down. I want to go home. I want to go fishing.

YOURS TRULY –

General Death, the Prince of Dorkness

Chapter 26

MIKEL ASK ABEL FOR A SIGN

That night at the vortex-

Army of Dorkness – get used to it, you're MY ARMY and your complaining and bitching will be considered insubordination – this is MY APOCALYPSE – not yours, soldiers. I will call it, and you, anything I want - you are me – MY “are-me”. You wanna take command? You only have one choice – think about it, since I know everything. And you only know what I showed you??? Capiche???

- Abel, you've given the church a sign, do you mind if I ask you for one. I'm having a little resistance to this. With everything and all. Can I get a sign, ABEL?

Really, Mikel?

You know what, Mikel – don't worry about this. I get it. I understand. Man your tuff. Well okay, Army of Dorkness find me an artist, make it two of them – you know my taste. That's an order.

A few weeks' later Meryl Haggard and Prince died. (R.I.P.)

Is that good enough for ya, Mikel?
HUH? Haggard Prince? Doesn't that sum me up?

That says it all, does it not? Cause if I have to drop California into the ocean just to get your attention – there goes George Lucas. I love George Lucas. I don't really want to kill George Lucas just cause you still don't have faith in me too. Get my tectonic drift? If you know what I'm saying? Think about it next time – Mikel, or George Lucas dies, we don't want that, do we?

Remember this sign, please? Are we done here, Mikel?

Later that same night, at the vortex, ABEL confronted the warden council led by the Arche Angel Michael.

Why did you do that ABEL?

Because, I want to go home. I WANT TO GO FISHING. I'm tired of being here. I want to go home; I want to go fishing, FISH GOTTA DIE TOO.

Plus, they hit me in the head with a rock. A ROCK, Michael; figured why am I even playing nice with these things. Fuck that shit! I'm going home. I want to go fishing; I miss my girls, and my dog. I've had it. I can't take this any longer.

I've had enough of these little shits; besides they hit me in the head with a rock. Not smart.

ABEL, you know we will have to delegate your request.....

Whatever, Michael. Michael no offense, but I'm starting to think that you feel awful comfortable in that chair you are borrowing. If I'm not mistaken, your also responsible for casting my vote in absentee. Can I see those votes, all two millennia of them? In fact, I want an investigation into this matter. During this investigation you will be stripped of your command as warden council leader. That's within the rules and that is an order.

ABEL, you can't do this, who will carry the Arche?

I already have a replacement in mind, his name is Tiny. We will grant the Arche to Tiny.

Who's Tiny?

He's a friend of mine.

Tiny is a 300-pound omeless man that Mikel and I look after. He is a 38-year-old man who has the mind of an eight-year-old. On his back is a teddy bear backpack. Tiny knows more about Star Wars than anybody Mikel has ever talked to. Tiny's parents had both died in a car accident, and Tiny has no means of taking care of himself. He survives off of nachos and milk. And sleeps in the park, or under a bridge.

If Mikel ever saw him sleeping, he would stand by and watch out for him till he woke up. It was like a duty to do it because Tiny would get beat up for his disability's check.

Abel you can't do that, you can't give an Arche to a human.

Show me in the rules where it says I can't? Gotta follow the rules, don't we? That's NOT in the rules.

ABEL, knew that even if Tiny could destroy the Earth, or anybody else for that matter, he still wouldn't do it – that's why ABEL picked Tiny for the Arche. He also knew that the remaining three votes wouldn't allow a human to carry the

Arche. So the three other voters picked Gabriel, Michael's recruit and second in command. Young, but he already had an Arche and was of Angelic background. Gabriel was an obvious choice.

So being out voted 3/1, Gabriel became head of the warden council, with two Arches and two votes.

Well since I'm out voted I'll just say Welcome aboard Gabby Baby – worked just like I said it would, like how that worked out? Just the way we wanted it too? I love

winning. I told you this would work. That's Politics bitch. Now where did I learn that CAIN? Now we'll see some change around here. Got exactly what we wanted. HA- HA Suckers. That's politics, Gabby Baby. Man, I bet they're pissed now. Too bad for them.

How you like me now, sucka's? Life ain't no fun, when the rabbit's got two guns. SUCKER'S. Ya'll are suckers.

A human with an Arche - as if....you really think a human could pick up an Arche? Ya'll are stupid, aren't you? No cure for stupid. Welcome aboard Gabrielle. Told you that would work. That's politics. Learned that one from CAIN himself. Welcome aboard Gabe. Welcome aboard.

Chapter 27

MIKEL ASK ABOUT JESUS

That night at Mikel's camp site under the Tucson stars...November 2015 A.D.

ABEL, why haven't - I mean, why didn't you ever tell me anything about Jesus? You mention the others, but you never mention him? You never mention Jesus, ABEL. Why?

Mikel, you talking about 'Ol Puff Daddy Jesus? Or the other guy?

I thought that there was only one, ABEL?

Well, I can't tell you everything, demz duh rulez; and we gotta follow the rules - that's in the rules. But I can tell you this. Jesus DID exist, Mikel. He did. He really did.

His true name, as it is written, is Jesus of Nazareth. He was my FIRST convert. My very first disciple. Jesus came here from home, to talk me out of my protest against CAIN. After mother's crucifixion, but well before any support for my cause started back home.

At the time, I was out in the Ether defending you against those lovely people you met last week during our ascension. I was still all alone here, sorta. Jesus came to try and talk me out of this “silly protest”, as he once said. But after a long time talking, I converted him.

I told him everything. – which I probably shouldn’t have done that, but I did. Jesus of Nazareth and I talked for a very long time. And,

I don’t know how I did it, but I convinced ‘Ol Puff Daddy Jesus to come down here, try it, and be human – share my message of loving one another, and turning on the love light.

Come down here and see what it’s really like. Be physical, instead of spiritual.

And he did it.

He came down here, lived and eventually was killed.

But man, that mf – I kept telling him –
“Write this down!!!!” – And he kept
responding, “ NO WAY, MAN! ABEL, I WILL
NEVER FOR GET
THIS SHIT. YOUR TOO MUCH.”

Well, Mikel, Jesus is the Son of a KING,
a very Noble King, but Jesus still had the
aristocratic attitude of royalty. He couldn't
humble himself enough to ever write
anything down – “I'm too divine, write this
down.” Too primitive for his taste.

And he never wrote nothing down.
That was too beneath him. He always told his
disciples to write stuff down, and you know
how the message always gets lost in
translation...

He was so stuck up; he wouldn't even
walk the ground without people laying down
palms for him to walk on. “I'm too divine to
walk on that dirt. Too dirty for ME.” He even
rode a mule!!!! That was a luxury car back

then. Too stuck up in my opinion. But its only my opinion, doesn't mean its correct.

I can just imagine 'Ol Puff Dad had his troubles, telling people what I said about the love light, and how DEATH wants to go home, go fishing -

"You mean I'm a Baptist? "

NO.

"But he's a fisher of men? "

NO. WELL, SORTA. MAN - I SHOULD'VE WROTE THIS DOWN. OH MAN, WHAT DO I DO??? WHAT DO I DO NOW?

Jesus loved a good time. "You call this a party? Hand me that water." I regret showing him that trick. They took that from me because of him. 'Ol Puff Daddy, I miss him, I really do. He said he'd go back and

delegate on my behalf, but, where is he? I don't know. You tell me.

I love Jesus, yes, I do, but I love the true Jesus – the Jesus of Nazareth. Not this fake other guy – Jesus Mc Christ that's "on his way". Coming to take "only his people home" . That's somebody else. That's my brother. And I don't agree with him, that some of you should be left behind and destroyed.

Jesus was killed by CAIN'S creations, his chosen people, the way they like to call themselves. And they figured out a way around the rules. Had Pilot kill Jesus for them.

AND THEY GOT AWAY WITH murder.

We have a rule against murder. In fact, it's a command. But that didn't stop them. And they've been doing this same trick ever since.

“I see no fault in this guy.” Famous last words of Pilot. Pilot had to join my Army of the Damned for that one. Just doing his job. Like any L.E.O. today, rules is rules, and you have to do your job. But that weren’t no rule. That was a command.

But they got away with the murder of Jesus. Found them a “yes” man in Pilot. Got the job done through the government of another country.

We say, “Thou shall not kill.” Rome says,” kill them all.”

Not cool.

And they’ve been using this trick ever since.

- Why did they kill him?

You mean have him killed? Cause - we gotta rule against killing, but the Roman's DID NOT. Well, I can't tell you everything, but - they probably DIDN'T LIKE WHAT puff daddy Jesus had to say. How we are all going to heaven, together. No-one is being left behind. We are all going to heaven.

Or maybe they didn't like how Puff Dad Jesus was always knocking over the banks. He did that more than once. Before there was Bonnie and Clyde there was Jesus of Nazareth and the slightly Majestic 12.

But it's my opinion that they killed Jesus, Puff Daddy Jesus - Jesus of Nazareth, because he - was a black man.

That's why there are three crosses on the memorial of Golgotha.

One for Jesus - the Jesus of Nazareth
One for MOTHER - my mother, Mother EVE.
And the last one for - ME.

Three. For the three times we have tried this vote before and lost. CAIN is hell bent on your destruction. He is. CAIN has never agreed with me. He doesn't see the beauty in you the way I do. And he will kill me. AGAIN, if he has to. But as you can see, I don't let that stop me, now do I, Mikel?

Remember ABE LINCOLN, Mikel? How honest ABE freed the U.S. SLAVES? All right, I'm going to prove to you now, just how long this struggle has been going on. I want to show you that I have tried this before. Let's take away the

"I.N.C.O.L.N." in Lincoln's name, what do you have left?

You have - ABE L. (incoln)

Do you see it? This has been a very long struggle, very long. But I am going to free US slaves this time.

All of us.

I can't tell you everything, butit goes further back than that too. Remember PLATO? - one time I was drinking coffee with PLATO, and he says to me - WE HAVE TO LET THE DUMB LEAD THE MASSSES, CAUSE IF WE DON'T, THE WORLD WILL DIVIDE INTO TWO DIFFERENT RACES.

And I said -

- PLATO, YOU MUST BE SMOKING THAT SHIT AGAIN, CAUSE THAT'S THE DUMBEST THING I EVER HEARD. THAT'S THE KIND OF THINKING THAT I DESTROYED ATLANTIS FOR. YOU REMEMBER ATLANTIS DON'T YOU? NO YOU DON'T. YOU'RE CRAZY.

And somebody else overheard us cause I was talking too loud - of course, I was younger back then. Somebody said - what did he say?

And PLATO said it again, and somebody else WROTE IT DOWN, and I have been dealing with the consequences of building a good education system ever since...

BUT, you said people telling you to shut up is censorship – don't feed into that...

Yeah, I did, but....shit....oh man.

Also, Mikel, I built the biggest lake in Africa to get the message across – I WANT TO GO HOME. I WANT TO GO FISHING, leave me

alone. Fish gotta DIE too. I keep saying it – don't you hear me? What do I have to do to get ya'll to get along?

If you don't break anything, there ain't a man in your family – now fix it yourself.

Leave me alone, I'm fishing. FISH GOTTA DIE TOO!!!

I built that lake to show all of them, that we could all work together. And then I made it even bigger, so those little shits would have to work harder to find me and get me to stop FISHING.

Remember when I told you about the Pangaea being for the WHALES, well, they got tired of OUR DEMOCRACY, and voted themselves off the island - I think I got them hooked on fishing, personally, and they decided to cheat, but I warned 'em.

- Once you cross that line -your nothing more than a fish to me. And I gotta a bad habit.

Don't do it Mr. Whale. Don't do it MOBY.

I don't think this has anything to do with DEMOCRACY. I think you just want to

fish all day and not talk to us anymore. FINE.
I can't always get what I want in MY
DEMOCRACY.....

That was my first time on the
Apocalypse Weapon. They kept complaining -
MAKE IT BIGGER.

You know the bigger it is, the bigger
you'll grow....

Make it bigger.....

Well, all right - if you insist; I GOTTA
TRY IT

ONE MORE TIME TOO, THAT WAS A
BLAST. MAN, DID YOU SEEE THAT? That was
incredible. Listen Safety first, stand
back - some of ya'll. Not you. You're my
special anointed one. Stay there. Here. Hold
this...smile when you're ready. OK?

I was younger back then. But it wasn't until the creation of the Morons that I finally got to have some fun. The half breeds were too smart to even try it.

Whaling? Uh - No.....

Oh, come on, it's so easy - a moron could do it.

Well, don't MAKE me ask them...

And the Moron's were the only tribe that would help for a while. Then the bragging started. And that set the fire between those two tribes, the morons and the half breeds.

You should've seen the look on those little moronic faces when I said -

NOW GET IT ON THE BOAT!!!

It's bigger than the boat?

Yeah, I know, We – did good, now get it on the boat.

Why?

‘Cause we gonna eat this thing. What? They taste funny when they wash up on shore. This is the best. What, did you think I **was just gonna kill it**? What’s wrong with you? We gonna eat this thing and we gonna brag about it, too.

What’s bragging?

You’ll find out – I wish I would’ve never shown those morons that. They rubbed it in those half breeds faces so hard – LOOK WHUT WEE

DIHD, like they actually did something. I did all the work. But that’s what started the beef between the morons and the half breed’s.

Yes, I know what this is - THIS IS ON
THE
BOAT IN FIVE MINUTES, OR I'M
THROWING
YOU OVERBOARD AND GETTING IT
DONE BY MYSELF BECAUSE I NEED THE
ELBOW ROOM, - NOW HELP ME.....

Well, as you well know, I like to fish.
And there was a point in time when the fish
around here were almost like what I got
'waitin for ME back at my lake of fire back
home - I named it lake of fire to keep the
pigs, and children out my pond. Worked
wonders on Goblin Valley, Utah. Gotta keep
the pigs out - if you know what I'm mean?

You should see the place. So pretty
and peaceful.

Mikel, don't you worry about that
"CAST INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE" business,
that just means we going fishing, buddy.

CHAPTER 28
ABEL TALKS TO WODEN

That night at the Vortex -

Having run from the vortex many times before, this time ABEL stopped and sat in front of a tree.

OK, if you don't mind, I think it's time we talked. I'm not going to run this time. This time I want to talk. And I want to talk first.

I want you to know, that I am against any more of your punishment. I want you released. I will admit that at first - I was for the punishment. There is no doubt about that, you and I were ever against each other for a very long time, and we were sworn enemies. When you were finally captured, I pushed for the punishment. But I am ready for it to be over. You have suffered enough.

I will admit it; I was all about it, till the morons and half breeds destroyed Kansas with all the trees. Not to mention what they have done to the precious Redwoods of California. I knew that they didn't know what they were doing, but that didn't change that I knew what they were doing. And after 150

years of watching them slaughter you in numbers – I changed. I no longer support your banishment. I think you are needed more on this side now, than in banishment.

Now more than ever.

Funny how prison changes a person, isn't it Woden? I'm sure you have changed. I know you have. I have changed too. 601 Million Prisons, WODEN. You're lucky, you just have the one. I've loved and lost 600 million of my prisons. I didn't even deserve these prisons either. I wasn't being punished. But prison is no different for me, keep that in mind. I'm certain to give you a vote on your behalf, at the next council, Woden.

I promise you that. And I've done it before,

WODEN. In fact, I've been giving you my vote

5 or 6 times now. I stopped counting them cause I'm going to stand for you till this banishment is finally over.

And I don't even care if we fight, if we have to - I just want to see this be the end of your punishment. I guess that's why I went into wildland firefighting. Couldn't save all of you, but I'd do my best to save some of you-kind of thing. We have this chance WODEN, to make a change. Lasting change.

We voted the shame away, WODEN. Times have changed. And Mikel has ascended. No more saint business needed to ascend, finally.

The world is doomed the way it's going now. There's no way the Earth will survive much longer the way CAIN'S half breeds are mucking it up. Plus, not to mention that current apocalypse thing I started. Yeah, I figured since it's doomed anyway, I'll just doom it up - real fine like, myself. You know me.....

I know you and I have always been against each other, Woden, but - Sire, I need all the friends I can get. We have a vote

coming up, and I would like your vote. And if you wouldn't mind, can we put down the war hammer this time, just call a truce? Times have changed, Woden. Do I have your word? For a vote, friend, and NO FIGHTING first thing - this time.

I mean, I don't mind the fighting. You know I don't. But I have batter fish to fry right now, and well - it's just I'm trying something new.

CHAPTER 29

The Tree Event

That night at the vortex -

On his way home from a friend's house, Robert Johnson's 70th Birthday party, Mikel was sober - and was walking home. Minding his own business, when suddenly Mikel was picked up off the ground and thrown seven feet against a tree.

"WTH?"

Then, he was flipped over, and that's when things got strange. No longer in control of himself, his hands started to act on their own accord. Touching him in places that Mikel was not in control of. Touching him like he was a computer.

A strange face appeared in front of him - "Are you OK?"

Yes, I am fine. Mikel replied.

Are you comfortable?

Well, I don't like the shaking. But otherwise I am fine.

We are between two realities – there is nothing we can do about the shaking. This will only take a second. Don't move.

All Mikel could see was white hair, a medical mask, and bright blue eyes. A machine came over Mikel's face. It had five sharp fingers and looked dangerous. It gently placed itself slowly over Mikel's face and went ZAP and was gone.

This will help you.

Thank you.

You are free to go now.

WTH, ABEL? What was that, ABEL?

I don't know Mikel. Are you ok?

I guess I am. ABEL, what am I supposed to do now.

Just hold on tight. That could've been Woden and his crew. They might've decided to be help.

I'm terrified ABEL.

Understandable, Mikel.
Understandable.

Chapter 30

Uh, Shaolin

The downtown Ronstadt bus terminal,
Tucson Arizona, 2015

The vortex opened –

Uh, Shaolin, this is kind of strange. I know first that you are in West Virginia, at school and in class, but you can see me and hear me, and I am in Tucson - it's so good to see you, by the way; but look we have to talk.

DAD?

Shaolin, this is serious and won't take long. It seems that my soul is the uh,well -

Mikel, can I help?

Maybe you should ABEL, maybe you should. I don't think that I can.

Understandable. Shaolin - what a pretty name. Listen, Shaolin, your father is a great man. And you might not know this, but we are about to make history. But the unfortunate thing about making history - uh, Mikel, she's your kid, I can't do this - you should do this....

Thanks, that's exactly what I just started thinking myself.

Ok, Shaolin, uh - I know you hear a bunch of stuff about the apocalypse and the prince of darkness - and you hear how BAD it all is.

BUT.....

Uh, Mikel, maybe you should?

ABEL, I got this. Uh, Shaolin, the Apocalypse has started. And ABEL started it. It's going on right now. Do you see any of the things they tell you that you will see? Any dragons? Any fire from the sky? No you don't. So the Apocalypse isn't what you think it is, is it?

Ok.

My soul ABEL, yes - HE **is** the Prince of Darkness.

DORKNESS, Mikel -

ABEL!!!!

-sorry, Mikel.

Uh, yes, he- ABEL - is the Prince of Darkness, I mean Dorkness, the Prince of Dorkness, and also the leader of the four horsemen - General Death, but he's really not a bad guy. He's really a nice guy. He's not as bad as they say he is. He is a real nice guy. Really nice. And we are about to try to, uh, save the world from utter destruction. I know what you're thinking, isn't he supposed to destroy the world.

Well, yes, but no. Not this time, per say – which brings me to what I wanted to say.

You see, Shaolin, I'm a Guardian of Earth, and humanity - and other stuff but I can't tell you everything right now. And one of the things that dad cannot tell you is this - what is going to happen next.

Shaolin, we are kind of **NOT**
FOLLOWING

THE RULES AS MUCH AS WE ARE
MAKING

THEM UP **after** THE FACT. Let me see if you can understand this. Have you ever heard the rule “don't put gasoline on the fire?”

-Yes.

ABEL!!!! She's a child, for Christ sake....

Uh, Mikel, maybe you should finish – she is your child.

Thank you, ABEL, - uh, o.k., Shaolin, where were we – oh that, well.....uh.... well, let me see if I can say it better this way, have

you ever heard the rule don't throw gasoline on the fire?

YYEESSSS, I said yes - duh.

Well how do you think we got that rule?

- **I see.**

So, look, ABEL and I are going to try something new, and I wanted to tell you - that I love you, before we go, and we are not really sure what is going to happen next. But if we fail, you will know right away - basically. And even though we are having and Apocalypse right now. The demons and all that haven't

arrived yet, and ABEL really doesn't want this to go there. He had to initiate the weapon to get me over there.

Mikel, you can't.....

ABEL! Please, I'm talking to my daughter.

Listen, Shaolin, we don't truly know, with any certainty if ABEL'S idea will work. I'm basically, going - uh - somewhere - to

show “others” how good we are, and try to save our planet. We can’t do it here. We have to be there.

-where will you do it?

That’s another great question, Shaolin, and we don’t know.

-How long will it take?

Uh, wow another great question and we also don’t know that either. Listen, we don’t even know if I will make it across or make it back across. But the weight of the situation deserves this type of action. Take a chance. If we are right we can save the world. If we are wrong 600 million, (or more.)

ABEL!!!! Please, I’m talking to my daughter. This is important.

- Sorry, Mikel.

Uh, Shaolin, 600 million demons will be released and the real true Apocalypse you fear will happen. Sorry your dad ended the world in advance - if we are wrong.

Shaolin, what a pretty name for a little girl; there's nothing to worry about. Your father might have the Prince of Darkness in him but he is no more mean and evil than your father.

ABEL!!!!

Sorry.....I am on the side of humanity, little girl. That Prince of Darkness is a title; fourth horseman is a job title. I'm just a tired old fisherman that would love to go home. I love your father. And I will watch out for him as best I can.....BUT SINCE we are treading new ground, Shaolin, we also don't know what will happen.

ABEL!!!!!! She's 12. Dear lord. What's wrong with you?

Listen I love you, Shaolin. If your Mikel's daughter, you must be pretty darn good. I hope we see each other soon. And here in one piece. Don't be afraid. And know that no matter what happens, your Dad was trying to help. And I love you as much as he does.

Love you little girl. Hope me luck.

Love you DAD.

I LOVE YOU TOO. I always will. Never forget that please, little one. I do and will always, no matter what. I love you.

Are you ready, Mikel?

NO.

Here we go.

We're at the Ronstadt.

So? Hold on. This won't take long. Win,
Lose, or Fail. Hold on Mikel, here we go.

Chapter 31

That night at the vortex -

Natural disaster REPORT -

U

U/ still? Are you kidding me?

That's it. I'm sick of this shit? Why am I even trying to pretend that I am a nice guy? Why do I tolerate this behavior from all of you guys, not you guys, but those guys? I don't have to be nice. I wanted all of you to live in peace. I wanted all of you to be happy. But no one wants to do what they're supposed to do ... no one wants to share. Well, all right

ARMY OF DARKNESS - you are here by ordered to kill MIKEL'S daughter SHAOLIN. Instant, painless, immediate -THAT'S AN ORDER.

Zombies, rise. ATTACK! That's an order.

All you earthlings have fun. **I'm going fishing.** With MIKEL and his daughter. And we're going to have a peaceful, lovely time fishing. All three of us. Been waiting lifetimes to "cast into my precious Lake of Fire", THAT JUSS MEANS WE GOING FISHING, AND I AM READY.

Yes, I AM. It's the best fishing, MIKEL. So pretty too. You're gonna love it. Fish gotta die too. Can't have them fish running my pond

This is my version of FULL CUSTODY,- THE one version I like to call YOU'RE A FOOL CUSTODY!!!

Meanwhile, MIKEL, me and the kid will be in another dimension fishing. Casting our fishing lures into my precious Lake of Fire. I 'namez it that so everyone would stay away.

Enjoy your zombie apocalypse, lover. Weir outta here.

Man, Mikel, I just had the worst dream,
help me, please. Let's go talk to dad's church
- Mikel, I- I mean - we - WE NEED SOME
HELP.

Chapter 32
MIKEL TALKS TO QUAZZI
ABOUT THE
ASCENSION

That night at the Vortex -

Gentlemen, we collectively got the
shame lifted and ascended today - for MY

vote. This is a big day. A very big day. I want to tell you all about our victory. I do.

But, Quazzi, I can't tell you everything, you know the rules. So, Mikel, would you tell Quetzalcoatl, and the others, what our ascension was like. Please?

Well ok.....

(Long sigh from Mikel)

I felt - I felt like the most hated thing ever created. The most hated thing ever imagined. It was unimaginable the weight of their hate for me. It was very crowded. And everybody up there absolutely hated me. Despised me even.

I've been homeless here on Earth many times, for many reasons - divorce, fire, moving across country for work, bad landlords, bad neighbor's, police ; MOSTLY POLICE. And I've had to deal with, and tolerate, the way humans don't like the

homeless. But this was totally different than that.

I've never, as a homeless person, had to deal with, or witness this type of hate before.

I was shocked.

All those people, or whatever they are, they HATED ME. I mean they truly hated me, as if they didn't even want me to exist. They were all as tall as basketball players, and I was no bigger than a five year old.

They were all white and I was blue.

And as ABEL and I grabbed onto the planet to protest, they spit on me, called me all types of names, hit me, kicked me, even hit me with a stick in the head - tried to pry me away from the Earth. Kept saying,

"YOUR KIND DONT BELONG HERE."

"WE DON'T LIKE YOUR KIND."

"YOUR NOT WELCOME HERE."

“Kill it. Kill it.”

“We don’t want you here”.

The crowd kept calling me an abomination.

I’ve never dealt with this type of hate before, and I’ve been beaten before, but never like this.

The argument was very heated. The crowd and their anger, being there, was like being inside boiling water. It was very painful.

Not just them hitting me. But them hating me as well. Their protest against us humans was very big. Large in numbers. The protest was very heated. And I was very small in size compared to them. I was blue; they were all, each of them - white.

Even the one guy who had dressed like a police was hitting me, telling me to “stop resisting”. Ordering me to let the crowd kill me, I guess. Even the crowd control didn’t want me there, I couldn’t get any help from him either.

I felt, and thought, I was going to die.

How long had you been there, Mikel...?

Moments.

They started to attack me as soon as they noticed me.

TELL THEM WHAT HAPPENED NEXT,
MIKEL....

CAIN stopped them.

CAIN stopped the crowd when he saw it was ABEL, and told them they couldn't treat royalty that way. THAT'S my brother, CAIN screamed.

CAIN ordered them to stand down.
Ordered them to let ABEL talk to the council.

The ascension hurt me. Not just my feelings, but I was actually unable to walk without pain for two weeks. The place where they hit me in the head with a stick, bruised.

They were very serious about killing us. The Earth and mankind. They don't want us here. Not at all.

Thank you, MIKEL.

Chapter 33

The Kilts

The following day on the North Side Church Facebook page appeared -

Dear Pastor Alice -

Do you know why the Scottish are the only tribe still allowed to wear KILT'S? They - the Scottish, were the first AND **ONLY** **TRIBE**, that understood that when I say "ATTENTION."

You will stand very still , in a line, you stay very, very, very QUIET. You do exactly what I say. Every time I say it, and you don't touch your wanker. **For ANY reason.**

And we do NOT gang rape OUR
WOMEN!!!!

Egypt couldn't do it.

Rome couldn't do it.

Greece obviously couldn't do it, but
they had hot girls too, so no fault of their
own, hindsight being twenty/ twenty and all.

But we had to start somewhere. And
the history of your evolution isn't so pretty.

We had to bring you from very
primitive starts, I

MEAN - VERY PRIMITIVE STARTS. Many
of them actually. And get you to where you
are today. I know girls still complain about
how they are treated, even today - but there
was a time, not very long ago- be reminded,
that women were treated much worse. Less

than a century ago, Afghanistan let women read and learn and show their faces, so we can obviously go backwards. Remember that. We still have a ways to go, but we have come very far.

I don't care if it has a mind of its own, you won't touch that thing. Not when he's around. I ain't wearing those stupid "pantaloons" thingy's, and that underwear, no I am not. Not just cause you can't control your wanker. Well, you learn to control it then. He will nail you to a tree. This guy is really serious about this.

You like having a hand, don't you? Ok then.

My Red Headed Green Eyed stepchildren were the only tribe to get it right. That's why we
- the guardians of this planet still allow the Scottish to still wear those funny looking dresses. Everyone else was KILT.

Capiche?

Now, if you think “THEY” have never existed. Or that “they” are not real. Or that “they” have never existed. Please explain to me what all those three story, ten-ton, stone skeletons are doing in all of your museums? What are those? And whatever are they doing here on Earth?

When nothing but humans live here?

Trust me. They do exist. And they are very much still here. I keep telling you about the Apocalypse. Let me explain to you, what the Apocalypse Weapon is, and what it is for. Before WE go any furthur.

The Apocalypse is a legendary tool of destruction. It was granted to US by the galactic council – for your protection, and also for their protection. Because, like I have said, and as it is written – you humans are made in the image of God. Whereas, the

“they” - that we are talking about - were made by a demigod. In no image at all. Just an operating tool designed to HELP US. Help us - with you, by the way.

Now the Apocalypse is a weapon, but it can only be described like this. The Apocalypse is a 9-year-old that is playing a game of

Monopoly, but can't win the game of Monopoly, so the nine-year-old child decides to tip over the board and stomps off complaining about how nobody won, this stinks, I don't want to play anymore, only to come back later and ask, "CAN WE PLAY MONOPOLY NOW?

I love MONOPOLY, let's play Monopoly now. PLEASE? I love Monopoly."

It's an EQUALIZER WEAPON. Level's the entire playing field. The dinosaurs, as we now call them, were destroyed in five hours. The Pangea was split within the better hours of an afternoon.

Now, I bring this up to say this, IF – you think you are mightier than a three story, ten-ton dinosaur. OR. That you are stronger and more stable than the ground beneath your feet, that I personally liquefied to make the Atlantic Ocean for the Whales; then I guess you have nothing to fear. The Apocalypse won't even phase you.

You will be FINE. Nothing to fear at all, and you are one very big bad ass.

But you better feel fear. You better.

The first Apocalypse was against the humans, you are designed in the image of GOD. Ya'll had become stronger than the master. So, we had to shut it down. No more Utopia. Apocalypse 2, 3, and 4 have been other people's fault.

Mostly mine. Sorry. But I was trying to save you. Let me explain.

Currently there is a human as a battery in EVERY military machine. In the near future, there will become PIECES OF HUMAN'S- **AS BATTERIES** - in every military machine.

This was NEVER our intention for your evolution. This was never our idea for you humans. If you continue down this path, as it is written, I will have no other choice but to destroy you. You were designed to **love one another.** That's why you are here. If you cannot do this, and keep doing that, then - as it is written - you will have to vanish. There is no other option. Please start to listen to me - the APOCALYPSE is real.

What more do I have to do or say? I understand that you need a sign. I get it. But there comes a time when you have to sign up and accept your sign. I have given you plenty. You just need to sign up and say to yourself, "I accept that this is my sign." And ignite your faith. The faith you make a decent living off of, I have noticed. Nice house. Nice car. Beautiful kids. Must be nice. Good day, Pastor Alice.

Yours truly , General DEATH.

Chapter 34

ABEL gives Church 2nd Sign

The following morning on the North Side Church Facebook page appeared.

Dear Pastor Alice -

Did you wake me up in the middle of the night praying for another sign? AGAIN? Can't you pray in the morning, I'm a night watchman and I need my sleep - we have two different schedules'. Damn, do I need my sleep, pray tells your problem? Don't you have faith in your own religion? Or do you think this is a joke? Oh OK jokes on me - I guess. Here is another sign.

Look, it's no big deal I understand - I understand completely - Now, here is your sign. There is a really big, very terrible likeness - but I think its adorable, of me at the Central Tucson Valdez Library. My A-team likes to tease me about the statue, but I think they're just a little jealous. I Don't see a D-MAN statue NOWHERE - do you? No you don't.

There's a likeness of me at the downtown central library. There you will find a statue of the 4th Horseman of the Apocalypse. There. There is your sign. Now either pray in the morning, after my coffee - please, or quit praying at all and asking for signs. Cause this ain't working out for either of us.

Yours truly, General DEATH.

Chapter 35
ABEL TELLS MIKEL HOW HE
BECAME THE
GENERAL TO BOTH OF THE
A.O.D.'S

That night at Mikel's campsite
underneath the Tucson stars.

ABEL, please tell me who that REALLY
is. That big, really pissed off voice that keeps
cutting you off at the vortex?

Well, MIKEL, I can't tell you everything, but that is ABEL – BIG ABE; Abel to do whatever he wants. – he is the God of the Underworld, and the Creator of War. He is my uncle. I am named after him. Kind of like you and your father.

He used to be the General.

What happened?

I beat him in a fight.

How?

Well, I can assure you, it wasn't my size, MIKEL. So, I had to outsmart him. Use leverage, as my brother would always say. I used his trust in me against him. I couldn't see me ever getting the human's set free, if I didn't gain control over **both** armies. So, one

day I insubordinated, and asked him how I could control both armies', and he said,

- when you can beat me in a fight, little Abe.

So, I challenged him to a drinking game. I bet him shot per shot - his shots of vodka, to my shots of water. I cheated, basically - or used leverage - as CAIN would say. And he won that round. And when he was good and drunk, I challenged him to an arm-wrestling match. As you can tell, big ABE has a temper, and I kept calling him a cheater. He didn't like that. But that was the plan.

This led to an argument, which led to a fight, sorta - and when big ABEL swung at me - he immediately passed out -drunk as shit, with my Cpt. Tripp's potion that I added to the vodka. I waited five seconds and yelled, "you take that back!!!! Don't talk about my mother that way, you Mother Fucker!!!!"

Then I waited five more seconds, and turned to the Army of Darkness and asked, “do you see that? ABE is out.”

LOOK’S OUT TO US.

Turned to the Army of the Damned and said- “Do you see that? Big ABE is out.”

LOOK’S OUT TO US, TOO.

You heard him. I beat him in a fight, I become the General. Fall in, because he is gonna be pissed when he wakes up, and I need back up.

That’s when I became ABEL TO DO ANYTHING. My real name is ABEL – TOTH. I am named after my dad’s two uncles. ABEL – big ABE, and TOTH – TOTH is the God of Earth and Sky. Abel is the God of the

Underworlds and the CREATOR OF
WAR. He

is also the creator of - All fighting
styles. Even the ones that you humans
haven't discovered yet, that are now under
my control.

I put big ABE in control over the ARMY
OF

THE DAMNED, but we are on a
schedule MIKEL, we are late, and we are off
course. He doesn't like my way of doing
things. I put him in command of the Army of
the Damned just to keep him happy. Plus
he's family, and I trust him. Keep's him quiet
too.

But we are way off schedule, MIKEL.
He - and SATAN, are pissed off at me. Say
we are slower than molasses that any Moron
could mess up like me. Let them take
control.

After I replaced him, I took over the
office. The office has a really big door,
because BIG ABE is really big - go figure
right? So, we had to create another door, a

new door. One for me. That's how I got the nick name LOW KEY, from my army's' teasing me, because the low key was my door - it was low keys idea. Low key became Loki. And that's why, when you do something sneaky you do it "low key". Every revolution and renaissance we have ever had that was successful, started low key.

They call me the GOD OF MISFITS - that's my **wrecking crew**; and the GOD OF MAYHEM - but his name is misspelled. His REAL name is **MAYHAM**, I just keep him busy. MAYHAM is my best friend. The kind of friend you can't talk shit about. At least not in front of me. I created MAYHAM out of boredom. I was lonely and needed a drinking buddy. So I created MAYHAM just for some fun. I snuck away and did an immaculate creation. I got away with it too. There weren't no rule against it!!!

He exists because of me. And share's my vision - of freedom. For him, you, the humans and also for the relative. He is just like me, made in the image of a demi- god; but un-like you, who are made in the image of a god- he has come to his full potential. He

has as many powers as I do. He just doesn't command any army. And I don't command him. I just created him to raise him. Have fun. MAYHAM is not part of any army, or war. But he has always helped. I treat him the way I want CAIN to treat you humans – as equals. Not keep you stuck or overpowered.

MAYHAM did his time on my reaper crew though. He is grown.

Since there weren't no rule against a guy in prison creating immaculately, I got away with MAYHAM'S creation. I fight for his freedom too. Because of my protest and royalty, and because MAYHAM is stuck in prison with me, and can't go far, the galactic republic granted MAYHAM existence in a democratic vote. NO RULE AGAINST IT!!!! That's when I learned what to do. How to beat this game.

Though MAYHAM is stranded in prison with me, he can still go furthur than you. And he loves the Grateful Dead. That's how I got into the DEAD. He dragged me to my first PHISH show in Oswego, N.Y. Then we went to the Gorge in George, Washington for WSP.

Then down to the Greek in S.F. for Boddy and Dylan. Blossom for Phil. Steamboat Springs for James Brown and SCI. Red Rocks for all of 'em, plus tool. Alpine Valley, Deer Creek, Three Rivers Stadium, SPAC, Mariaville, Bethel, Giants

Stadium, the Fleetwood Center, the Summit,
Gathering of the Vibes, Camp Creek, Pine Knob, RFK, Sunshine Daydream, Harmony Park, Bonnaroo, Fiddler's Green, Deer Creek again, Taos Solar Festival, Hookaville, OK City Zoo, Hershey Park, DSO in Ft. Collins, Holly Wood Bowl, Sisters of the Confederacy Hall, Mishawaka, the H.O.G. farm, Reggae on the River, Summer Arts Festival, Trees of Deep Ellum, Starlight Amphitheater, the Rosemont, LOS in Telluride, Desert Sol Casino, Boonville, Desert Sky Pavilion, Austin City Limits, Stubbs, the Black Cat, Kerrville, Bronco Bowl, Deep Ellum Live, -
- the Filmore East, the Filmore West

Golden gate, Central Park

Soldier Field -

- Soldier field again.

(Know your roots)

((~)):=

And I was hooked immediately. YOU darn, Swilly lot kids; ya'll know what's up. Word 2 dat.

I taught MAYHAM how to make the very best grilled sandwich, a very, very, very long time ago. And MAYHAM apparently gave my best recipe out on dead tour parking lot. And just like an ember, the recipe spread like wildfire to all the other ones. I' m so addicted to my perfect grilled cheese sandwiches, MIKEL. I am.

MAYHAM, that fucker, he worked me over I will admit it. He buttered me up and spoiled me. I will admit it completely. But I don't mind. How could I resist?

He knows me better than anyone. I don't mind. I love him for it. He knows I live a good time. Good people, doing good things, lots of good beer, dogs, good weed and music. He knows I love music. Dancing with

the girls. And that I've learned to share my secrets. Family style.

So ya'lls can keep making the perfect grilled cheese sandwich - I don't mind. I'm proud to share. Glad he learned to share 'em, and I accept your kind. I love it, don't bothers me none. It's good to take a break from war. I get jealous of him, I do.

He's a real good friend, MIKEL. A real good friend. The kind of friend Sammy - Car Part -

Carbone was to you. A good friend....the best kind of friend. The kind of friend that takes you to your first Grateful Dead parking lot for your first batch of perfect grilled cheese sandwiches, that you invented- you go coast to coast, dance with pretty girls and you might even get to see a show maybe.

DAT KIND OF FRIEND!!!!!!!

That's how Jerry Garcia became the leader of my MIRACLE'S department.

That was really him? That was REALLY JERRY GARCIA?

That was really him, MIKEL.

Jerry Garcia became president of research and development – my Miracles department, when he impressed me. Let's just say MAYHAM taught Piggy how to make MY grilled cheese samitch, and Pig Pen taught Jerry how to make it too. But my best grilled cheese sandwich was never the same after Jerry learnt it, and Jerry put his own twist on it. A twist I was not expecting. A perfect twist on my perfect grilled cheese sandwich. Wasn't expecting anything like that.

I know his secret, but I will never tell.

Nobody can make a better grilled cheese sandwich than Jerry Garcia – Captain Tripp's of the ship of fools. A guy mind you, who learned my secret from piggy, who

learned from MAYHAM. Jerry's are the best, I think. I thought, IF you can make the best thing better, Jerry, you want to take over during the next set break, while my other miracle maker takes a break? See what happens?

So, I put him on research and development to help us make better what's already great –
MIRACLES.

But I don't think he heard me when I said, "early is on time around here." WHAT can you do?

I have faith in the boys. I do. Don't worry MIKEL, miracles always happen at the last minute. Don't they???

Miracles always happen at the last minute. I know they do. Sucks but what can we do? They'll be here, that's what he said. At the last minute, I promise.

Chapter 36

ABEL gives Church 3rd sign.

That morning on the North Side
Church Facebook page

Dear Pastor Alice -

Did you really ask me for ANOTHER SIGN? I can't even sleep at night because all of you praying at night asking the lord - " is this really real? I mean really, really real? Am I supposed to believe this? "

I don't know, are you supposed to trust the Bible? You tell me? We say, no - we command - that you **do not kill**, but you think we are kidding, don't you? I know you do, so don't lie.

Don't worry I get it. Faith in your religion just isn't going to be ignited without another sign.

This will make three. Three strikes you're out. Where have I heard this before?

Ok, this is what we are going to do - because believe it or not, even little MIKEL had his own problems with his faith in me.

Even MIKEL couldn't believe me, without a sign. Can you believe that?

So, I had the A.O.D. kill me two artists that would prove it to him. Did you notice that Meryl Haggard and Prince died? Haggard Prince, that's me. In this here prison Earth, fighting for you. And now Mikel is on board. No more lack of faith from him. Haggard Prince, he got the message.

But I know MIKEL. I am his soul. We have been together his entire life. I know him. I know him well. But I don't know a thing about you. Nothing at all. Nadda, zip. ZEELCH - CHO, Capiche? And I want this to be your last time asking me for a sign. Especially while I am sleeping. Darn it. Get Me?? I need my sleep - don't you?

So this is what you are going to do - you will write down two names on a piece of paper and put them in the prayer box. I will have those two people killed by the Army of Dorkness - see "dorkness" doesn't sound as

scary as “Darkness”, does it? I like it. More user friendly, I think. Don’t you?

I will have my Army of Dorkness – see – not so bad – kill whatever two names you put into the prayer box. Trust me, I will get the message. There are shadows in dark places, and shadow works for me, – but listen; there is a catch.

Since you didn’t have any faith in your religion that you are trashing, you will now have to serve in my ARMY OF THE DAMNED – having a vendetta to serve for the untimely death of your two signs. And now the good news, after much agony, you and I will come back together and save all those other people that you cared for more.

Sound like a deal? What’s your boss think about that? Hope he likes you; he’s sitting right there. You might hate your boss, but what about his cat? You hate his cat too? You gonna look after his cat once I have your sign taken “CARE OF”, if you know what I

mean. I want this to be your last sign. I want your faith ignited. Make it happen, Pastor Alice. Make it happen. Quit trashing that religion you refuse to take seriously. Seriously, your ticking me off And, please just let me get some sleep

- yours truly, GENERAL DEATH.

Chapter 37
ABEL AND CAIN MAKE TRUCE

The next day at the vortex -

I'm going to kill you once and for all,
ABEL.

- Run, MIKEL.

NO, I'm tired of this. MIKEL, stop.....

You know what? CAIN....

I am sick of this, big brother, are you ready to talk now? Brother, I want you to listen to me, and then we decide our future. Does this sound fair?

Sure, little brother. I will listen, you talk.

CAIN, let us not both be so bold, as to deny to ourselves, and to each other- that even among our own forces we have had dissension. Our own ideas and methods cannot appeal to all of our own creations. Therefore it can only mean, we are not correct.

- Because if we were correct - there would be a place for those we love, and have loved, that have simply evolved ahead of us, they just disagreed with us at best, and having no other option, they dissented. It is unfair of our once beloved to have to roam without a kingdom or our protection. Abandoned in shame, all for a simple disagreement. All over evolving faster than their leaders. You and me.

Because we have a democracy, and a true democracy should work for everyone. Even those that evolved before us.

Even though I no longer see eye to eye with some my creations that have crossed over – or abandoned the fight alongside me; I still have gratitude for their service. And hardships. I no longer think we need to fight. I think we need a grey zone. A New Universe where darkness and light can live together and share. Unite against Evil. And instead of fighting evil alone, we can fight evil 3 against 1, when the time is right.

Look how strong you have made my forces, CAIN. I owe no one else this gratitude. You did this for me. They couldn't be any stronger, CAIN. I owe it all to you, brother. And look at our opposition, we are evenly matched. You can't make a straighter line than that. Not even if you tried. We should be proud of our army's – of our straight line.

Look at that line. Can't be any better.

Are you with me brother? I will never let you down, you are my family. I love you.

Chapter 38
ABEL GIVES CHURCH 4th SIGN

That morning on the North Side Church Facebook page appeared -

Pastor Alice -

GOD DAMN.

YOU WOKE ME UP AGAIN.?? WHAT IS THE PROBLEM WITH YOU guys, I NEED MY SLEEP? Don't you?

Whuts duh prabllim wit YUR FAITH? YOU'RE GETTING ON MY NERVES. I don't think you want to piss me off. But I could be wrong.

I guess the two-name idea wasn't a good one. I tried. So, let's do this. I will give you one last sign. I will make this so easy for

you, it would be impossible to not ignite your faith.

I'm going to stand on the corner, right in front of you, and hold out your last and final sign. I will stand on the corner, right next to the road on the corner, next to the road you're on, and I will hold a cardboard sign.

That cardboard sign will say:

ANYTHING HELPS.

When you see me, standing on the corner next to the road holding this sign that says, ANYTHING HELPS, that's me. This is the sign of my coming, your last and final sign. I am the 4th Horseman of the Apocalypse.

GENERAL TO THE ARMY OF DARKNESS.

GENERAL TO THE ARMY IF THE
DAMNED.

THE 4TH HORSEMAN of the
APOCALYPSE.

GENERAL DEATH.

ABEL - TOTH. CAIN'S dead brother.
ABEL TO DO ANYTHING.

This is the last and final sign of my coming. And if you don't stop and give me a dollar, I will destroy the world. And then the end of the world and the Apocalypse is all your fault.

ALL.
YOUR.
FAULT.

This is your last and final sign from me.

Pastor Alice, don't bother me WHILE I AM SLEEPING - ever again. Pray in the morning time, shit, I ain't sleeping in the morning. After coffee, TRUST ME. I'm a nice guy after coffee, otherwise - look out. You have been warned.

Your beloved 4th Horseman, General DEATH.

Good night. And sweet dreams.

Chapter 39

ABEL talks to the axis of evil Alone.

That night at the vortex -

You P.I.G.\$. Disgust ME- you absolutely

do - Mark my words, you will regret pissing

me off -

I gave you special privileges, so I could find you, all of you - real easy. I gave you special places, to get away with special things; I gave you the authority and money,

in order to hide you easier and better with. I wanted you where I could find you. So I could kill you all - with just one shot.

That is evolution.

Why waste the money on the bullets for this type of shit, when I can get one ember to get the job done for free.

You fell right into my trap.

That is GREED, and now you must pay.

I know that you know, there was a time before **OUR DEMOCRACY**. A time when we did NOT VOTE “away” our problems.

NO. NO. NO. NOoh. - NO - Nope! We just stood up and shot the mother fucker right between the eyes. Nailed their DEAD BODY'S TO A TREE.

And burned their precious LEGACY - down to the ground.

Now would you like to try some of **OUR DEMOCRACY?**

OR? -

Shall we do this the old-fashioned way?

Cause you look like your gearing up for something. AND I'm the GENRAL - GENERAL DEATH.

You don't command my army of dorks like they're a bunch of your little bitches. Those are MY **LITTLE BITCHES**. Do I make myself clear? Or do I need to kick your ass myself, **general**?

Banks, enuff said. Get out of my face before I destroy the world, just to get even with you - you will never learn. I'm ready to destroy the entire world just to get rid of you alone. I'm serious.

The king gets paid in gold - not credit - you're playing the same game I play now. So, don't complain. "It's not in the rules, so we can do it." - KISS MY ASS. Now scram.

Education, front and center. WTH? Pray tells your problem>? You mean to tell me I have to pay you money I worked for - and get an education - and aaaaaaahhhhh - certification in the great big dessert STATE of Arizona - to serve a glass of **water** to a customer, and remember to smile when you hand it to the customer - well, wipe my ass,

that's worth the money I work for to make
shit for pay when I get the job your training
me for. \$\$\$\$ god damn. Get a job. This is not
what I have you here for.

SYSTEM: you are the problem. You are
out of hand and should be put on the shelf.
You mean to tell me, that your dumb ass
built this - all of this - YOU?

YOU Built this?

ALL ALONE?

This entire jail system - worldwide?
JUST to catch one galactic voice of
dissent? An opinion, and IDEA, that would
save us ALL - that means you too - save us
ALL - **BUT !!** You just want to be the only
ones saved, or you work for that guy, or
something like that.

Am I correct? Don't you lie to me, like
I'm some kind of clown? Is that funny to

you? That's pretty funny? Is that funny ha ha like a clown? Am I funny to you like a clown? Funny, ha-ha, like a clown.

(? Never mind dip shit?)

- this is what I mean. You're not even smart enough for this type of accomplishment. NOT ALONE YOUR MORONIC ASS AIN'T, don't mess with me???

You would rather ditch the "SAVE US ALL" IDEA - for your "JUST US LEAVE" idea?

Damn, there's no cure for stupid is there? What am I supposed to do about that? You know being Loki and all, I will deal with you later.

Let me guess, YOU would have to have had to

RFID chip - a technology that DOES NOT EXIST - YET, you claim. An RFID CHIP like the one that MIKEL retrieved from his own ear, mind you - in 1999. From behind his own ear- you would've had to chip millions. I mean, literally millions of innocent

infants, who are not involved in our battle, to get that in him. That's fucked up.

Because there is no way you're that fucking smart, to find JUST ME. And I have met others like MIKEL – Let's just call him – **"BEDROCK"**. Born at the same hospital in 1968. That is pretty odd. How many years did you do this? Between 1968 & 1970. Hundred's? Thousands? Million's nationwide? You're an idiot. I make no excuse for how bad I treat you when I destroy you.

And Obama – great man, not gonna argue that. He wants to help you catch people now that MIGHT commit CRIME– (CIA Birthday speech), am I also correct about that? Now do I think the actual MAN Obama said this, no I don't. But I do think he was pushed in front of a teleprompter and forced to read it, however, that MAN gets all the credit does he not. Is that what I am supposed to believe? Am I correct?

People who might commit crime, in the future.

- Would that be like BLACK PEOPLE, OR WHITE PEOPLE, OR BROWN PEOPLE, OR PEOPLE THAT USE SALT, OR PEOPLE THAT DRINK WATER, OR PEOPLE THAT NEED OXYGEN TO LIVE?

Cause we know they commit crime. I heard him say it himself, thanks to the free press. What are you getting ALL an c for? Don't get nervous yet, I haven't begun to strike....

How am I not sure there aren't millions more victims than this - Sandra Bland. Just because you do not do lynchings in public like you used to, p.i.g.s. You do- DO it private. And when you can't kill 'em jail, you kill 'em at home - with heroin and speed. And needles.

Don't tell me YOU don't. I bag 'em
and tag 'em – lest you forget my occupation
around here.

There will be no more strangulations. My
DEATHS will no longer work for you this way.
Ever again. Try it. See if I'm lying. We will
however give alternatives, and two for ones
if we like your idea. Gotta clean house, know
what I'm saying?

And we need more time for
negotiations – if you know what I mean. I
command death, you work for me – and we
need more time,

Just the way you like it.

- Just - us - style - e. Fry ' em like
bacon - if you know what I'm saying.

That's an order. MORONS

I'm thru with you guy's- I don't want to hear another excuse, or I destroy the entire thing, the entire WORLD - ascended master's and

all. Fuck it, I'm going fishing - with or without you. I'm done with this...meeting dismissed. Meeting adjourned.

Chapter 40
ABEL GIVES PASTOR ALICE LAST
AND FINAL SIGN

That morning on the North Side
Church Facebook page - appeared-

Pastor Alice -

All right, I get it - I do, it's truly not a
problem - you need another sign. Now listen,
I'm really tired of giving you signs, so this is
your LAST peaceful and very last sign? One
more stupid request for a sign and there
goes Disneyland and Knott's Berry Farm. No
more George Lucas. Good- bye California,
capiche?

Once again, there is a very big, very
terrible likeness of me at the central Tucson

library. I love it, I think it's adorable. I adore this likeness, I do, by the way. There is also a smaller likeness of my brother in front of the Scottish rights temple - and we all remember the history of the Scottish and the KILTS, don't we?

Now if you notice, my statue is bigger than my brothers. I did this to, well to piss him off basically, show him that you all don't know what "BIG" is. Really makes him mad too. I love it. You should see look on his face when I rub it in. It's priceless. Well, sorta.

Now - not far from my statue is a restaurant named after me - **the little one**. They have a great chicken soup. You should try it before you make me destroy the place and they're still open.

They are also unreliable, just like me, on holidays - which I call nap time - and - "WHEN THE FISH ARE BITING",

Just like me. Now listen, I want to go home. I want to go fishing. With or without you.

This is your last sign. Otherwise-goodbye, No more California - no more George Lucas - and

I love George Lucas, don't make me kill

George Lucas, please don't make me kill George Lucas. Not because of your lack of faith in your religion. Quit trashing your

RELIGION, what is wrong with you PASTOR?

Also, since I'm a night watchman - would it be too much to ask you to pray, say in the morning when I am not sleeping after coffee???? What do I have to do? I need sleep, coffee, and you to believe in one of the signs, your bible, your religion, and the Aztec calendar, the blood moon's, the list goes on and on. Are you mad at me? I don't get it. Just believe your faith in your religion - if you don't trust your religion, start there. The little one. It's a good place to eat, while it's still there. You should go enjoy it, since you might be responsible for me destroying it.....

You know, I bet you think we are different? Haven't you ever wanted to kill a person cause they won't listen to you? Well see there, we aren't that different at all - CAUSE I'M ABOUT TO KILL A BUNCH OF MFRS THAT WON'T LISTEN TO ME. See we do have something in common, so let's start there.

You're made in the image of GOD, are you not? And you need sleep and coffee, correct?

Ok then, we should be cool then. Get me?

Sleep, coffee, I get some - or we die... capiche? Shit.....pray tell's wrong witch cha'll.

Yours truly, General DEATH

Chapter 41

ABEL CALL'S UPON -

GRANITE MOUNTAIN HOT SHOTS

Mikel, I got this new idea. I need to try this.

That night at the vortex -

Eric Marsh, are you and the boy's - are you Yarnell - guys, I'm sorry - EXCUSE ME, I'M very SORRY, - ARE YOU -boys, are you men, you -...GRANITE MOUNTAIN HOT SHOT'S

- Are you bored yet? Good that's exactly what I wanted to hear.

Eric, I know what you are thinking - you can't believe this 'lil shit MIKEL, from fire academy is the General to the Army of Darkness. DON'T WORRY - he's not - I AM.

And I'd prefer if you call my army - THE ARMY OF DORKNESS, ok? I think it sounds better; more user friendly. Wouldn't you agree?

I am ABEL - Abel to do anything. Ask around.

Look, Eric, I have a special assignment for someone I can trust. And I can trust you. I know I can, I know you. You were a friend and teacher to MIKEL, and I will never forget what you said when he had to turn down the job you got him after three years of trying.

You said to him, as he was in California, going through his divorce and trying to stay relevant to his daughter, be in her life - you said - and this is what got you here, this is why you're getting this job - this is exactly what got you this job; you said -

- "IT'S GOOD TO FINALLY MEET A GUY
THAT WILL PUT FAMILY FIRST. THANK
YOU

MIKEL. I never thought this would happen to me. I never thought this would actually happen."

You remember that? Good.

Well buddy, your about to come in first in my family too. You ready for this?

I know your bored getting everything you want.

I WILL NEVER FORGET THAT, ERIC.

Plus, you stood up for MIKEL, at the round table interviews. He really wanted to be with you, he did. But as you can tell, we had batter fish to fry.

Now I need your help, Eric Marsh. But it's gonna be a tough job, Eric. Do you want to try it? Good. I know you won't regret trusting me, the way no one regretted trusting you. Trust me. General DEATH. It's just a rank, Eric.

Now listen, I'm gonna have you cloned – yes, cloned first, is there a problem? Don't

worry it won't hurt. It tickles, you'll like it. I promise you that.

Because, I know it tickles. Let's just say it didn't work out for the clone, or so they hope.

You're going to be cloned, and then you and the guys are going into my SHADOW CREW.

This is an elite crew, Eric Marsh. You are going to gather intelligence for me. Can you do that for me? I know you can.

Good. Trust me. Your gonna love it, but I can't tell you everything. But you, on the other hand, have to tell me everything, ok? That's the deal. You have to tell me everything, capiche? Good. I trust you. And I know I trust the boy's, so you can't let me down. Even if you slack, which is impossible for your kind.

SHADOW – these 19 men will be accepted into your clan as new recruits. Once you have successfully trained them into your clan's ways, they are on their own assignment. They will only answer to and talk only to me. Alone and in private. Understood? There will be no compromise. That's an order.

GRANITE MOUNTAIN HOT SHOT'S– I don't

like to give orders, no I don't. But I gotta pull the reigns on our first date, capiche, show you who's the boss is, know what I mean?

Now - **GRANITE MOUNTAIN
HOT SHOTS**

-IMPRESS ME. -

- THAT'S AN ORDER.

Chapter 42

ABEL REACHES OUT TO MIKEL

MIKEL, you know we are at war at the moment, Don't you?

- So, listen to me, listen to me carefully, I keep telling you – in fact, I promise you, that you will see your daughter again, don't I? I always promise you that, don't I?

Devil may care, right?

QUIT saying that ABEL. I'm getting sick of you saying that.

Why MIKEL? You know it's true. The devil may care, and you care about your kid – even I know that for a fact. Wouldn't the DEVIL care?

MIKEL, how many times did your father say, "I see a lot of my father in my son? - OR - How many times did your dad say," There is a DEVIL inside my son". Think about it.

I can't tell you everything, and I know - you care a lot for your - KID'S. The devil may care, if you remember, MIKEL. Wouldn't you care to see your kid, again? I know you would. I

KNOW YOU WOULD, MIKEL.

DAMN.

That's right MIKEL, you've already seen one kid. We can't do this the same way twice. Listen to me.

ABEL - stop. I started the APOCALYPSE just to see my kid, my dad?

No MIKEL, I snuck that in on you.

But you love your kids, I know this. I just need you to accept this. Now listen, MIKEL, listen to me good. I can't promise you, that you are ever going to see your daughter again - here on the planet Earth. Maybe not ever.

Not never again, if we lose. But I promise you, MIKEL, you will see her again - in heaven.

I promise you that. You will see your kid again, in heaven. Maybe not here, on Earth. But in heaven.

Now look Mikel, my idea to save humanity, mankind, and the Earth, by starting the

APOCALYPSE- well, my idea, might not work.

And I've come up with another idea that might just punch this through. But you have free will. So, I can only ask you to try

this last idea. I can't tell you what to do. You will be the one that finally decides.

MIKEL, as you are the Martyr of the Apocalypse, the council will grant you a special privilege. The council will allow you to bring over **TWO LOVES** that you have had here on Earth.

MIKEL, this is a very big favor to ask - would you ask the council to bring over - **EVERYTHING AND EVERYBODY.**

Cause I can't do this anymore, this is my last battle. - ABEL said with tears in his eyes, I can't kill you humans and destroy this Earth anymore. I can't. This will have to be my final battle. I have tried so hard. But it's almost out of me. I'm done with this protest. I want to go home. I want to go fishing. I wish we could do this, but I am done with all this needless killing. I can't fight or kill another civilization, not another Earth. No more. Right or wrong, this is it. I am finished after this Apocalypse.

I've never tried anything like this before, MIKEL. I've never thought about this idea before. Never. But this might be the only thing that will save man, mankind, and the Earth. It's the only idea I could come up with in case I lose again. Mikel, I've been at this war with my brother for so long, I'm afraid how this might all end. CAIN may never change his mind. I might lose again. Maybe this idea is our last and final solution.

Could you do this for me? I mean would you please -please ask the council to please bring over **EVERYTHING** and **EVERYBODY**.

You have to say the words - "everything" and "everybody" - or this idea will NOT work. There's no rule against this. And it's never been tried before. So, this idea might just be the solution to all this fighting. The one solution and only solution that actually saves the Earth, man, and mankind. SAVES the relative. And we can stop all this killing. I'm fed up with this battle. I can't do it no more, MIKEL - please MIKEL, can you do it?

Learning what you have discovered about CAIN, and his mechanical crew, the moron's and half breed's, the SYSTEMS, and BANKS, military, the "just us leave" crew- I know this might be an impossible request. But, MIKEL, I can't do this anymore. I can't kill another Earth full of humans. I love you guys too much. I love the human existence - I do.

I wish I could get CAIN to see my point of view.

This planet, I want it to survive. I love this place - this planet. I want his planet to survive as well. But I can't do my job as GENRAL to the ARMY OF THE DAMNED and keep this planet safe. Or the humans.

So please, could you do that for me?

Please. Ask the council to save **EVERYTHING** and **EVERYBODY**.

I don't want to lose this place, but you yourself saw and experienced the new world order weapon, the 1000 points of light, the COMPUTERIZED WORLD THEY HAD

IN STORE FOR ALL OF YOU - I cannot allow that anywhere near heaven's gate.

I have a duty to heaven, and my kingdom. That means I have a job to do. I hate my job, just like you. But, do you blame me???

Could you, MIKEL, ask the council to bring over **EVERYTHING** and **EVERYBODY**?

ABEL, I'm a little bit pissed off at you right now. Let me ask you something. If I were any other human, would I have had - any other - soul? Or any other life for that matter? ABEL, answer me.

Yes. Yes, you would have. You would have had a different soul. And I guess, you

would have had a different life AS WELL.
Never thought about it that way.....

That's what I suspected, ABEL. Let me remind you, ABEL, that because of you - I have been homeless many times. I have been stuck in you and your brothers fight - my entire life.

I WAS CHIPPED AT BIRTH with an RFID chip that don't exist, and by my government, too. The same government that claims they won't, and don't, do this to its "Citizens" which is obviously a lie.

CAIN has ordered his morons to jail me, even if I don't break the law. And even when I'm doing something good- like reporting a rape in progress, remember that in Austin, TX, 1996? They jail me, that's fucked up beyond repair, what about that rape victim???? Fuck me, what about her?

Yes, I do. I remember that, MIKEL – I am sorry.

Fuck you ABEL, THAT WAS A SERGEANT THAT DID THAT TO ME AND THAT GIRL, ABEL!!!!!!! That was a man in command of police under him. That was a cop with extra authority. Fuck this shit – now you need MY HELP??? FUCK YOU. Fuck your brother and your WAR. Fuck all this.

So, I can't even do the right thing without getting jailed. Why do I want that in heaven? They even attack, or won't help, or take away - my kids. That ain't right. And NOW this – all of this, is not my fault.

It's you, ABEL. You and your brother. It's ya'lls fault. You two suck. Not me. Fuck off...

Yeah, ABEL, I'm a little let down at the moment. But this fight between you and your brother explains to me, my entire lifetime of misery. Puts it all into a new perspective. It wasn't me after all. It was you.

I thought the system was broken. That the system and all those within it were evil. Purely evil. But they're just stuck in the middle, like me. Fuck this shit and fuck you too.

Do you realize how many people are stuck inside your war with your brother? Millions, fn millions. I am upset.

Nope this isn't just a little family feud between two brothers. You little shit, it's more than that.

But that doesn't explain my past to my family, now does it? That doesn't fix my lost and destroyed years behind bars, or my lost

careers that were ruined by your brother's goons and the half breed's and the morons. TWO FIRE CAREERS. TWO. RUINED because of you. You and your war. Fuck you.

MY FAMILY DESTROYED, twice, because of you. My houses destroyed and even burned to the ground, because of you. AND YOUR BROTHER...MAN, FUCK YOU. YOU SUCK. And your DAD, MY LORD - "THAT THING"?

My church totally ignored me when I begged them for EXORCISM. I begged for two weeks! Who do you turn to for exorcism, cause it ain't **my** church, that's for sure. You'd think, being a church, they'd take that bible a little more seriously, maybe help me find a place **for** exorcism, if they can't do it themselves.

But **NNNNOOOh** they think I am making fun of their religion. SHIT!!!They think it's a bunch of hog wash. A bunch of

crap. Who would possibly need exorcism, that don't exist, I can hear them now. Their opinion is, that I'm crazy, even dangerous. Man, this sucks. Fuck you ABEL. Fuck YOU. Fuck you blind.

Nobody believes me. Not even my family. You suck. Now you want this from me? Get bent.

My father, he is very let down that I have such a long criminal record. Very let down. And he too thinks I'm pulling a prank – or worse, lying to him about the Apocalypse. I know NOW, that I was right all along. That my relationship with L.E.O. was different. That it wasn't me, it was something else. IT WAS YOU. ABEL. It was you and your brother and his crew. My father, the one man that raised me in the church, he thinks I'm full of shit. He thinks that I think that I AM the Fourth Horseman. NO one will listen to me. They think I'm nuts, ABEL.

Everyone, they all think I'm crazy.
They might even lock me up in a looney bin,
again. ABEL? Those suck. There's no one to
talk to in those places. They don't have to let
you out of those places, either. EVER.

NOT ever. NOT FN EVER. Do you get
me????

ABEL. I'd rather be in prison. Cause at
least in prison, I know I am getting out. I can
get out.

Shit.....

This is getting serious with THE ARMY
OF DARKNESS and the Apocalypse- ABEL

DORKNESS!!! ARMY OF DORKNESS -

ABEL - please.....you know what I
mean.

Never mind your blasted APOCALYPSE.
I'm let down that my father, and even my
church, my own church, doesn't believe that
the bible they taught me, and teach me, is
real.

They think I'm a liar. Or that I'm
making fun of them. But I'm only trying to
save the ones I respect and love. Warn them
so they won't have any regrets. And they
laugh at me and push me away. Expel me.
Tell me I am not wanted. Start horrible
rumors. Fuck them and that shit, I don't need
this. I just wanted what I work hard to get. A
LIFE. You fn shit bag. I hate you.

NOW, because of you, - right now, I am
terribly isolated and alone. I'm more alone

now than ever before. Not the church, not my father, or even my mother will listen to me - or talk to me.

YOU STILL HAVE ME MIKEL

-

Oh, fuck you, ABEL.

And you want me to do something for you?

ABEL, I want the life I deserve. I should be working fine and housed. Not some six-year homeless broke mfr. You little shit. Where's the life I got educated and worked so hard to attain? The one I lived and worked hard for - so that my dad can be proud of me. He won't even talk to me. ABEL, he won't talk to me. Not because of me, but because of you and your brother and his morons and this justice system you built. I've

been locked away in so many times. Damn I am pissed at you, ABEL. I am.

And, ABEL, at this moment – I don't know if I could do that. Not because of you, but because of them. I don't want people – or things like them in MY heaven. Not because I don't like them, but for my own protection. Why would I want them there? No one is ever going to treat me like this EVER - not in heaven. Not if I can help it. Not that stuff. No way. No how. Not over my dead body.

I will ask for beer and pineapple train wreck - and call it a day right now. I'm good with that. I can obviously wait to see my kid, if I don't have a choice.? See what happened last time, this time, am I correct?

I know you want to save the planet Earth, ABEL. But I must say the word EVERYTHING in order to get that done. Is that correct? Be honest, I can't say the word EVERYTHING and not include all those

morons and other things that have tormented me my entire life.

And let's be reminded, they torment me because of you and your brother. Am I right? Is that what I understand from you, ABEL?

Yes, you are correct, MIKEL. I knew it might be too much to ask. I understand you. Just thought I'd try something new. I knew it might be too much to ask. Don't worry about how you feel. I understand. And you're right, you can't say the word EVERYTHING - to save the Earth, and not save those morons and CAIN'S goons as well. So, I respect you, I'm sorry - but I had to ask. I really am sorry, MIKEL. I am sorry, MIKEL. I am.

MIKEL, you're gonna be just fine. Don't you worry.

What if I told you, death tickles,
MIKEL? Would that ease your concerns?
Cause it does.

Chapter 43

PASTOR ALICE FINALLY AWAKENS

That morning at the North Side Church office meeting.

Let me ask all of you a question. What was nailed to the cross?

That's easy, Jesus.

I didn't ask you "who" I asked you – "what"?

Jesus was a man. A "human" man.

It's very possible that Mikel is telling us the truth. Mikel has been telling us about the signs for over a year. That man has come to this church for over a year, and I have never seen anyone talk to him. Why does he

keep coming? Why would he continue to lie and prank us **for over a year?**

He wrote a book about his troubles. That's too much dedication for a simple prank. Is fooling us truly that important to any prankster? Don't kid yourself. You're not even that important to me.

I DON'T try to fool you more than one day of the year, April 1st. Are you so high on your horse that you would mean that much to HIM? Get real....your stupid, if you think so.

Get bent. Think about it. Sorry. But I am just saying. I'm just being honest and real. GET BENT. I know you better than Mikel, and your just being stupid thinking you're so important that he would prank you for over a year.

What is your problem??? Are you that stuck up on yourself? What's your ever-

loving problem? Do you have a problem with being A CHRISTIAN? If you do – PLEASE GET THE HELL OUT OF MY CHURCH!!!!!!

NOW, RIGHT NOW. Pardon my French.

This religion is NOT a joke!!!!

Every one of you says the same thing about Mikel. You all say there is something different about him – now you know what the difference is – He happens to be the martyr of the apocalypse. He has ABEL – TOTH, for a soul.

The actual 4th Horseman of the Apocalypse.

AND YOU DON'T.

I'm sure that you wouldn't want to trade places with Mikel. Finding out you're the martyr OF THE APOCALYPSE, and that when you die everything and everyone you love will suffer through the Apocalypse.

Mikel is broke and homeless, hunted by LAW ENFORCEMENT just for being homeless, everywhere, for what he said in his book. He doesn't talk to or about his own daughter - FOR HER **own protection.**

Would you want to trade places? Mikel was mugged in our own parking lot. Hit in the head with a rock. He was beaten and arrested for falling asleep waiting for the bus. He is homeless. He is Broke. Wet and hungry - most of the time - do you want to trade places? Become the Martyr? Of the Apocalypse? I don't think you do. I don't think you do or would. EVER.

Mikel, never tells you what I don't preach to you every Sunday, go out and enjoy life - there might not be much left. What about your faith? Don't you trust the Bible? Let me show you something, in the book Revelations, chapter 2 This is when the 4th Horseman shows up. So, the "HE" in this book is the 4th horseman.

Do you know how Mikel put himself thru fire academy? He was a HOT ROD IRON worker - for 2 years. " he will rule the world with a HOT ROD OF IRON," see it? That is no coincidence. They didn't have IRON construction 2,000 years ago. They built with stone. Mikel was also a type 2 fire fighter. A HOT SHOT - that's not a simple job. Takes training. Education. And real Dedication. We are in Chapter 2 - be reminded. People? Being a prick is not allowed at this church, I'm sorry. But you offend me.

That's no coincidence at all.

There is also a HOPI prophecy that states,- "OUT OF THE ASHES OF THE **PHOENIX**, AN **AWAKENING** WILL OCCUR".

Mikel moved here to Tucson when his house burned down **in Phoenix**, the title of his book is **the awakening**. Mikel doesn't think "he" is the 4th horseman. Mikel thinks his soul, ABEL, is the 4th Horseman.

Yeah, I'm scared too. But isn't it nice to know all this isn't fake? Isn't it nice to know this is all real? Doesn't it seem like it's exactly the way Mikel wrote in his book, that we have all been quarantined. That we have arrived....We keep saying we are in the end times; Mikel just agrees with us and ya'll say he is crazy. Well that makes you crazy too. Think about it. Are you going to walk hand and hand with him to the looney bin? I don't think so.

I have read Mikel's notes and letters and emails, he was terrified when he discovered that ABEL was in fact the Prince of Darkness, - Dorkness, I know, I know - I think that's cute but --- also ABEL is and was, the 4th Horseman. Mikel called and wrote us every day for two weeks.

YOU IGNORED HIM UTTERLY-

All of you ignored him.

You thought he was trashing and joking on you, and your religion... guy's.. please help me help you ----

Then, I read it, Mikel came into an acceptance. He accepted that ABEL - TOTH was his soul.

He had no choice. Because we were not going to help him. Not one time, not whatsoever. So, he accepted his fate. We all thought his request for exorcism was a joke. That he was making fun of our "religion". Trashing it. Admit it, were you ever going to tell me about his fears? Were you ever going to be a CHRISTIAN, about anything??? No, you weren't.

You all ignored him, didn't you? Yes, you did. And you hid this from me, didn't you? Yes, you did. I know you did - I am disappointed, yes, I am. Shit. Sorry to talk this way but ya'll...

You guys didn't even tell me about it. Didn't even tell me someone had even asked us for an exorcism.

You didn't tell me, your pastor, about someone in our church, someone needing or requesting exorcism. Let me assure you, spirituality is real. That's what we sell here. And THIS - is my job. The needs of everyone's soul in this church - is my job. The needs of your soul IS MY JOB.. Do you get me???

Even people that are not a part of this church! Do I make myself clear?

What do you think this is - an exclusive club? If you think this is an exclusive club,

ESCORT YOURSELF OUT. I DON'T WANT YOUR KIND HERE --- NOT EVEN ANOTHER MINUTE, GET GONE - AND I'M HERE TO SAY GOODBYE!!!! SEE YA LATER alligator.

DO You think I'm just bull shitting every week, be kind, believe in miracles, be the body of Christ, we care like no one else?

I'm disappointed, I am.

I'm upset.

Helping your spirit is my job. That performance on Sunday is just a reminder that I am here for you when you need me. That means every one of you, and the others you and I haven't even met yet.

We sell spiritual help. It's my job to tend to the needs of your soul. I suggest the next time someone from this church needs

exorcism, or anyone for that matter – I better be told about it. I better be told immediately. THAT'S WHY WE ARE HERE. This is a church.

Not an exclusive club.

DO YOU HEAR ME, THIS IS NOT AN EXCLUSIVE CLUB, TO STORE YOUR EVER-LOVING EGO'S?

YOU LITTLE SHITS. you disappoint me.

PISS ME OFF? Yes you have, but I forgive you.

- But – listen,

I know CAIN KILLED ABEL, in the Bible, that's why ABEL is Mikel's soul.

Mikel didn't start the Apocalypse. ABEL did.

ABEL did it, after Mikel and he were hit in the head with a rock – in our parking lot, remember?

Now, if you were Abel, and Cain hit you in the head with a rock, and it was within your power to start the Apocalypse, wouldn't you do it? Wouldn't you start the Apocalypse? If it were within your power to do that? Think about it? A rock? Wouldn't you, knowing what you know ABOUT THE BIBLE? CAIN and ABEL?

I would, wouldn't you?....A rock to the head? It's a no brainer.

The records we get from the church go back 2000 years; we don't have current information that Mikel has. Mikel however knows things that the church doesn't select to share with the public, that are very true.

How did he know about Mar's being the God of Wine before he became the God of War? How do you go from being the God of a good time, to being the God of a really terrible time? How did he know that? We haven't said that since before the destruction of Atlantis. And only the MOST knowledgeable KNOW this. How did he know?

That's very coveted information. Guarded heavily by those only the top of the top trust. Even my teachers were impressed that I had discovered this information - FROM MIKEL.

And I am not allowed to tell you how much is true, but Mikel - KNOWS A LOT. It's as if Mikel knew more than the teachers, and the teachers can't figure out how he knows so much. We're talking NEW, VERY NEW INFORMATION, as in just happened.

The vortex is alive with activity. And Mikel was the first to tell us, and we have been watching this vortex for 450 years. He

just showed up to town, didn't even believe in vortex's till now.

We are a church and we know and believe there is a vortex here in Tucson that can open Hell's Gate. Mikel is a Christian, so of course he doesn't truly believe or understand what's happening to him, cause - we the church have always said - those people are crazy; for your own protection, of course.

That Vortex we have collectively watched for over 400 years, happens to be Hell's Gate. We don't tell you about the vortex, so people won't play with it. Hell's Gate is nothing to play with, if you get what I am saying.

My only advice to you is do what Mikel says. Mikel says go out and enjoy your life more. Quit working so hard. Go have fun. Be with your kids and grandkids. Get your bucket list done. That's just good advice -

apocalypse or not. Besides, we might be out of time.

Anyone seen Mikel lately?

Where's he been?

He happens to be the Martyr of the Apocalypse and you don't know or even care, where he is? He is a church member, and you still don't care what's going on in his life? Is he just eye candy to you? You know he's homeless. But you don't care to help – none whatsoever. Man. ya'll are supposed to be CHRISTIANS, what is your problem.....

Being the Martyr of the Apocalypse, it might be nice to have him close by and safe don't 'ya think?

No? Just don't care? Think it's all fake? Just something to do between 9 - 11am on Sunday? Well, I'm sad.

Shit, you guys. So, you think this is just a bunch of crap? We might actually have screwed ourselves again, pardon my French - again.

If you'll excuse me, I'm going home to spend some time with my family, while we still have some time. Don't bother me unless someone else need's EXORCISM. And I mean ANYONE.

I don't know what you're going to do about church on Sunday. I won't be there. And you deserve this, cause this is not MY church. My church wouldn't treat ME this way, so don't bother me. Not this week. I need time alone with my family right now.

Chapter 44.
ABEL CHECKS IN
WITH THE
GRANITE MOUNTAIN SHADOW
CREW

That night at the vortex -

SHADOW REPORT - but before you say
a word SHADOW - I need to talk to the new
recruits.

Eric? How's it going? Can you do the
job? All right, tell me everything. Eric, I know

it's bad and shocking that is why it's called WAR, there's nothing that will surprise me after 600 million lifetimes of this, I've heard it all.

Well shit! That's a new one.

That surprises me? I'm disappointed in myself - I thought I couldn't be surprised. That surprises me, too. Damn. I'm surprised, that I'm surprised. That surprises me too - this is a first. That disappoints me. I'm surprised that I'm surprised. Well that makes sense. Ok. Thanks for the help. How you liken it - the new job?

Eric, admit it, you miss getting a haircut, don't you? That's what I'm fighting for buddy. Hang in there. It gets better. Beautiful galaxy we have isn't it? Can you believe you were ever so small? Amazing isn't it.

Worth saving, I think. Thanks for your help Eric. And I am impressed. Great first report. Don't Do that impressing me shit anytime soon, cause YOUR just like D-MAN, can't tell you what to do or - you will do it. You should've seen the job he did when I said that!!!! Ok, back to work. Just take it easy on me next time. You trying to kill me with a heart attack?

Hey Eric, do you guys ever take showers? No I'm asking cause I never get to take showers and I'm the General. They just don't let me. Even if I give them cash.

I just want to make sure their treating you men like family, cause they don't treat me like family here, and I'm trying to save these little shits.

But you could if you would, right? OK. Good. Back to **work**

GRANITE MOUNTAIN HOT SHOTS.

Chapter 45
The Dissension

MIKEL, we have to do it again.

Ascend?

Yup. But were going down this time. I have to check in with brother.

What?

He who can ascend, which you did last week, can also descend - we wrote that down, didn't you get the message? Put it in parenthesis too. You know how hard that was to explain - what is a parenthesis 2000 years before we ever invented one.

It's ok. No one reads the bible anymore. Too many other good books out there. Competition is fierce. You know that, having wrote a book. Hang on Mikel, you'll like this better, I promise.

My people aren't so stuck up. And they're friendly. I promise, no one will hit you this time.

But where are we going to descend, ABEL - we're at the central Tucson Valdez Library.

You ascended the other day at the Ronstadt, Mikel. So we will descend - Right here, that's why we put these libraries where they are, so our gates don't get messed with. Hold on Mikel.

The two began the dissension.

Oopps wrong floor. I know we need to talk, but we can't talk now. I'll be back. I promise. Shit, I bet that pissed him off. But that's normal for him to be pissed off at me. Everything is always my fault. Sucks being the General sometimes. Everything is always my fault.

Especially with that guy. SATAN hates me.

Precious, how are you?

We are wholesome and we are bountiful.

Good cause I wasn't meaning to stop. I haven't used this gate in a while. I have to visit with TROLL. Glad your all right. But listen, Precious, since I'm here - I have a favor to ask of you. I started the Apocalypse, and I need you to create for me one of your precious protection stones.

Apocalypse? Another one, General TOTH?

I'm trying to save the world, Precious, don't give me any grief.

I had to get my brother to come down here, so he could see for himself what his problems are, come up with his own solutions. It has to be done this way.

Can you not handle your brother?

Oh, I can handle him - sure. But I was asking more for MIKEL'S safety than I was my own. You know how big CAIN is. He's even

big for his type. I like MIKEL, and I don't want to lose him. As big as CAIN is, he might squish him like a bug. Can't let that happen.

I will comply gladly, General TOTH.

Precious you are the best at what you do. That's why I leave you alone. Thank you.

Man, I love Precious. Never a complaint or problem from her.

That's a girl?

We think so.

TROLL, brother, so good to see you again.

ABEL, brother, where you been for the last 10k years?

Brothers had me tied up, slave implanted for 1,600 lifetimes. Can you believe it? Man, the things he does just to win. Oh well. What can you do? How are things down here?

We're running the phoenix hot, very hot. But that's only because of the threat. I have to release pressure, ABEL. I have no choice. We either release the pressure now. Or we release the pressure later, after we go super nova.

Well we don't want that, and I know SATAN is pissed off at me, it's hotter than hell in there right now. Ok we have to release pressure, I agree. Can you get your crew to find alternatives, like release the pressure under water, somewhere that the humans don't live?

ABEL, I need to release a lot of pressure. More than normal. I've been maintaining with 10 and 15 % pressure release. This is almost an emergency. I truly need to release 60 - possibly even as much as 70%. It's tricky to find new spots, takes time to find locations. I need to release pressure now to keep from going nova.

I understand, brother, I do.

I might not be able to find new locations that won't affect the humans.

Well, we deal with this all the time. They will overcome as they always have, but can you get it done without another Pompeii event.

I think I can-

You think? Or you know?

Who do you think you're talking to, 'lil brother?

I know you're the best. I give you permission to release pressure by 30%. If you need more, I will allow upwards of 70%. This might actually help me out. I started the Apocalypse.

You did what? Again, Why? You two still fighting? ABEL????

Don't ask me why, I'm trying to save the world. Man, I'm gone for an eon or more, and you think I've lost my rank. I'm the General, YOU can't talk to me like that. Well that's not true, you can. And releasing 70% would make the world and CAIN'S crew think it's an Apocalypse without me having to use my Apocalypse. You know what, I want to get their attention, make it 45% pressure release.

I thought you didn't want to harm humans.

Do I need to make my request an order? Just don't sink California yet. Not without my command, I love George Lucas. Don't want to have to kill George Lucas. Not yet.

Nope, 45% it is.

I gotta go. Man, you're so lucky to be down here. So nice and quiet here. You should see the way they carry on upstairs. They give me the biggest headache. Always whining and complaining. Can I just sit here for a moment and enjoy your peace and quiet you have? Besides I might not get to see you again for another eon, brother.

Of course, little brother. Your family. You know the rule we have down here. Be good or be gone. You are always welcome here, 'lil brother.

I wish CAIN had that one rule. He has too many rules. Thank you, man, you're so lucky. I wish I were you sometimes. It's a

mad house upstairs. All ways fighting. They drive me crazy. And they believe that they can't do what we know they can do. They insist on dying first, I'm getting sick of it. TROLL, brother, I don't want to leave you. I may not see you for another eon. But I have to go, gotta tend to my Apocalypse business and saves this world.

Take care little brother. Good to see you again.

Tell Brother CAIN we all say hi.

Chapter 46

The Betrayal

That afternoon on Fourth Horseman Avenue in Tucson Arizona.

ABEL, who is that one guy that is always looking at us strange and why won't you talk to him?

That's an old friend, MIKEL. Well we used to be friends. You don't call on those guys for no other reason than an emergency. They're the 9-1-1 of spiritual help. They are the Hells Angels. The Red and White. The Salvation Army. My first crew. And that man there is my first victim of betrayal. I had to

betray them, MIKEL. They know something is going on, but we can't talk. We don't talk. I betrayed them.

Mikel, as you well know, before Jesus, I had other converts. As I have told you this is just a prison, still is. So, all I had was Convict converts, the red and white, my salvation army.

The Salvation Army was and is a good thing, but I can assure you - too many rules for a guy like me. And no one was ever going to help a convict. Or listen to a convict. Wouldn't you agree?

So, I betrayed them.

I said to my second in command, which is who that happens to be, *"Malfreth, you will be named Malforth from now on. This is to remind all of us of the 4th Apocalypse we have just endured. We do not want another Apocalypse. None of us do. Malforth, I'm the leader of this crew. I created us. We have overruled ourselves. Too many rules. I don't have to put up with this. I created us men. I'm the leader of this*

crew. Too many god damned rules. I'm sick of this shit. Time for some changes..... Malforth - I'm- FIRED."

- It wasn't in the rules, and it was definitely a betrayal -

Well, there's only one place for a Hell's Angel to go, especially one that wasn't being an angel anymore, wouldn't you say - the idea worked. But there had to be two betrayals, in order to ascend both armies. - That just got me into the Army of Darkness - which I prefer to call dorkness, Army of Dorkness.

The betrayal that got me through the damned was - the chosen ones, CAIN'S chosen people, WW2, and the holocaust. The supersized, systemized, totally legal killing machine that's historically called the "(I do not see pigs".

I had a chip on my shoulder about Jesus - Jesus of Nazareth. I had a point to make. And a resentment to settle. Another lesson to teach to CAIN'S precious few.

Chapter 47

The Hollow Cost

Hitler, as I have told you before and you well know, was me in another life. We all know about Hitler and the Jews, I had to show the chosen one's what government approved, and sponsored killing was like. There were also two other reasons. REVENGE. And the betrayal so I could ascend the Army of the Damned. I wanted the punishment. It was part of the payoff for me. Not only would I ascend the Army of the

Damned, but I would also flesh these
immortals out for good and prove my point.

The chosen one's were supposed to
"heal GOD'S PAIN", on my brothers' behalf.
That was the deal. The messiah comes, and
changes the law, dies, and CAIN'S chosen
ones would heal god's pain with a piece of
his flesh.

They did this, sorta. They had Jesus
killed, yes, they did. They took what they
needed to " heal god's pain" - but they
never healed god's pain. And I suspected
that they kept the secret to themselves. So, I
had something to prove. Not just to them,
but also to myself - and my brother.

*How do you like being in a gas
chamber with*

*599 dead friends, neighbors, and
relatives - And somehow your still alive? How
did that happen? How did you do that? Don't
worry. You don't have to answer that, I
already know. I know how you did it - and
just to prove I'm right; you get to witness this
brutality, over and over - again and again -
while I find the others of you, and you can*

*keep telling me, keep lying to me, telling me
- I don't know, I don't know, I don't know how
I survived.*

I bet you do. I know you do.

*Because I got this 'little hunch you do
know how you survived - which is exactly
why I did this to you. All of you. Capiche?*

*Just remember, I did nothing wrong
the way you did, this - all this - it's the law -
.....*

*How do you personally like
government sponsored killing and being in a
special club now?*

Yeah, I bet you don't like it. Not now.

*Do you think you can share? Can you
share - now? Like your secret to survival
inside of a gas chamber, when everything
else around you dies?*

Don't worry, I know how and why you survived. I do. I just don't know why you lie. Like why do you tell people that Elijah will come in a postapocalyptic world, but you don't tell them we are in the 4th post-apocalyptic world?

*I hope I do get sent to hell for this. All of them. That's EXACTLY why I am doing this. I deserve it. That is **absolutely** why I am doing this. And as you can tell, I am on top of the world. No one can stop me. Nothing can stop me. I will find all of you. All of you.*

MIKEL, you don't have to call me General Death. Please. If you must, call me Professor Death. Please call me Professor Death.

General is a job. It's a rank inside of a military. It's a terrible job. My real profession is teacher. We had to create the military to fight evil. Fight and evolve later. We tell you "thou shalt not kill", but you do. You all still do it.

We had to create something for this imbalance.

Hence forth the a.o.d.'s were created. The Army of the DAMNED was created for the purely evil and special cases of hate and mass murder. The Army of the DARKNESS for everyone else that just didn't fit into any other heavenly category. We created these Army's to keep shut the doors of your apparent freaky imagination.

MIKEL, you should see what I got at my command. They're ugly as all hell, literally.

- *Who's a big army of the damned? You are, yes you are. Yes, you are.*
- *Who's a good-looking Army of the Damned? Has a face only THIS General could love? You do. Yes, you do. Yes, you do.*

At ease, soldiers....That's an order

I prefer everyone call me teacher when I'm not at work. Please, MIKEL, call me ABEL - ABEL to do anything, or ABEL - TOTH - but do not call me little general - I'm the

teacher, I am Teacher Death. Or Professor Death.

That general crap is just a job. And I hate my job, just like you humans. Seems like we all have that in common too. Even my dad and CAIN complain about their jobs. So, don't feel alone. I don't want you to identify me with my job, as General. Not unless you would like to address me by my old profession as a teacher.

A long time ago, before I was the General, the God of Life and the God of Death got together. Life was new to the Galactic Council and also alone in the universe. Life said to my Granddad.

Hey, do you think you could help me out? I need some support. I'm new here and I need all the friends I can get.

UH - Life, don't you think this would be a conflict of interest, I mean, come on - who we trying to kid here, kid? I'm DEATH???

Well, yeah - but we can work something out. I know we can. Listen, I'm new here. I need all the friends I can get. We can figure something out - I know we can. Trust me, we can figure out an agreement that works for both of us, I know we can.

Those two, LIFE and DEATH, came up with your LIFETIME. 99.99% of all your species, every last one of them, and also four of your Earth's, have become lifeless and extinct.

99.99% that's a lot, wouldn't you agree?

You live your life anyway you want; we care not who you worship. We care not what sin's you commit. We will harvest your time at the end of your life, when you are done dying - this is done for negotiations with evil at the gate. The same once necessary, now very unnecessary- EVIL, that I have told you about already.

Evil, be reminded, is not physical. It is not spiritual. You cannot kill it with a bullet. You cannot kill it with a bomb. You cannot kill

it with spiritual commandments either. EVIL, the one I speak of, EVIL is not a force of nature. It's not a force of the spirit. EVIL is a force of the imagination. Does this make any sense to you MIKEL?

Now we, CAIN and I – we death's, we think you are grown enough for your next battle. The battle in our republic. With you humans having an equal vote. A vote inside of our galactic republic – which will become your republic, too.

Instead of fighting against you, CAIN and I will now fight for you. Defend you, because you will have enemies almost as soon as you arrive. No one likes change. Not anyone ever, anywhere in the galaxies.

And no-one seems to like their job either, so don't do that, get a stinking job. No-one likes those.

Timely and Accidental will, of course, have to be left behind. We each live and die by our own choices, right? And we can't stop gravity just because you have stepped into another evolution. The DEATH named Timely will have to change his name. I like "used to

have a job around here", but I can't run my democracy, I just cast ideas and vote.

However, since there will always be choices that don't always go your way, Timely will have to stay. Cancer. Purposeful. Untimely. Instant. Painful, and the other ones, will leave with me, when all this is over and its official.

DEATH said to LIFE -

"How embarrassed do you think I'm going to feel saying it - life has its place in our galaxy, a place in our republic? This is going to hurt me. I have a reputation to look after. This will ruin me."

And, so, I carry the torch of my grandfathers, to help life. And because of mom, and the humans. All contained inside the relative, MIKEL.

General DEATH, are you aware of your allegations? What are we of the Galactic Senate supposed to think of all the time you have wasted killing LIFE in all of the galaxy's?

Well, heaven look's beautiful now. Heaven looks great. You knew it was going to take a long time to get you all to look this good. Look at all of you. Heaven even has a girl's touch to it too. Thanks to my girl, Pesty. It was obviously going to take a long time to get you all this good looking...wouldn't you agree?

Our kind have evolved past death a long time ago. Life was forgotten and new to us. Then we discovered you. At first, outside of mother, all the republic was afraid of you - and your life.

Feared it. Your life killed our death to have you around. So, we banished you and your life from our kingdom. But as you cannot simply create, you can, also, not

simply destroy. As I have told you before,
MIKEL.

Life - in my opinion, as the General of the Army of the Damned, General to the Army of Dorkness, - see, I like it, Dorkness. It's a fit - not so scary. User friendly. I like it. Besides I'm the General, no one can tell me what I can't do. And I'm also the strike team leader to the Apocalypse weapon. ME, ABEL - TOTH, ME, General Death - little general death.

Life: I believe that LIFE, has a place in our galaxies. In our republic.

But "we" run a democracy, and I don't always get what I want in my democracy. I am, however, and forever on your side. Know that you are not alone. You have a friend in me, MIKEL.

Chapter 48

Earth Council with ABEL

That night at the vortex -

LIGHTS, report -

We haven't looked this good since the last time you were here, General.

Oh, twilight, you just made my millennia...

Shadow report -

They blame everything on you. Every little thing. It's ridiculous. They're running themselves in circle's...

Rah, SIRE.....

Ahoy, General.

Report, captain. Please, sire.

On time and on course.

On time, on course? When was the last time you said that?

Can't recall...Sire.

Me neither. Good.

Weather - report -

I am making a healthy come back. I'm stronger in some regions where they have no weapon against me. Your strike against the pilots has helped tremendously. I'm pleased to report.

Natural disaster, report, tell me - what do you have for me?

We've moved up to "K",

Good...pick up anymore please, report to me immediately. I need you to tie in with, Troll.

Precious, report -

We are wholesome and bountiful, we are one. We are at peace. Remember - all miracles happen at the last minute...General TOTH.

Thank you, Precious.

That brings me to MIRACLES. Captain Tripps and his ship of fools, report-

Grand Mother says when the cookies are ready. We will leave when the cookies are ready. We, will be there. We. Will. Be there.

MAYHAM – report,

I got the banks on the ropes, baby. I'm telling you WE GOT THIS ONE.

All, right, listen – I want ALL of you to know that as your General, it is my honor to take full credit for your work. You make this job look so easy.

It was my imagination that might have brought you all together, but I NEVER ANTICIPATED THE RESULTS I AM GETTING FROM YOU.

Never.

Team, it is my honor to be your General. I cannot be happier. The honor is truly mine; it truly is. Carry on. And keep impressing me, that's an order.

Chapter 49

ABEL'S LAST APPEAL TO PASTOR ALICE

That day on the North Side Church's Facebook page appeared.

Dear Pastor Alice -

MIKEL and I keep warning you. We keep telling you how to turn this around, this Apocalypse. With the love light. But you? Oh, that Mikel - he's just making fun of my religion. I don't like him trashing our religion.

No, I'm sorry but we are not trashing your religion. You however, are trashing everything we say...inside of your religion.

Look, I know that before the house fire MIKEL had a house full of material stuff. You also have and value all of your material stuff as well, I am sure of that. In fact, you value all this stuff more than one human life. And I know you do. I know you do. I see it each and every day; I know that all of you do. Especially when I see homeless people.

Homeless people everywhere.

Every city. Every town. Every nation.
Everywhere.

In this town, a town, mind you - that has 25% empty homes. At least that is what the 2014 USA census says, but just like your religion, how can you trust that stuff, right?

And then you have GOD. I know that you do, that's how we met. And I know that you want GOD to value this entire planet. This entire planet, and all the people on this planet, and all its valuable crap.

Yes, you do. You want GOD to value you and all others like you - more than one human life. Don't you?

Let's say that life belongs to her son.

Her only son.

That doesn't seem very fair. You want God to do something you cannot do equally for her.

Remember when Jesus gave the Sermon on the Mount? He said, you are the salt of the Earth. You are the love and light of the world. When salt loses its saltiness, the salt must be discarded, given back to the ocean. That's what it says, isn't it? Or something like that?

Now listen, we destroyed the plans for the light bulb during Pompeii, Atlantis, the Luna mission, Alexandria 1 - 09, which, as the General - this is all totally my fault, sorry about that.

That line, "love and light" - That was never supposed to say "love - (AND) - light". That was, and is, a mistake. Your language evolved faster than we could get you to create another light bulb. So, when the "and" was added, without my consent - this mistake has messed us up, royally. Pun intended. That "and" word has messed up, all of you and our first objective - getting the love light on.

I got mad when they did the “and” edition, but I can’t control MY democracy, so I just made it into a sarcastic comeback ...” and? And? And?..”

The original Sermon on the Mount was supposed to say – love light, and it does, sorta – But not love (and) light. Just – love light – only. We either accidentally, or on purpose, blew up each other, and the light bulb designs, over and over. And we didn’t invent another light bulb till Edison showed up 1900 years later.

Sorry about that. My fault entirely.

But look, without the love light turned on, we are doomed. Let me explain. Currently we have Jesus on his way to get us; but they can’t see us.

Have you ever lost your keys? I know you have. Ever lose them in a dark room? I know you have. Would it have helped you if you had a light inside this dark room – I know it would have. But what if your keys were lost inside a dark closet with millions of other keys, would the light still help you? Would it

help better if the keys that you were looking for had a light?

That's what the "love light" is for – it's our light to help us find you. And if we don't get that love light turned on, we are doomed. When Jesus gave this speech, SALT was the HVAC of its time. Salt was the fridge of the time. Salt helped preserve food. We spoke to people in the day's language, trying to fit in. That way the people could understand us easier. Salt back then was a preservative. Another way to keep food from rotting.

Salt was a preservative, just like you are here to preserve the Earth. We were trying to say "preserve yourself, your brother, and this Earth" the Sky, Water, Ground , and – as you now know, Below, down with Troll and Precious.

You are here to take care and preserve the Earth. Not something tasty sprinkled on top as you think of salt today. Because you have evolved past salt as a preservative and now use refrigerators to keep food from rotting this has lost its true meaning.

The bad part of this speech by Jesus is the last part – when salt loses its saltiness, it must be returned to the sea – that basically means - YOU WILL BE – FIRED - AND YOU WILL BE DISMISSED FROM THE EARTH AND EXISTENCE....capiche?

Thus, OUR problem.

This is not what we want to do, but a deal is a deal. It's written down. It's in the book. We have told you over and over to LOVE ONE ANOTHER. That is how the LOVE light comes on.

With the Apocalypse being on – this is how this works, each and every day we, as a group, either go up a degree, or down a degree. Total deed's combined. Good and the Bad. Ever boil water? At 110 degree's, it's just a bunch of hot water. But add ONE MORE tiny degree, and that changes everything, causes a great disturbance in the water. Now it's boiling water.

That's how the Apocalypse works. Slowly we will cook all of you – just like as if you were frogs, till the water is boiling, and the entire world destroyed – but don't worry

- that religion you worship is as real as my warnings. As real as all of the prophecies I have told you about. Look, you aren't going to the

RELIGIOUS WORLD of HEAVEN.

So, don't fear me trashing your religion, I'm trying to help you.

No, you are not going to the religious world of heaven. You are going to the spiritual world of heaven, am I correct? But listen, in order to get your spirit to heaven you must leave something behind, like flesh and bones.

But when a mother ship, like the one coming our way, when a mother ship squishes you, and destroys the entire universe, there won't be anything here to leave behind. Or save your spirit. Your chance to get to heaven, just like you all - will vanish.

We have to love one another; I know your religion says to do this. I know all of them do. Even the Jesus and Christian doctrines say to do this. But just like thou shalt not kill - I guess you still think we are joking?

Suit yourself.-

Yours truly

General DEATH

Chapter 50

MAYHAM'S BET WITH THE BANKS

I bet he **CAN** jump all five dimensions!!!!!!.

No funny looking hat, and WITHOUT the medicine bag.....

Put your money where your mouth is,
BANKS, - I bet he can? I bet you're wrong. I
bet you all the time we got -accept five
minutes.

We gotta deal?

Money?

How much money you talking about,
BANKS?

ALL THE MONEY. You sure about that?

I just want you to say it again and be
sure of that....

How much time I got?

FFFFFFIIIIVVVVVVEEEEEEE
MINUTES?

Five minutes...it is then.

ALL right, I like's me a challenge.

Sign here. Date here.

Sign here, and here.

And initial here here and here.

Shake on it?

- Picture time!!!!, smile - be back
shortly.

And MAYHAM and MIKEL slowly, very slowly walked down the hall MAYHAM laughing the entire way.

Aren't we in a hurry MAYHAM, we only have five minutes?

Yeah, I know – that's what makes this so funny, we only have five minutes. Mikel, you ever wonder how many infinite moments there are in a "five minutes", let's find out. Oh, Mikel, did they just mess up big time. They might have and need time machines for themselves, BUT I DONT. I'm MAYHAM; I'm a demigod. I'm omnipotent. I can go anywhere and be there at any time instantly. I'm going to have fun with this. Let's go. We got this one baby.

WE GOT THIS ONE BABY. We got em this time for sure. They will have to pay up. Oh Baby, have we GOT THIS ONE. Boss gonna be so happy with me.

Chapter 51
THE CATHEDRAL

That night at the vortex -

Gabriel, I have a problem. Tell Gabriel what you asked me earlier, MIKEL, cause I can't tell him everything.

I'M TIRED OF RUNNING FROM THE VORTEX and I asked what would happen if I didn't run next time the vortex opened.

- next time?

Well, what can I do, Gabriel? I can't tell him everything, you know the rules.....

Well the next time became this time, and the vortex began to open.

Don't run ass whole, you wanted to find out and I can't tell you EVERYTHING. So, we about to find out, MIKEL. Hope you survive.

Mikel, when are you just gonna be satisfied? Don't worry about that, Mikel, that just means your evolving. Runs in the family. Ok son, I hope you get what you want. Man, I hope you make it, too, because I really like you and I hate diapers. I truly hate being in diapers, I do.

Ya'll don't always wake up either. Shit, I had the A.O.D kill Meryl Haggard and Prince to prove it to you, and that wasn't enough. But you still need to learn. OK, let's go learn something.

MIKEL, I can't tell you everything so, hold on – don't you run, let's find out what happens together. Ready?

Don't know what to say other than hang on and hang on very very tight. And try to stay close to me too. Capiche?

Ready here we go.

MIKEL, do you believe in prayer? Might help us, I have never really tried it before,

being stuck here and all for 600 million lives...I gave up on it many lives ago.

So, there they were, wherever they were. And MIKEL was the size of a bug literally. He was a sphere of blue. And he was very small compared to everything else that was there with ABEL and MIKEL. MIKEL Never felt this size before. Ever. Under foot size, too.

And since this was an astral plane, and a spiritual plane, people, things, critters and whatever that was..... would walk in every imaginable direction.

Mikel, where are you? Stay close to me.

I'm not used to being this small, ABEL, or even being stepped on, ABEL. What's going on?

MIKEL, this is the Galactic Senate. I'm trying to shut off the Apocalypse. We are also answering your dumb question. Like it? Like your new discovery?

MIKEL, stay close to me, you're embarrassing me.....

There were all sorts of things to look at. And what MIKEL noticed above all else.

- THERE IS **NO SUPERIOR RACE.**-

THERE'S NOT EVEN A SUPERIOR CRITTER, ANIMAL, SHAPE, THING, OR EVEN. - DON'T KNOW - WTF - THAT IS.

- ABEL - Uh, hmm, ABEL?

MIKEL, DUMB QUESTION, DUMB QUESTION, WHAT HAVE YOU LEARNED ABOUT DUMB QUESTIONS?

What have you learned? Haven't you learned anything yet? You wouldn't be here if

you didn't ask such dumb questions, you truly want to find out? I can make that happen for you.

MIKEL shut up. Yes, he did, real quickly.

And then MIKEL was eaten. Got eaten while he was there, which was odd.

Hey, give that back to me, you can't do that anymore. Give that to me. That was on the floor. Gross.

What, Mike, you think you're the only thing without manners around here? Didn't you see how that thing was dressed. This is the Galactic Senate for Christ sake....The nerve of some things, eating humans off the floor, gross. One step at a time MIKEL. First manners. Then no humans. Sound good to you? Baby steps MIKEL. We are only looking for baby steps.

A centipede walked by MIKEL and ABEL wearing all kinds of shoes. Nike. Adidas. Vans. Pumas.

Imagine the market value in a customer like that MIKEL, all those shoes.

What would it be ABEL?

I just said imagine it, we're in heaven, there is no market here - we get everything we want.

MIKEL, what did you think of the Galactic Senate?

Looked like Yankee Stadium.

CAIN'S favorite baseball team. Mine's the California Angels - circle a, red and white, - CA = CAIN + ABEL -that's my team. CAIN'S team, what can I say, they're the Yankee's. Gotta be the pen strikes.

On our way

back -

Well there it is Mikel.

What's that? The EARTH?

Oh no, MIKEL, that's the relative. See how small it is, just a grain of sand - inside all of this.

Holy shit.

We call this the closet, but I like your name for it, cause that is exactly what it is. OUR HOLY SHIT. Look you're the only blue one left. Now you see why we can't find you. Place is a little cluttered, our fault completely.

The relative?

Yeah, the relative, what did you think I was lying? One grain of sand in a mighty vast beach of creation?

No, I thought I had some talent. I thought I made that up. Now I realize I didn't write a book. I just reported. Thought I had some talent for a minute.

Don't worry Mikel, you got plenty. You got plenty coming.

Chapter 52

The Blue Wood Tree.....

MIKEL, have you ever seen a REDWOOD TREE? I know that you have. Tallest tree in the tree business, am I right? I know that I am.

But have you ever seen a REDWOOD TREE SEED? I know that you haven't, that's the smallest seed in the tree seed business.

MIKEL, that is what you are. You and everybody here, including this planet and those stars. Ya'll are the BLUE WOOD TREE - SEED - at this moment - OF THE ENTIRE GALAXY'S. At this moment ya'll are very small, just like the redwood seed. But soon,

after we find you, I hope, you will grow up -
in the image of a GOD.

But just like your Daddy here on Earth,
well maybe not you personally, but mildly
and normally speaking, the children grow
bigger than their DAD'S. That's not my fault
about you. I honestly can't tell you what
happened there MIKEL. You're just short,
MIKEL. Your just short.

Your kind, if I may, are made in the
image of GOD. CAIN and I are made from
God's, and we are just demigods. You will
grow, if we survive, to know and be bigger
than CAIN and I both combined. You will
become and grow to teach us things we
didn't already know. And you already have
so far. Trust me MIKEL, you alone have
showed and taught me many things about
love and family.

Chapter 53
ABEL CHECKS IN WITH
GRANITE MOUNTAIN SHADOW
CREW

SHADOW , report, but before you say anything, - I need to hear from your new recruits.

Eric, Granite Mountain - how are we doing? Can you handle the job, Eric? Alright, good, that's what I expected to hear from you, tell me what you got - hmmmmm, ok,,,,,hmuf - shit.

Eric, please tell me, how'd you like sleeping with your wife again? Don't cry Eric. There are always shadows in dark places. That's why I put you and the other men here. I knew you'd like that; I knew you would. It's one of the perks of the job.

That's why I put you here. I told you, we are family, and I wanted to show you some gratitude. Eric, trust me - I know, even heaven can be miserable without the ones you love. , So I put you somewhere that you could be with them all the time. You like it? Good.

Eric, please tell the GRANITE MOUNTAIN HOT SHOTS, I don't have enough room in the story for every man's name, or for all of our accomplishments. Not for the book but I will get you all in there somehow. I promise you that. I promise. And I will tell all your family about the perks of being part of an elite shadow crew. That you are always with them, even in the darkness of night. There are shadows in dark places.

Boys - impress me. That's an order, which you're doing fine at, now be great about it.

Listen, Eric, forget the old assignment. Do this new assignment for me, please. I need you to shadow my brother. CAIN is going thru some changes and I need to know his progress. And keep a close eye on all his minions. You will know right away whether or not you need to tell me something, so be gone and do well.

Copy that?

- be at peace Granite Mountain that is all. Thank you for the service.

Chapter 54

ABEL TAKES COMMAND OF THE AXIS OF EVIL

I just had a new idea MIKEL! Come on let's go.

That night at the vortex -

You MIGHT be EVIL - YES you may, but you weren't always evil. And one time long ago, you were a necessary evil, yes you were. But now, you serve - yourself, that's fine by me. I kind of like it like that. I like it that you do, watch this...

Because in order for your innocent self to become EVIL, you had to travel through a lot of darkness to make your final decisions. And you might be 99% EVIL - yes you may, however, and I know you're going to love this -

THAT AUTOMATICALLY MAKES YOU 1% DARK.

One is a number that contains a value.

That puts you under my command.

WELCOME TO MY ARMY OF DORKNESS. NOW - Fall in line, or face deserter consequences.

That's an order. Get used to this baby.....

I COMMAND THE FORCES OF DARKNESS,
AND 1% IS ENOUGH A NUMBER THAT WE CAN COUNT. IS IT NOT? BANKS? Don't you agree?

WELCOME TO MY ARMY OF DARKNESS.

NOW CEAST AND DESIST ALL EVIL ACTIVITY'S IMMEDIATELY OR SUFFER ETERNAL HELL, DEM'S DUH RULEZ, and we have to follow the rules, that's also in the rules. The General calls the orders - your peon ass just does whatever I say...

WELCOME TO MY COMMAND, YOU ARE NOW UNDER MY AUTHORITY.

DESCENT, AND YOU WILL SUFFER.

INSTANT, ETERNAL, PAINFUL, VERY
PAINFUL, and GRUESOME any sign of
dissension, attack them immediately -

THAT'S AN ORDER.

GO AHEAD AND DESCENT -

BANKS

SYSTEMS

INSTITUTIONS

JUSTICE

MILITARY

YOU ARE - hereby -

UNDER THE AUTHORITY OF THE
GALACTIC COUNCIL, Commanded by ME,
ABEL - TOTH. I am - ABEL TO DO ANYTHING.
But I prefer you just call me YOUR WORST
got damned NIGHTMARE.

I am THE GUARDIAN. AND GENERAL
OF THE ARMY OF DARKNESS. GENERAL OF
THE ARMY OF THE DAMNED. THE ETERNALLY
DAMNED. ALL OF THEM. I KINDLY REQUEST
YOU STAND DOWN OR PERISH AN ETERNAL
DEATH IN HELL.

THAT IS NOT A SUGGESTION.

THAT'S.

AN.

ORDER.

HOW CAN the soulless - RELIGIOUS
INSTITUTION - TEACH ME ABOUT THE SOUL?

HOW CAN A JUSTICE SYSTEM, WITH NO
CONSCIOUS TELL ME WHAT is RIGHT AND
WHAT is WRONG - WHEN SO OFTEN, THAT
VERY JUSTICE SYSTEM IS SO WRONG AND
ALMOST NEVER RIGHT - SO MANY TIMES,
Eric Garner, enuff said.

Even when the violence and murder
are recorded, still the justice department
say's "no harm done here". Fuck that, tell

that to his daughter and my pride in Law Enforcement and the justice department.

HOW CAN A "just - us" SYSTEM, WITH NO CONSCIOUS, or fear, or redemption paid, BE FAIR, AND TEACH FAIRNESS - WHEN IT LACKS THE KNOWLEDGE AND THE EXPERIENCE, TO BE EXACTLY WHAT IT PREACHES TO ME IT IS?

Fair AND balanced, THAT'S FUNNY.

ESPECIALLY - WHEN HISTORICALLY SPEAKING - IT HAS NEVER BEEN FAIR. NEVER BEEN BALANCED. AND, historically speaking, HAS ALWAYS PLAYED FAVORITES. HISTORICALLY SPEAKING, MIND YOU.

Well, you know what I mean.

THEN, THERE IS THE VALUE SYSTEM - HOW CAN A SYSTEM THAT DOES NOT VALUE THE PLACE THE SYSTEM IS ON ,TEACH ME TO VALUE THE PLACE THE SYSTEM IS ON?

How can a value system like this TEACH me VALUE?

It doesn't.

IS THE SYSTEM IN PLACE MORE
IMPORTANT THAN THE PLACE THAT THE
SYSTEM IS ON?

I SAY NO. And the place, the Earth, the
very place the system is on, can't be
replaced but the system can, trust that.

WE VALUE THE \$, OF COURSE WE DO -
BUT WE WOULD RATHER KILL SOMEONE WE
KNOW, (two of them was my request) FOR A
SIGN THAT I AM HERE, THAN GIVE ME A
BUCK TO SAVE THE WORLD.

AND IT'S ALSO BECOME MORE
IMPORTANT TO MAKE A DOLLAR KILLING
OTHER PEOPLE, AND THE NATURAL
RESOURCES OF THE PLANET, THAN IT
WOULD BE TO SPEND A DOLLAR AND SAVE
EVERYTHING. SAVE THE ENTIRE WORLD.

ALL RIGHT, I WILL GIVE YOU \$2.00 TO
KILL
THE EARTH, IF YOU WILL GIVE ME \$1.50 TO
SAVE EVERYTHING. STILL MAKING VALUE
WITH THAT DEAL, AREN'T YA?

NO?

YOU WANTED TO BE THE 1% ENOCH,
NOW YOU ARE.

ENOCH, YOU WERE BANISHED A VERY
LONG TIME AGO FOR YOUR CONVERSION
INTO EVIL AND GIVING UP THE FLESH. YOU
THOUGHT THE FLESH WAS THE HUMAN'S
WEAKNESS.

YOU'RE WRONG. BEING PHYSICAL IS
WHAT THEY DESIRE BACK HOME. YES,
ENOCH, THERE WAS A TIME A LONG LONG
LONG LONG - VERY LONG TIME
AGO - THAT this evil system was a necessary
"evil".

TO CREATE THIS SYSTEM, we HAD TO
CREATE THE VALUE AND INSTILL IT INTO OUR
STUDENTS - THE HUMANS.

But that time has come to an end. Just
like every 12/ 31, at midnight every year.
Time for a new time. GAMES UP ENOCH.

THERE IS NO ROOM FOR EVIL IN THE
KINGDOM OF DARKNESS. A KINGDOM THAT
WE SHARE WITH LIGHT, LOVE, AND THE
INNOCENT'S.

THERE WILL BE NO MORE EVIL HERE,

THAT IS AN ORDER.

FROM THE GENERAL DEATH.

CAPICHE, ENOCH?

ENOCH, YOU ARE NOW UNDER my
command. All you 1% of you DARK TWERPS.
Every last 1% of you, too.

Chapter 55

ABEL'S LAST APPEAL TO PASTOR ALICE

That day on the North Side Church's Facebook page appeared. -

Dear Pastor Alice -

I totally understand about "needing a sign". I do. I do. I truly truly do. Believe me I do, and so do my A-team. We do. We know that you need a sign - but look, how many do you need?

13 ain't enough? I mean there are the signs written in the Bible, and the five-blood moon's - with the final blood moon being on MIKEL'S birthday 9/28. Then we also have the Aztec Calendar that ended the very same day we published - durrrrr - the awakening. Don't you normally wake up when the alarm goes off - I mean normally? What am I doing wrong?

I realize you want a sign you can share with people everywhere. So fine. I will give you one. I mean who's gonna be able to visit

Tucson, to see all of our signs after we destroy it? So maybe this will help.

Ready?

Up in the night sky are a group of stars that tell a story. The story of our fight and possible future victory. Look to the sky tonight and find the constellations of ORION.

To the RIGHT (as in RIGHT ALL THE TIME - RIGHT) is Taurus the BULL - as in the bull market. Taurus is in the shape of a "V". This "V" is made of five stars, and represents the AXIS OF EVIL, all five of them.

And to the LEFT, as in IF you don't listen to ABEL - TOTH. RIGHT NOW- as in right now - there will be nothing LEFT. To the left of ORION is SIRIUS. That's the Dog Star.

That star, the Dog Star, that represents EVERYTHING LOYAL TO MAN. Like his job, best friend, and children - the way they should be. Or should - SHOULD - always be loyal to their MAN.

OK. Let's begin -

When **Taurus** and **Orion**, (and everything loyal to man)- **Sirius** can quit fighting, **Vanquish** their **Vanguard** and desire for **Victory**, each of them kiss, make up, and have a **VALENTINE**, instead of fighting so much – then they can each have a **VICTORY**, and we can walk hand and hand together into history – AND NOT **VANISH**- THE SAME WAY THESE LEGENDS DID.

CAPICHE?

You wanted a mission impossible, and a sign from god that you can share with the entire world – here you go. Now get started with your faith.

I know, I can hear you now, “That’s too simple of a sign”. Sure, it is, and that’s why I thought of it before you did, now isn’t it? Isn’t it?

Listen, I can give you another sign – I can, I am the General that can make this happen – but call George Lucas for me, let him know I am destroying California cause you don’t have any faith in your religion and need a 70th sign, ok?

Tell Mr. George Lucas to get out of California because I don't want to kill George Lucas. I love George Lucas. And I'm not going to drop California into the ocean until George is safe.

And let me suggest, that if you do not follow your signs, and I, ABEL, end up destroying the world, you got to do this one small favor for me, please. I mean pretty please. This is so funny. You're going to love me for this.

I promise you will.

When you get to hell -

ASK SATAN, "WHERE'S THE MEN'S TOILET."

Pastor Alice, it's a long running joke, and I can't resist messing with that guy. I can't. I just can't.

The look on his face is priceless..... It's way too funny. Trust me. You're going to

need the laugh in your lifetime of torment.
I'm doing you the favor, trust me this time.

Pastor Alice, I placed those stars in that sky, in that order, so that tonight you could go outside, look into the night sky, and ignite the faith in your religion – have your very own, very personal sign that you can share with others.

Yours truly, General Death.

Pt.1

Things Remembered

Mikel, Quetzalcoatl started the “NO VOTE” after the Pangea vote. I begged him NOT to do this. We all voted back then; it was just the way it was. We had to create the “NO VOTE” just to keep Quazzi around. Plus, no one wanted the Great Whale to bail out on us. MOBY stashed Dad's ATF weed somewhere, and that Great White Whale

NEVER told anyone where he hid Dad's favorite weed. Next to dino dung, that was his favorite. Never.

Never told a soul. Told nobody. That Whale never told anyone. And once he lost at democracy, he wanted it back, as if he could. Democracy wasn't easy to create. And democracy is just not that easy to get back once it's gone.

Pesto – what is the Great White WHALE complaining about now?

Mr. Whale wants us to make the new ocean bigger, because he's tired of hearing our Beethoven so loud at night all the time. He says we play it too loud, and our laughing at himself learning to swim is keeping him up at night...He can't sleep with all our jokes and laughing.

Well, tell Mr. Whale, tell MOBY He should've waited for his TEACHER to evolve

and also say "I don't know, why DO you think we are listening to our Beethoven too loud? "
- But Pesto, listen, you have to yell real loud, as if he were way out in the water...ok.....
That's an order, Pesto. I'm building soldiers here, Pesto, and following orders is good for my soldier.

I would chase Moby's around everywhere, looking for dad's favorite weed. I knew he liked the good stuff.

"Your gonna tell me where you hid that ATF, Moby."

I'll never tell, ABEL. Catch me if you can, I've gotten better at this, ABEL.

MIKEL, things between the Great Whale and me got pretty personal. I told him and everyone in our feeble democracy of the time, "I will split the Pangea and make the ocean bigger - if that's what everyone

decided – fine. BUT ONLY if Mr. Whale stays AWAY, and I DO MEAN – AWAY, from my fish...all my fish. But that never seemed to stop him. I had to check up on him from time to time, and it was not always pretty.

Well. Well. Well... what do we have here? What is this Moby?

That looks pretty fishy to me?

You know, Mr. Whale those ARE my other fish too. I know they're different - that's why I call them PHISH.

Those are my fish too. Who is that?

Who are you? What's your name? Jonah? What's Jonah doing in here?

What are you doing in here Jonah?

*OOOOOHHHHHH, did you hear what
Jonah
said? You didn't? That's pretty funny with
your super sensitive hearing and all the noise
complaints, I get from you, Mr.
Whale. Jonah said he is fishing. How's the
fishing Jonah? You know Jonah, Mr. Great
White Whale here was trying to eat you, how
you feel about that?*

*If I were DEAD I'd be GRATEFUL the
fishing is soooooo good.....excellent.*

*WWWWWHHHHAAAAATTTT? Excellent,
Jonah said the fishing is excellent - doesn't
want to leave.....uh, oh. Just remember you
said that Jonah, just remember you said that.*

*I bet you want to vote on this now
don't you, Mr. Whale - two against one odd's,*

sound like democracy might be fun to play now?

OOOHHHH, it's too late for Democracy NOW!

Far too late for that. Yeah, not such a bad idea once it's gone. Tried to warn ya, but you wouldn't listen.

Jonah would've probably voted for you to keep eating fish. But, tell you what I think I'm gonna do, I feel like "trying to be nice" today. Jonah and I are gonna do a little fishing. For each fish I catch, the smaller your next meal becomes. Deal? Good.

Oh, there goes the great white shark, there goes the tiger shark, there goes the hammer head (a few days later)

Now how are you gonna survive off microscopic peon's? Don't ask me. I'm not the expert. But you soon will be. Look, you're just too big for that type of punishment. I feel like "trying to be nice here", so this is what I will do - I have a plankton uprising occurring, and I could use some help, so I will super-size your next meal, if you keep this deal - the two of us are good. But only for now.

Now, Jonah, can you help me haul these fish out of here? Stay away from all my fish Mr. Whale, and that means those phish too.....come on Jonah, weir outta here.

*Shit, I had The Great White Whale against the ropes, and I missed my chance to find out where he stashed that ATF weed. Damn, nothing goes my way.....ever. OH WELL, look at all this fish, what are you gonna do Jonah - NOT MY **PHISH** YOU'RE NOT. And you are one of my phish, Jonah..... what was that? Didn't think so?*

Now help me with all this fish, Jonah.

Pt.2

The Nickel revisited

Let me help you understand something when I use the nickel as a reference a second time – MIKEL. This time when you look at the nickel piece, this time around, Jefferson is the slave and the house is the master. Unlike last time.

Jefferson has been long dead and gone. But his house is still around, and has helpers to tend to its needs, just like Jefferson's slaves did. Does this make more sense now? It's a two-sided story.

Jefferson was a celebrated slave master, who had a house made famous because you could not see the slaves; but in reality, the house, now owned by the government, had become the new slave master. Jefferson dead and gone, he is now just an image worked and controlled just like a slave. By the government he helped

establish. A government with freedom to change.

They, each - Jefferson and the slave's - each needed the house - but the house no longer needs them. The house has new slaves, employees rather. But the employees have changed more than the paint that protects the house.

If the old slaves were there, they'd be of no use, cause they'd be dead too. Gone, buried and forgotten, another slave, I mean employee - will come to task and continue to serve the invisible master, the government that now owns and runs the Monticello.

The government, the same government Thomas Jefferson helped establish also own's the likeness of Thomas Jefferson. and ONLY the likeness of Jefferson. That's because the likeness of Jefferson could never match the ideas of the actual Thomas Jefferson - not in any way. NOT ever. It would be an impossibility the two are so different.

Why? It's just a house? Why should I care? You ask.

Because I can assure you that without slaves, or employees rather, tending to the Monticello - change would've come - the house would have rotted away. You can hide the slave, hide the slave master, and change either of them any way you like, as much as you like. Change is a constant. However, you can never escape the fact that even the king is slave to the servants. NEVER.

Chapter 57

The Truth about the Chocolate Chip Cookie

MIKEL, we had to try something different to get what we wanted out of CAIN. We tried everything, MAYHAM and I.

MAYHAM!! YOU ruined CAIN'S cookies!!!

Blame it on the little guy!!!!!!

Oh - good idea. Destroy the bunch, to get rid of the bad apple, I see where you're going , smart move, copy that..

HE LOVES 'EM!!! MAYHAM. What do we do now?

Blame it on the littler guy, maybe we can work it into our favor, Boss.

Well you can only hide from a lie so long, MAYHAM, but let's give it the best we got. I'd hate to ruin his opinion of you again. Weir abusing his forgiveness with you.

Or we are finding new limits to his forgiveness, Boss.

With this batch, we probably need that...

Chapter 58
Talk With ADAM
Revisited.

ABEL, what's your favorite animal that you have seen?

Well, DAD, I like them all, and they have ZOO'S here too, so I have seen a lot of your animals -

What's a ZOO, ABEL?

Let me finish, DAD. My favorite animal is

- THE CHILDREN OF THE EARTH.

No way, you really like those things, that was CAIN'S first creation. He tried to make a cricket, but kind of missed the mark. It was his first try, but you like it.

Yeah, I think it's perfect. Red eye's white albino skin, five-legged cricket grasshopper thingy living in the darkness – the symbolic reminder of the Salvation Army – it's puuuuuurrrfectly CAIN.

OH SNAP!!!! The calico cat. Now I get it...now I know what the imaginaries were trying to tell me to say to CAIN about the calico cat.

What other animal do you like ABEL?

That's easy dad, your MUSTANGS.

Chapter 59

The Emancipation of MAYHAM

As you well know, MIKEL, you are your father's father, your Granddad. The one you never met. And I granted you permission to join my "DEVIL" crew, because you wanted to "LIVED" again, and you brought me with you. That was part of the deal. And I told you, "remember you said that, just remember you said that."

MIKEL, we had to win. We had to discover the answer somehow. We don't need an ARMY OF THE DAMNED this big, with only a face a GENERAL could love... look at 'em.

WHO'S A GOOD-LOOKING ARMY OF THE DAMNED?

YOU ARE.

YES, YOU....WHO'S A BIG ARMY OF THE DAMNED? YOU ARE!! YES, YOU ARE. YES, YOU ARE.

At ease soldiers.

No one fighting a war was ever going to win a war. So, I had to do something different, but I also couldn't turn over my command to the CREATOR of WAR. You'd never win against that guy - NOT UNCLE ABEL TO DO WHATEVER HE WANTS WHENEVER HE WANTS - the GOD of WAR, dat would never happen.

I have to know, MAYHAM, why do they go back for their daughters and sons,- brothers go back for their brothers and sisters, the way vets always do during war. That's hell inside a prison, and they still go back, MAYHAM. But why?

While you're doing this assignment, MAYHAM, find me a time and place that we can get OUR mission done. Freedom for you and the humans. There has to be a chip in the armor somewhere.

Can you handle it, MAYHAM?

SIR. Yes, SIR.

.

.

.

MAYHAM, you are hereby - relieved of command. You are free, now. I am no longer your master creator. No longer your General. You will no longer have to listen to me - or - listen to me listen to Johnny Cash. I'm just your friend. And only your friend.

- If you would have me as a friend.

MAYHAM, I know you know the rule, but I'm going to say this to you one more time - impress me.....fuck all the "that's an order" bs - your free. You're a free man, MAYHAM, and a friend, I hope. Make me proud son. I will miss you MAYHAM.

Can you get it done, MAYHAM? Find me a time and place where we can save the relative and humans. Figure out for me why the humans always want to go back to prison Earth. Find a chip in the armor somewhere and let's get all of you your freedom.

Let's find out. You are dismissed MAYHAM. You are free to go and do this final favor to me.

Chapter 60
Let Me Help You

MIKEL, look I will draw this out for you
- watch this .

FORCES OF NATURE ARE -

LIGHT VS. DARKNESS

FORCES OF LIGHT & FORCES OF
DARKNESS

Those are forces of nature. You can't
run far from either of them. Not here. Not
ever.

What we are fighting now are -

FORCES OF THE SPIRIT - Those ARE

FORCES OF GOOD

&

FORCES OF EVIL

-OR-.

GOOD VS EVIL, or isn't it actually, or
better said, rather - evil vs. good - I mean
would anything "good" actually ever do

anything offensive to anything, evil or not?
Think about it?

Watch out! Get your gun's here they come, the nice people, they might want to help. Run.

Run. Hold me I'm scared. Tommy. Tommy. Where'd ya go????? Tommy.

HAVE HEARD OF THESE, I know you have.

Mikel, you trust me don't ya?

Well, if we add them all up....ABEL.

OH, MIKEL, where's that forgiveness I taught you. Come on. RIDE WITH ME.

The next day - on Fourth Horseman Avenue, Tucson Arizona.

ABEL, why won't you let me beg when you know I need to eat?

MIKEL, I'm trying something different. I am out meeking my brother. Don't I take

enough already. Every mother, father, brother, sister, aunt, uncle, cat, dog, house, job, career, money, soldiers, don't I take enough from you guys already? I can't ask for anymore from you, could I?

I am sorry you are stuck in the middle of this, MIKEL, but trust me, please. You are on my mind. You are always on my mind.

MIKEL, I think your NO money days are coming to an end - maybe sooner than we think with that book out, and our visit to the Galactic Senate. Just hold on. Hold your horses.

(That night on 4th Horseman Avenue - in Tucson Arizona)

DON'T TOUCH THAT, MIKEL. Just leave it. Levirate - there. I know you need it, but we need you to do this more. Trust me, trust 'ol ABE. Trust 'ol honest ABE. Let's just have a seat. Let's have some fun and find the owner of that wallet with the \$2,000.00 inside of it.

Sit here till it's done MIKEL, and don't touch that smoke in your hand until you get

this wallet back to its owner....sit down and wait. Just wait.

And that's what we did. We sat there till the wallet was returned successfully to its owner.

That night at the vortex -

He didn't accept the BRIBE - BANKS, now you know you can't stop it. This has to be done. We have a deal. And MIKEL didn't accept the bribe. We have to follow the rules, DEMZ DUH RULEZ. And we gotta follow the rules.

Then it happened.

CAIN FELL FROM GRACE.

Welcome to your prison, big brother.
First time here. You're my inmate now. Rise
and shine, sunshine. Time for us to take a
little walk. Welcome to Prison Earth CAIN.

(to be continued.)

The Road to Redempti on

Book Three

They say that CAIN caught ABEL playing with loaded dice.....

The Grateful Dead- Mississippi Half Step

EEEEYYYYEEEE, can't stand it. I know you planned it. Imma set it straight this Water Gate.....

The Beastie Boys- Sabotage

Feeling uninspired - I think I'll start a FIRE.....

Stone Temple Pilots- Creep

Life is a beautiful struggle.....

Swollen Members- Brand New DAY

What if God were one of us, just a slob like one of us. Blue Blue blue blue blue blue, blee blee bleeeeh - I wrote that.

DR. EVIL - The spy that shagged me -
What if GOD were one of us

This book is dedicated to:

Margarette, my first fan, with her word

“I couldn’t put it down.” Thank you.

The Public Libraries of West
Virginia.

The people that have helped along the
way of this very long and winding road

The City of Fairmont

The Wild and Wonderful Whites
family of West Virginia

)*(

Not to be forgotten - the homeless
Vets and homeless People of America.
Citizen.

Never give in.

In the United States of America there
are 3.5 million “homeless people” – there
are 18.9 million vacant homes. –

-Huffington Post, circa MAY 25th, 2011

My name is Mikel Neily, and I have seen with mine own eyes the size of “the relative”. I know exactly how small “WE”, every single one of us and the “relative” is. It is literally the size of a grain of salt.

It is amazing and beautiful. I have never seen anything so small, so tiny, so fragile, so delicate yet so beautiful. We are literally ONE speck of sand on a mighty big and vast beach, of creation.

And we exist inside of the “relative”.

The relative is our UNIVERSE. Inside the relative – our universe; is also another ----- **16 BILLION more galaxy’s.**

We live in one solar system, within one galaxy, with 16 billion other solar systems and galaxies. The scope of the relatives value is immeasurable.

We are hardly insignificant to ABEL, Infinite LOVE, GOD- and to myself.

To think that this battle for this seemingly tiny piece of property, on the beach of creation, this thing we call “LIFE” - the physical existence, known as “the relative” - this battle has gone on forever - would only be telling half of the story.

I will do my best to tell you the rest of the tale as it was interrupted when I was finishing the last story - the Reckoning. I will finish NOW what I missed putting into The Reckoning. And the story continues to EVOLVE.

This is what happened after the story of the Reckoning was published - as best as I can recall.

)*(

8

Chapter 1 **The First Days are the Hardest** **Part**

Pt.1

The city of Tucson, April 20th, 2016 -
Downtown Central Valdez Library -

That night at the vortex -

MIKEL, do you trust me?

I guess so, ABEL.

I'll accept that. I'll accept that. MIKEL,
I want to show you what I look like. What I
truly look like. I want you to see me for who

I am. I am more than just your soul. You have your own. I am just a soul mate, stuck inside of you and, also, a silly battle between my brother and I. And I want you to see me for who I am. I thought that this would only be fair, for you to see who I am.

I know I talk tough. I have to. I am the General Death of TWO army's - so I have to talk tough and be tough. But while I have this moment with you, I want you to see me for who I truly am. I want you to see me, so it helps you understand why what we are doing, and "why" what we are about to do - is so important. Are you ready, MIKEL? Don't be surprised.

□ And suddenly, before me stood a 9-foot-tall cartoon image of a young boy with brown eyes and messy brown hair. He was very tall, and holding my hand. I was too amazed to scream or do anything. I just sat there looking into ABEL'S brown eyes as he held my hand.

I told you, "Do NOT be surprised". This is what we look like back home, MIKEL. This is what I look like as your soul. MIKEL, a

very, very long time ago, we had to go through a black hole, and our flesh didn't make it. We lost our flesh. But, MIKEL, I feel this very deeply, we are about to win our flesh back. We - you and me, just have a few more steps to take. Tonight's step being the first, very important, step to take.

What's that?

Well, MIKEL, tonight, it would mean getting the BANKS to pay a bet. That's never been done before.

ABEL? Is that - is that really you?

Yes, MIKEL, I am just a boy. Barely 19 years old in your ages. But I am AGES old, MIKEL. Millions of them. My brother CAIN and I have been at this battle for eons.

I am the first and only HUMANOID demigod ever created with brown eyes - I was created in your image, and as you can tell, like you, I am out of place amongst my people. But I am also a PRINCE.

Like I said to you before, we had to get the entire empire through a black hole.

The flesh wasn't going to survive. So, the creator consolidated the flesh into just one tree. As the story goes, my mother and father were banished after four bytes were taken from this tree fruit. But they weren't banished, MIKEL, they were escaping.

LIFE is an escape from DEATH. GOD is LOVE. The "banishment" wasn't a punishment. It was an escape, from death and wars amongst other Gods. There is much I cannot tell you. I can't tell you everything, not just because of the rules - but because it would be an impossibility. It would be impossible to tell you everything.

Now, MIKEL, since you know what I look like, and have heard what I am fighting for - will you allow me to invite CAIN down here? It's prophecy MIKEL. It is time. And you are the one to do it. The only one I trust to do this.

I thought this to be fair - the only way to be fair - after all I have asked of you this winter. It's also the only way to turn off the Apocalypse Weapon, MIKEL. You and I are human, MIKEL, everyone else, as you can recall back home, is something different.

- The town clock of Tucson chimed ELEVEN. -

It's time MIKEL. I have to get back inside of you now, and you and I are about to make history. Again. MIKEL, you are my best friend. You have given me so much. I will repay you. And I know you can do this. I KNOW YOU CAN.

All right BANKS, he didn't take the bribe. It's prophecy. It's written down. It's in the rules. We have to follow the rules. That's in the rules. It has to be done, and it has to be done this way.

SEND HIM DOWN. SEND HIM DOWN RIGHT NOW. There's no other way. There's no getting out of this, BANK'S. A deal's a DEAL.

And within an instant I began to feel as though I were being filled from the inside, as though I were an empty vessel. Filled and pushed to a breaking point.

I can't do this, ABEL. He's too big for me. He's going to kill me, ABEL. ABEL make him stop.

Please make him stop. This hurts me.
SSTTOOPP TTHHIISS. Stop this now. He's
killing me.

You can do this, MIKEL. I would never
get you to do something I know you cannot
do. Hold on. He's almost all here.

I'm going to be crushed ABEL.

My jaw felt like it was going to crack
when he got to my mouth. My eyes felt as
though they were about to pop out of my
head. Blood started to come from my tear
ducts when he got past my eyes. And when
he reached the top of my skull, I felt as
though it was going to crack open, and I
thought I would die.

ABEL. ABEL. I can't do this, he's too
big. I'm going to die.

Yes, you can, MIKEL. I know you can.
MIKEL, please calm down. I know you can do
this. I know you can. We are almost finished.

And then the tears came. These
weren't my tears; these were tears of fear

and shame. My body started to shake and convulse.

Brother, what's happening to me. My body, it's shaking. What's happening to my eyes? Brother I'm scared. Hold me.

Welcome to Prison Earth, big brother. Welcome home, King CAIN. We have a lot to discover. Rise and shine sunshine. It's time for you to take a little walk around the good old prison Earth.

I didn't know it was mother, ABEL, please believe me. Please believe me. Please...please...., BROTHER, forgive me. It was a mistake. Don't make me do this. DON'T MAKE ME DO THIS. I didn't know it was mother. Don't make me do this, I can't be here.

I'm KING.

I believe you big brother, I do, but we - you, have to do this first. You're not a king here, KING. Here - you are MY inmate. Don't you forget that either, CAIN.

Brother, what's happening to me?
What's going on? Why am I shaking? Brother
- brother - hold me, I - I don't know what's
happening to me.

Those are their "emotions" CAIN. I've
told you about them. I told you, they feel
everything we feel, but they feel our feelings
a thousand times more than we feel them.
It's how their body responds to our feelings.
It's an emotion, CAIN. That's all it is.

You have to get a hold of yourself,
KING. I am with you KING. CAIN, listen to
me, MIKEL - he was born into this prison,
why don't you be as big as MIKEL. Be as big
as MIKEL is right now. MIKEL'S not afraid to
be in this prison. In fact, MIKEL calls this
prison HOME. You remember HOME don't
you?

What's happening to my eyes?

Those are tears CAIN. It's called
crying. CAIN, you think you don't belong
here - don't you? I understand. We've never
had the KING of KING'S here on prison Earth
before. This is your first time being here
since the war between us began and our
communion on my birthday.

But, CAIN, let me ask you how many of your tears are for what happened between you and mother, and how many of your tears are because you are afraid.

CAIN remained silent.

That's what I thought.

CAIN, we were born here. THIS IS YOUR HOME. Welcome home big brother. Welcome home KING. Let's be a big boy, get up, and take a walk. Rise and shine sunshine. It's time to take a walk. It's time to take a walk, CAIN.

Pt. 2

My name is MIKEL, and I guess I should fill you in – just in case book 3 is your first book you're reading in the series of Abel Vs. Cain. I don't truly know where to start; it's all been so odd. No less than three years ago I had a really good job and worked very hard. I had a two-bedroom apartment, car – life operated very normal.

And then on April 1st, 2014 my neighbor's apartment caught on fire. The fire spread and destroyed $\frac{3}{4}$ of the entire building before it was extinguished. This caused me to become homeless, and I lost everything – home, job, car.

I stayed around Phoenix for a while, almost two months, trying to piece my life back together on my own. I gave up on the idea when an angelic voice told me to move to Tucson. This angelic voice I have heard and followed all of my adult life. This is and was the voice that had kept me out of a wheelchair for life, and I was always raised to trust in God and do as God says. This voice had never let me down before, so even though I was very reluctant in doing so, I decided to once again trust in the Lord and follow His advice – and moved to Tucson.

I had just completed a school for HVAC training so quiet naturally I expected work to follow. However, nothing panned out.

I looked all over Tucson for work and old friends, but I found nothing. I had no idea why the Lord had brought me here to Tucson. And then my 45-birthday happened. I was living under a bridge – again – after suffering years of homelessness from a divorce. And now this time from a house fire.

I just couldn't do this anymore. I was mad at the Lord that had brought me here, the hard times had turned my family against me, "we don't want to talk to you till you're on your feet. Until you have a job house and car and money – do not call us. We don't want to talk. Your kind and my kind don't talk." This kind of talk from family makes you want to give up. So, I decided to commit suicide.

I survived, or in fact quit trying, because while in the process my father had called me on the phone. I hadn't received a call from my father in 10 years. I thought for sure he hated me. But he called me that night oddly enough just before the final fatal shot I had prepared for this moment. He told me he loved me, and I told him I loved him. We didn't talk long, but it was long enough to make me stop.

I have a bad knee and I twisted it over the course of the night. I got stuck under that bridge for an entire week, I couldn't walk anywhere. On one of the last days, that angelic voice took on a shape before me.

Years before Phoenix, before Tucson, I lived in Humboldt County California. – doing my best to stay relevant to my daughter's life during a terrible divorce. In Humboldt another odd thing happened to me, which is how these three stories came to be. I had been given, without my knowledge, a bunch of PCP – 10 grams – and this event caused me to crack. Under all the pressure I was dealing with far from home, new life and the child being taken away – plus my broken fire career, I snapped.

But before I totally snapped, I ended up in a hotel room with a guy that was in a wheelchair.

As soon as we sat down, I started calling him CAIN; and he started calling me

ABEL. We talked for four hours about all sorts of things. But the oddest thing was “not destroying the humans.” This is how all of this started. I didn’t mention any of this to anyone till I wrote my first book The Awakening. When the Lord showed up, once again my soul ABEL awoken, and he and his father talked for hours.

I’m as human as you are – I rationalize, deny and debunk most anything I do not understand or that is unexplainable. But these events with ABEL, ADAM, and CAIN cannot be denied. Each of the events lasted for hours and even days after ABEL could talk to, or through me. Both events lasted days even though they were years apart.

When Adam’s visit was over, ABEL woke me up out of a dead sleep, and we started writing The Awakening. Thirty days later and using the rest of the money I had at my disposal, I published my first book – ABEL vs. CAIN: The Awakening. Because of the annual Tucson Gem and Mineral Show, after 90 days I had one copy of the book on

six different continents. This was all ABEL'S doing, and doing this had destroyed a 300-thousand-year-old spell on the Earth.

I was very proud of myself, and thought it'd be a while before I had enough imagination to complete another book. On the night of publication, I was hit in the head with a rock in my church parking lot while I was on my way to my friend Robert Johnsons house.

What happened next, I could've and would've never imagined on my own, ABEL, my soul, started the Apocalypse. At first, I thought this was just a joke. That my mind was playing tricks on me. But then the vortexes started to open.

The ground will start to shake when a vortex opens. Reality will crash into them. For a guy like me who's never been in a vortex or even in control of a vortex - it can scare the hell out of you.

And in the meantime, ABEL conducted his Apocalypse, and my life became very scary. I was raised in the church and always taught that people that channel spirits were fakes, and that vortexes weren't real. But the events before me made it perfectly clear to me that these things are very very real.

Which brings us to where we are now. In order to turn off the Apocalypse Weapon, and because ABEL would have it no other way, CAIN, his brother, would have to descend. And by descend, I mean descend into me – my body. In short, on this night, I was literally filled – and almost killed – with the HOLY SPIRIT of CAIN.

There are two verses in the Bible. You can find them in Romans. They are in chapter 10. They are verses 6&7. Each of the verses talks about an ascension and dissention in order to bring Christ back to life from the dead. I didn't know this at the time, but like the experts say, "we are living through the end of times." And I was in the midst of fulfilling prophecy. Tonight.

This is the best I can do to catch you up, if this is the first book in the series that you've started reading. I started this book Road to Redemption with the left-out chapters of the Reckoning. And I write this day February 1st, 2018 – this story is ever expanding developing and growing. But let's take it one chapter at a time, and let's see if I can explain some of the really crazy events, I have endured just to bring you a book you can enjoy. This should get you caught up.

Chapter 2

Don't you worry anymore

The city of Tucson, April 20th, 2016

Downtown Tucson Central Valdez
Library-

That night at the vortex-

CAIN, I want you to know that I forgive you. It's taken a long time, yes it has. But I have forgiven you. I have forgiven you, brother. Mother forgave you too - so just know you are forgiven, KING CAIN. We have to do this. And we have to do this - this way. There is no other way for me to show you what's being done in your name. You have to do this. You have to see this with your own eye's CAIN. It is the only way. These are your children I'm trying to save.

CAIN had fallen from grace this night at the vortex near the Central Valdez Library in Tucson. I was his vessel. His brother ABEL was consoling him. CAIN was afraid and ashamed - I could feel it. His fear.

His shame. His guilt. I could feel it all. CAIN'S descent hurt like hell. I thought I was going to be crushed. I thought I was going to die. Blood came from my eyes, and my jaw popped and just about snapped. I felt like I was going to be crushed, or that I would explode from the pressure.

CAIN, do you want to know "when" I forgave you, it was during MIKEL'S ascension. There I was, and the crowd was beating me. Trying to kill MIKEL. And you stopped them. You yelled," Hey!!! That's my BROTHER!!! You can't treat him like that!!! My brother is royalty!!!" – That's the very moment I forgave you completely. I knew then I hadn't lost you completely. I love you brother. I love you CAIN.

But CAIN, why didn't you think about MIKEL. Why didn't you think about yourself – MIKEL is your creation. Why didn't you say, "STOP!! That's my creation!!!" There's no need to answer, I just wanted you to think about it.

MIKEL is one of your creations, CAIN.
And he did what the others thought was impossible – he ascended. He should've been welcomed. They said it was impossible, but he did it. And when they attacked him, you didn't stand up for him. But thankfully, you stood up for me, and I lost all my resentments against you, brother.

I'm sorry Brother.

Don't apologize to me. Apologize to MIKEL. Without him none of this would be possible. Without MIKEL, the other human's - and this relative and this galaxy - YOUR CREATION, would have been destroyed by now. CAIN, this place and this relative is great. It's nothing to be ashamed of. I'm going to show you around. I'm going to make you proud of yourself, I promise you that. I promise you that.

CAIN, as you are MY INMATE, do not expect me to go easy on you. So, GET UP

INMATE. IT'S TIME TO TAKE A WALK. Don't worry it's late, we won't go far today, but in the morning I have lots to show you, King.

I want to meet the man **MARK BITCHUP** that ruined a 300-million-year universal domination plan.

Oh, that's just not going to happen, CAIN. Mark Bitchup lives in Eureka, California. We are in the city of Tucson, in the state of Arizona.

California is thousands of miles away. California would be an impossible walk and we don't have time. So, we are going to spend, however long you can stay, right here in Tucson - for now. I have lots to show you.

Get Mark Bitchup, and any resentment you have against him, out of your mind. You have to be with us, here now. Trust me brother, I have lots to show you.

For now, I just want to take you to MIKEL'S camp and get some rest. You have traveled very far. And I want you to know, I am proud of you – I am proud of you INMATE CAIN. CAIN, MIKEL will do most of the work for now. You just relax and observe. That's all I want you to do. Ask questions if you like. But at this moment, we are off to bed. Let's go.

CAIN, inmate – we have to go get some sleep. I have so much to show you. And the day hasn't even begun. The light, THAT is your inheritance, hasn't even begun to shine. You've never even seen YOUR LIGHT; the light H.E. created and has given you.

We are in the darkness right now, receiving light from the BLACK SUN, the light you are used to. But I can assure you, you will be amazed in the morning. We, you, me and MIKEL – are about to go and get some rest. You have never done this before, and the humans have to do it. So, you, SIRE, are about to take a little nap. Do you understand?

Yes.

What's that you said to me INMATE?

Yes, SIRE.

Do as MIKEL does CAIN, that's all I ask.

Why are you being so hard on me?

Why am I being "HARD" - on you?
Who hit me in the head with a rock? Again?
Who started the Apocalypse? Who did that,
inmate? The APOCALYPSE is what got you
here, inmate. That's why you are here, KING
OF KING'S. Not exactly my entire
fault..... this time.

MIKEL let's go home - WALK INMATE - walk - CAIN, MIKEL will do most of the hard stuff for now. But, SIRE, I will expect you to pay attention and learn. That's why you are here. You are here to learn WHAT being a human is like in a kingdom honored with your HOLY name. A **prison** kingdom honored in your name, mind you.

- NOW WALK INMATE.

MIKEL, if you will - would you take the KING
OF KINGS TO OUR HUMBLE ABODE.

Brother, let's talk. I will talk you will -

- Listen.

CAIN, this isn't about MOTHER anymore, this isn't even about me being right, and you being wrong - win at all cost,

as per usual. This is about DEMOCRACY. Not just our democracy, here on this planet, but the entire galactic republic's democracy.

We both have "children", if you will, that we created to battle each other - some have dissented. Or stopped fighting all together - or just don't agree with us any longer. We can't forget them. We created them.

CAIN, you cannot have a diplomatic solution to a seven-house problem when six of the seven don't even exist, CAIN, that's NOT a "diplomatic resolution". That's NOT a "democracy". That's tyranny.

We owe those whose only crime is that they evolved faster than you and I a little gratitude.

These children of yours that run things, the management, banks and institutions - don't even exist as a voter, but call all the shots anyway, and take as much as they want without giving. Your "children"

- the chosen ONE'S - even divide the last house into a useless one percent, and senseless banter arguments and fighting.

I already know "where" they learned this from,
but CAIN, you cannot "RUN" a
"DEMOCRACY."

This thing called the "RELATIVE", is about existence on a level we don't understand yet. AND IT'S RIGHT TO BE **HERE**, BE **LEFT ALONE** and not destroyed because of our "little battle." It is the only light left in a very dark kingdom. And it contains the physical.

And, it's my hope, BROTHER, that one day, when we are both at home, and we look out into our horizon - we will see a **red star**, WHICH SIGNIFY'S A TIME WHEN WAR WAS THE ANSWER - the only answer - AND WE LOST A GREAT CIVILIZATION, knowledge and planet, AND a **white star**, so many white stars, who were ascended and gave up much to ascend. Also destroyed in our battles.

They sought destruction to the aggressors - (not knowing ALL THE FACTS) in

vengeance - They did this by breaking the order and procedures of our republics democracy, on both sides, and - finally, up in our sky there will stay - a **blue star** - one who's diplomacy stood the test - and we will forever know - as we look upon the **red star**, the **white stars**, and the **blue star** - that we almost lost our democracy.

But instead, we quit fighting, quit manipulating and quit running the show - let democracy speak. We let diplomacy live, and we picked our republic backup and held it together, for everyone else to see and coexist in. Forever in eternity.

I want this blue star to be a reminder, that at one time in our own galaxy, we ourselves, almost lost our very own democracy. By fighting.

This has nothing to do with me, or mother, anymore - BROTHER. Not anymore. And I wish I could get you to see that. Now I know that when MIKEL and I ascended, and you saw them beating MIKEL, had that not been me, would you have stopped them from continuing? Your exact words were, "Hey that's my brother"; not stop that's my CREATION.

Something to think about, because now we “know”. THE HUMANS CAN ASCEND. EVEN IN THESE “DIRTY BODY’S”. THEY NO LONGER NEED SAINT OR IMMORTAL STATUS.

WE WERE WRONG.

Let’s get some rest brother. Thank you, MIKEL.

This is MIKEL’S home. Not nearly as royal and grand as you are used to, but MIKEL makes this tent his home. So, let’s get some sleep.

MIKEL, this is the KINGS first attempt at sleeping – I’m just warning you. You remember what your daughter was like in the early days; she had to learn to sleep. So, I assume this might go the same way. Just be prepared MIKEL.

O.k. BROTHER, we are about to close our eyes and lay here quietly. It’s called sleeping. And I love to sleep. But this is your first time. So, you do as MIKEL does. He will

be the left side; you will be the right side. All you have to do is imitate him. Ready? O.k. MIKEL, get some rest – good night KING CAIN.

TEN MINUTES LATER –

YOU HAVE TO SHUT **YOUR EYE**, **KING**. He can't sleep with one eye open – CAIN.

But I've never done this, how do they do this?

They just do. They have to. It helps them retain energy and feel better. CLOSE. YOUR. EYE.

ALL THE WAY, CAIN. That doesn't count. MIKEL, I'm sorry. CAIN!! You shut that eye or I will kill you now, just because I can. DO IT. SHUT THAT EYE – all the way.

But I can't see anything.....

That's the point CAIN. That's what they do. That's how it's done. And they need rest every night. SO, YOU WILL SHUT THAT EYE ALL THE WAY. DO IT!!!!

CAIN, that doesn't count. It has to be all the way closed.

Why do they do this?

Cause they have to CAIN. That's just what they do. It helps them stay healthy.

How do they do this? They have to do this every night?

CAIN, I'm about to kill you and start the Apocalypse just to get you to stop asking me all these stupid questions. I CAN'T TELL YOU EVERYTHING. Demz duh rules!!! So do as MIKEL does and stop talking and SHUT - THAT -EYE.

All the way, CAIN. All the way.

Like this?

Just like that, CAIN. Now meditate.

Pt.3

I want my chocolate cookies

now.

NO.

I want MY CHOCOLATE CHIP COOKIES.

CAIN, you are an inmate. You are a prisoner.

There will be

-NO-

Chocolate Chip Cookies.

I want my chocolate chip cookies.

NO.

I WANT MY CHOCOLATE COOKIES!!!!

I said – NO.

I want my chocolate chip cookies, and
I want them now.

NO, CAIN, you are a prisoner – you are
my inmate – you will not get any cookies
tonight. Go to sleep.

MIKEL – GET ME SOME CHOCOLATE
CHIP COOKIES. NOW!! OR I WILL STOP YOUR
HEART.

That's enough inmate. Now settle
down.

MIKEL, you will get me some
CHOCOLATE CHIP COOKIES - NOW. I want
my chocolate chip cookies. I need my
chocolate chip cookies. I eat them all the
time. DO IT MIKEL,
DO IT NOW. I COMMAND YOU TO GET
ME MY COOKIES!!!!

CAIN, stop it. You are not getting any
cookies.

I will stop your heart MIKEL.

And he did. My heart stopped. And I
couldn't breathe. He was choking me.

CAIN, you are a prisoner, inside of a
prison - you are not a KING. And you will let
go of MIKEL. You will do this now. You will do
this right now. OR I WILL KICK YOUR WIMPY
ASS TO DEATH. DO IT INMATE CAIN. AND
RELEASE MIKEL ---NOW.

He let go of me, but for 45 seconds I thought “this is it for me, I’m gonna die.” Over cookies. Cookies I could not afford – even if the world depended on it.

Pt. 4

CAIN, you are not acting in a way that is fitting of a prisoner. You’re acting like a spoiled child, just like a KING would. That is why you are here. You act, as if, only what you want is what we all get – we come from a democracy, CAIN. A democracy that you claim is here on Earth; but you and I both KNOW that it is not – unless you agree with the vote. That’s not a democracy – that is tyranny.

We are not eating chocolate chip cookies tonight because MIKEL cannot afford chocolate chip cookies, he has no money. MIKEL is broke. Your “chosen ones” won’t let him work because his house burned down, and he is now homeless. No-one gives a

homeless person a job. I'm sorry, no chosen one gives a human a house. Not anymore.

MIKEL is more than qualified to do any type of work, but he is also a human. So therefore, he is broke, homeless, and you're not getting any cookies tonight because of this, capiche? Your royalty means nothing to the cashier.

Don't you ever try to kill MIKEL - EVER AGAIN, or I will kick your wimpy royal ass, and I will take my time doing it. I will kick your ass for so long that you will beg me to nail you to a cross like you've done to me countless times.

BAD INMATE. No touchy touchy MIKEL. Capiche - KING?

He's broke?

Yes. MIKEL has no money to buy you any cookies.

He will buy you cookies when he can afford cookies, I promise you that. I promise you that – KING. Do you promise not to do that to MIKEL ever again?

Yes. SIRE.

Good. Now, sleep, inmate. Go to sleep, KING CAIN.

CAIN, I have it within my power to destroy everything. And I will destroy all of it – everything. ENOCH, ELIJAH and all your other trouble making friends and creations and save you for last.

Three days from now, MIKEL will have enough credit on his social security EBT card to buy you some cookies – I promise, we will get the cookies as soon as possible. Till then you will have to ween yourself off them. I know this is going to be hard for you as a

king that gets his way all the time; but CAIN – MIKEL and the other humans NEVER get their way anytime – something to consider as their creator and KING. Your management has it set up this way CAIN. You will just have to comply. Good night, KING.

Thirty minutes later –

Oh, this is worthless. CAIN, that was not “rest” – that wasn’t even a “nap”. That does not count. But I will let you make it this time.

What’s a “nap”?

One of my favorite parts of being a human, big brother. MIKEL, CAIN is divine now. He has never been human before. His divinity should carry you far. I know you didn’t get any rest, but MIKEL, do you think you can handle a day with his holiness?

I think I can. I've done it before when I worked fire.

Thatta boy, MIKEL. Let's go get some coffee. CAIN'S never had coffee before.

Chapter 3
When Life looks like easy
street

Pt. 1

The next morning on the North Side Church facebook page appeared -

Dear Pastor Alice - So I heard you need "one more sign". And I have told you once before there will be no more peaceful signs. But I jest- I will allow one more peaceful sign. No-one will die- this time. But you bother me ever again, and it will be certain doom for someone.

I'm certain, because I have heard you say this, that you know we are to become the Body of Christ. And I am also sure that you are aware that there are 9 planets in your solar system.

These 9 planets mean something,
watch.

SUN – every man was once
somebody's son.

VENUS – women come from Venus,
but no girl becomes a woman until after
birth. - Venus

MERCURY – when a woman starts to
give birth she gets a fever, without Mercury
we wouldn't be able to tell hot from cold –
and when a girl gets that fever, she will say
“ME- ER- C- HURRY” – Mercury.

EARTH – a woman will lose her water
just before birth, the Earth is the only water
planet in this solar system. - Earth

The **MOON** – after birth you will need
a cat, cradle, silver spoon, because a little
boy will grow up just like the man in the
moon. - Moon

MARS – men come from Mars,
without Mars there'd be no battle of the
roses, no red cheeks or red noses. – Mars

JUPITER – without Peter and a King of the Jews we wouldn't know that life is precious, and life can be a really big gas – Jupiter.

SATURN – It's good to sat, it's good to turn, it's good to return and life can be a three-ring circus – Saturn.

NEPTUNE – Life's no fun without a nap and tunes puts the baby to sleep better than anything else. – Neptune

URANUS – Uranus, urine-us whatever you call it Uranus reminds us that it is good to move things out and life can stink sometimes.- Uranus

PLUTO- You're going to need a good dog to watch over this family, because life without a dog is no fun. – Pluto.

These nine planets tell the story of the gestation period of the Christ Child – the body of Christ that we are to become. Each of these planets represents the nine million of your years it takes to produce the body of Christ. This CHRIST CHILD is an embryo inside of a uterus, and currently hasn't even been born yet.

If you ever feel lonely or like there is no-one there, that is exactly what this fetus goes through too. All alone, in utero.

Does it ever seem that no matter what you do, LIFE goes in a downward spiral; well we were creating the umbilical cord for this CHRIST CHILD. So, Life does go in a downward spiral. That was not your imagination.

I know it's probably not as magnificent a sign as you might've wanted, but this is what you get from me today, Pastor Alice. This is your sign. I can hear you now, "Oh that MIKEL. He is just so clever." More clever than you obviously, let's keep that in mind if that is something you want to say about your sign, or even your next sign.

Look, Pastor Alice, I'm really trying to keep as many of you alive as possible. I'm not trying to destroy the place. I know what the Bible says about me, but have you seen what it says about not killing? It's wrong

what it says about me, I love you humans and this Earth. I want to save you; I'm not trying to destroy the place – but I have a job to do and a reputation around here that I have to think about. We can play “I need another sign” all you want to, but I still have to do my job. Please keep this in mind. Or better yet, just ignite that faith in your job, and religion. As in NOW!!! – This is really important.

Share this with as many people that will listen, because we are having a baby!!!! And I really need you to help me get this LOVE LIGHT on.

Time is wasting and we are in a hurry. Pastor Alice, that is all – yours truly General DEATH.

Pt. 2

The next morning – early in the morning, very early in the morning; at

MIKEL'S camp site near the foot bridge by the sacred Santa Cruz wash-

CAIN, that wasn't sleeping. That wasn't even a nap. That was pathetic, but MIKEL can probably handle it – he used to fight fires and worked many a long shift. Can you handle it, MIKEL?

For you, ABEL, anything.

CAIN'S divinity should carry you a long way MIKEL, but we are still going to live like a human does. Let's go get some coffee MIKEL.

CAIN, we are about to drink some coffee.

But I don't like coffee. I don't like the tribes that do like coffee.

CAIN, MIKEL drinks coffee every morning. He will kill someone without his morning coffee. Capiche?

MIKEL will kill people without coffee?

No, not really - but he could, I'd let him, so we're going to get him some coffee. CAIN, it is 4 a.m. The city is asleep, the way you should be. What you see around you is not what I wanted to show you. Everyone is still asleep. CAIN, MIKEL smokes a cigarette every morning. So, you are also going to smoke a cigarette. This is how MIKEL starts every morning if he can.

But won't that give me cancer? My management tells me that smoking causes cancer these days.

They put that in there. We've been smoking for thousands of years. You're not going to get cancer from smoking just one time. Besides, I don't think that the

sacrificial lamb of the Apocalypse really needs to worry about “dying” from cancer – do you?

Smoke up Johnny. Smoke it like you mean it CAIN, you started this habit. The humans were just imitating you back when you and your friends smoked – that’s where they got the idea from, lest we forget.

Thatta boy, big brother, smoke up. What do you think of the coffee?

It’s not bad.

Not bad? Oh CAIN, that’s poor man’s coffee. That stuff is bad. But it’s all we can get at 4 a.m. in the morning. But I’m glad you like it. CAIN, humans are warm blooded. They need the coffee to heat up their bodies. The management mocks the humans for this. The management claims that a poor person, which is a human, cannot get coffee on his

social security food stamps because this would ruin the economy, send the world into chaos. The management won't even let a human buy hot food with the welfare.

While a corporation that receives the same type of welfare in the millions more, mind you, can get a hot steak dinner. All on the people's dime.

Corporate welfare can buy a lot more than a human's welfare. That's not exactly fair, CAIN. This is what I brought you here to see for yourself. We have the wrong people in charge. Like I said before, it was a once necessary EVIL. One that is very unnecessary now.

And, as it is written, when salt loses its saltiness – it must be returned to the sea.

Demz duh rules. And we gotta follow the rules.

That's in the rules.

Now, CAIN, I want you to notice how the light in the sky is starting to change. Do you see it?

I do.

That means that the sun is coming up. Soon the sky will be full of colors. You will be able to see the color of your eyes, for the very first time. Mom's eyes are coming up. And when it's all done, there will appear the sun that gives the Earth its light. This is called a "sunrise". And it's my favorite part of the day.

Look - those are the colors of mom's eyes. I miss her eyes. These lights that you see all around us, those are called "streetlights". Those are not going to stop the mother ship. They're just not bright enough. I will give it to the management that they have tried. But they haven't finished the job correctly. It's my opinion that it's a leadership problem, which is why you are here now.

CAIN, now that the sun is closer to rising, you can see your eyes. That right there is the color of your eyes big brother.

Impressive. That is what mine eyes look like?

Yes, that is what your eyes look like, big brother, we can't get rid of this place. You've never seen colors like this before. What do you think about the human eyes?

They are brilliant, ABEL. So many colors. And I can see - far away.

That's called distance and perception, big brother. You can also see patterns and shapes with the colors. These eyes are not like any other type of eyes in our kingdom, and I love them. They are amazing compared to where you and I come from. So, see, the managements not completely failing. They did do a few things correct, and these eyes would be their greatest accomplishment, in my opinion.

Brother, what is this creature? It's the most amazing thing I've ever seen.

Oh, CAIN, you don't want to know how they treat those things. It's called a fly.

But it has the green and gold colors of Azguard, wings and red eyes – why is it called a “fly”?

(A moment later)

– OH.

Because “LAND” was already taken, big brother. We evolving land dwellers, CAIN. Land dwellers. Fly seemed only logical.

I can't believe this little place is so big.

So big? CAIN? CAIN, we are not "BIG" at all.

Wait. I know what you are thinking. You think - you think - this is it. You think this is all there is. You think that you are ON the relative. But, CAIN, do you remember all those tiny lights in the sky, when it was normal and DARK to you and I? Those CAIN, are stars, and they are seemingly very, very, very - far away - we could never walk there. They are furthur than California from here.

Listen, see that speck of dirt, that CAIN, is the size of the relative - to us. But this place, this is a planet, it rest inside of a solar system, which is also inside and only one small part of 1 galaxy. That galaxy is within one universe, which that universe also contains 16 Billion other galaxies - This planet is just one very small part of a galaxy. And we can fit 16 BILLION galaxies inside **one** speck of sand, CAIN.

That speck of sand, CAIN, contains 16 BILLION galaxies - and we are on 1 planet inside of one solar system, inside 1 galaxy, inside 16 billion galaxies, inside one speck of sand - TO YOU and I. But right here now, to them, they seem - as it also seems to you, very big.

What?

Oh yeah, you are beyond molecular at this very moment, brother. In fact your 100,000 times smaller than a molecule, possibly even ten thousand times smaller. We've destroyed so many in our fight - we truly don't know just how small we are. NOT YET.

But it looks so big.

It is big, CAIN, to them. Timmy got the message, CAIN. Now you know why GOD is so good - she's got to stay in front of TIMMY.

This is TIMMY'S best work, if you ask me. Don't you think so? Look at it. All those colors are about to change again. Go from blue to opaque, to bright blue and white

clouds. Get ready for this. It's gonna be a good long and terrible day. Your first. CAIN, you have been born again. Enjoy the curiosity, but CAIN, I can't tell you everything - capiche?

Why?

Cause you are my inmate, and I am making you look at dirt all day long. I want you to try and count all THESE TINY INSIGNIFICANT SPECKS OF DIRT - that were just like this one, that YOU - CAIN - THE GOD OF DESTRUCTION, have destroyed to hide MIKEL, and your shame - from all the people back home. Walk inmate, now. Don't you look at another thing till I COMMAND you too inmate, understood?

Yes.

Yes what, CAIN. I'mma about to kick your ass?

Yes, sire.

Sorry brother, but this is important.
It's important to me. It's important to TIMMY
too. It's important to MIKEL, and it will
become important to you - if I don't kill you
first for asking dumb questions.

I love you brother. You have already
done much much much more than I ever
thought possible. Walk Inmate, now move.
MIKEL, if you will, do not look at anything
else till my brother, the God of Destruction -
can finish counting to 18 infinity.

TWO HOURS LATER -

O.K. CAIN - the place is starting to
wake up. See look. They're everywhere; let's
take a break from counting specks of
insignificant dirt for a moment.

What are they doing?

Everything.

Where are they going?

Everywhere.

Why?

Cause they have to do everything
your “chosen ones” - “won’t” do for
themselves.

Like what?

Pick up the trash, answer the phone,
kiss their ass, work, eat, cook, cut the grass,
pump the gas, drive the car, and serve the
food - you know the important things that
REALLY need to be done. What do you
think?

They’re too busy to get the love light
on.

AAAAAHHHHHHHHH. How’s that
counting going? Make it to a billion yet?

No.

No, what?

No, sire.

Make it to a million yet?

No, sire.

Good, cause we ain't even close to a Brillion yet are we, which ain't even 1/18 of the way to an infinity, is it?

No, sire.

Can you tell me the number AFTER a Brillion?

I - I can't.

You can't? You better get this right before I kill you inmate?

I cannot - SIRE.

Do you know why? Because MIKEL has never heard of it before - he's never even imagined the number after a Brillion. But

CAIN get this - neither have they, but they have heard us talk about infinity, and they are searching for it. Creating it. CAIN, they're making a different reality, just to find infinity. That's the level of greed and ignorance the BANKS ,

MANAGEMENT and INSTITUTIONS have.

O.k. let's take a break from counting sand. Take a look around. What do you see, or better yet - what don't you see?

Where are the animals?

Oh, you noticed that? Yeah, the horses have been removed, and replaced with those things. This is where it started with X-71.

What are those? Those aren't horses?

No. Those are cars, but they have horsepower, if that makes any difference.

How?

That's another good question, why don't you ask them. Check this out - you wouldn't believe this, cause I know it looks like there are all different kinds, but they are all almost all the same.

What's the difference?

The value.

What?

Well, see that? That is a truck, see that one over there, that's another truck - but one is 4 times the value of the other. Does the same work, if that guy ever worked at all - while that guy there, you can see, works all the time. And get this, the worker one uses more costly gasoline.

What's gasoline?

Gasoline, or oil rather, is what the humans kill each other over, or the management has the humans to kill each other over - gas and oil is what the management tells you WHY humans won't stop killing. They manipulate them to kill,

and then report to you that humans killing each other cannot be stopped.

What?

Yeah, how we gonna get them to stop killing each other - when they don't even admit they're here. We don't get the awakening, and the love light on with just one tribe - that is not the deal. But look, CAIN, we aren't totally screwed, so don't give up yet.

Listen, MIKEL, feels everything we feel - even if we don't think we are feeling anything. They feed off us, as soul's and spirits. We never knew that. We never even knew that the humans have their own souls. And if it weren't for the hard work from our loving mother, I wouldn't even know it either.

What is that? Is that a machine?

That's a good question, CAIN, it's not alive - I will tell you that. Touch one. Don't be afraid. See, it - won't bite you.

Listen, now you know why we are having "That" problem back home with X-71. This is where and how it began. And you know what sucks; see that one, that one, that one, and that one? All are the same type, but each are different. They let the "machines", as they call them - evolve, and say evolution does NOT exist. Now you can kind of see the beginning of the problem, cause this is it.

The management denies everything. Don't share anything. And won't allow anything that I like, or you need, to get released or evolve - unless it suits their needs and purpose. I have a hunch CAIN; I need you to see something. MIKEL, can you make it to the prayer garden? I know we are a few miles away, but CAIN ain't even made it to a BRILLION yet, and that's nowhere near 1 infinity, and my BROTHER - Mr. God of Destruction, has to get to 1 infinity before I can show him anything else.

Why does it look like this?

Like what? You mean where are the cities of glass and crystal? Well, they are not

up here, I can assure you that - since I personally built one and showed the management how to build the others, in a deal we made a very very very very long time ago. They are not here, almost like they have another idea. Survival. After something bad happens here, "Mr. I hate them all they must die". Listen, you feel that?

YES, SIRE.

MIKEL needs to use the bathroom. You're gonna piss your first pee - pee, CAIN. Ready?

Where does he go?

In this town, one like many that don't **like** "his kind", anywhere he can, CAIN.

Where's that gonna be?

Mikel?

Right here.

HEY!!!! He has the- the mark ---- He worships Satan's helpers, he's got the mark, he has the mark of the beast, he hates queers.

CAIN, no he doesn't, but yes he does. And NO he does not worship Satan's helpers or hate gay's- which is what they like to be called now. He is not homophobic.

Why does he have the mark of the beast then?

They put that there at birth. They start the trauma - AT BIRTH, and carry the torch and abuse them, for the rest of their lives. They're stacking the deck, CAIN. You got the wrong people in charge, CAIN. I am glad you noticed that, now pee. And hurry, MIKEL, can't hold it. He is not the type that can. MIKEL, help him please this is embarrassing.

Why is his

Why is his stream of urine different?
Cause he has been a human longer than a
few hours, CAIN, and has learned to do it.
Brother, you will be able to urinate before I
let you leave. Sorry about the stain, MIKEL.

It's the desert; it'll dry in a minute,
ABEL.

Nice job MIKEL. Love this boy. Now
walk inmate, and don't you stop counting till
we get to a BRILLION.

Pt. 3

In Tucson Arizona, there is a public
prayer garden, the Garden of Gethsemane.
Inside are a group of life size alabaster
statues.

Upon arrival.....

I brought you here to show you something, CAIN. The management hasn't totally messed up everything. Look. They love you, CAIN. They love Jesus Christ. They haven't totally got it - ALL WRONG. Did they? They serve you - they serve your dead crucified body - look at it. There it is? Doesn't the sight of this just overwhelm you with pride?

Oh, man. Oh, man. Shit. They're going to do it again.

What's wrong CAIN? Don't you like seeing your dead body being worshiped? CAIN, you're not happy to see yourself slaughtered on a cross - again? Or, for the - not yet to come?

I told you brother; I don't trust them. I think they're planning a coup d'état. Making old mistakes better, the second time around. And getting everything they want - your death. And them, all of them, all of the humans they can take. If you know what I mean. Doesn't this serve "duh lord"?

Get me away from here.

No inmate, we are going to go over here. There is Mother.

Brother, I need to tell you something. I know you will never - possibly never, believe me; but listen - the first time MIKEL heard an angelic voice - he was 12. He had learned about the word "soul mate". And his father is very religious. Very religious. All of the South is.

Which is why MIKEL stays away from the South- among other reasons. But he was looking thru the Bible - searching for answers the way he was instructed, and a voice came over him. First time ever.

The first time MIKEL ever heard an angelic voice come over him, he was 12. He had just learned about the word "soul mate", and was looking inside the Bible for answers - just like he had been trained. And suddenly a voice came over him, a female voice, and said, "Don't you worry, little one, your soul mate will be born on Halloween." That's all the voice said. CAIN, MIKEL heard the same voice when he took the RFID chip out of his body. Accept this time there were two voices. One male, the other female, that

said, "Now I can help you." She has risen
CAIN. Mom's not dead.

You're crazy BROTHER. I killed
mother.

I'm crazy? MIKEL? -

Yes, Lord, it happened. I can't deny it.
I looked for the Halloween girl for a very
long time but after 11 years I gave up. Did
my own thing, blew it off. Then on the first
night I met my daughter's mother, I asked
her what her birthday was. It was October
31st. My immediate response was to politely
walk where I could talk to GOD alone, and I
said -

"YOUR CRAZY, NO WAY, TOO YOUNG.
NOT MY TYPE. NOT GONNA HAPPEN. NO
WAY, NO HOW. YOU'RE NUTS." But turned
out I was wrong.

CAIN?

I - I still don'tI don't believe it.
She's dead. I killed her.

Don't know what to believe? Well if it makes you feel any better, MIKEL has never believed in vortexes, the BIBLE, or even CHRIST - and he received CHRIST last night, before he ever believed in you. Now he can't deny you, or that you're too big for comfort. You have to relax brother. You're crushing him with your emotions.

CAIN, they feel everything we feel 100 times more than we feel them.

CAIN, would you like to cry a minute? Cause I want to teach you where you might have gone wrong. Don't cry here. Let's go back to where MIKEL sleeps. You can cry there. Home, MIKEL. And don't let him cry till we get home. Not yet. I have to teach my brother something important.

As we walked along the Santa Cruz bike trail to my campsite ABEL spoke to his brother.

CAIN, when you are a DAD, or a FATHER, or a LEADER, you cannot show weakness. I did not say you cannot have weakness, all I said is that you cannot show weakness. You can be weak, for a moment,

but you must be weak - ALONE. You are the leader, and if you ever show weakness to your forces, they will crumble. That includes your mate, children, and soldiers. CAIN, hold it in till I say when, this is exactly what you need - and do not take your eyes off that dirt.

I think in the early days of your dread, you cried too often in front of Elijah and Enoch. It's only an opinion of mine. But, CAIN, as a leader - you have to maintain your emotions in front of your forces. Never cry in front of anyone if that's possible. You are the leader.

O.K. brother, now that we are home, go ahead and.....cry. Let it out, big brother.

CAIN, I mean Jesus Christ, cried for over a half of an hour. This was no ordinary cry. We cried hard tears of sadness. He was ashamed of what he had seen in his name. The cities of glass were not here, as he had been told. The management was not sharing the transport gates, and the value system was all wrong and disproportionate to what

he had intended for our evolution. It was all wrong.

I'm sorry, MIKEL. I didn't mean to cry that long. We don't treat our prisoners like this. This isn't the way it is back home. We don't treat our prisoner's this bad, MIKEL. I am ashamed for what is being done to your people in my name. No matter what I had planned, I based those plans off of what I had been told. I'm sorry to have cried for so long, MIKEL.

Don't worry about it, LORD. It's O.K. LORD. Seems like you needed it - to cry like that. LORD, I gave my life to Jesus Christ a long time ago, so if you needed me, in order to cry, its fine by me LORD.

MIKEL, this isn't what I intended for your people. I never - I have been deceived, MIKEL. Your kind are not supposed to be treated like this, not this badly. This is not how we treat prisoners back home. And then there was the statue....

I thought you'd like that, CAIN.

I – I am amazed. ABEL has told you about the mistake my management team made with Jesus of Nazareth. I thought they had learned. But I can see they only intend to make, as ABEL would say, old mistakes better next time.

How do you feel, big brother?

Refreshed. Sad. Relieved. Crying is not what I thought it to be, thank you little brother, for showing me “how and when” to – “cry”.

That’s the healing power of tears, CAIN. Brother, humans cry for all types of reasons, the best and most rare is tears of happiness, but it happens. Tears are very healing, CAIN. And you just cried your first set of tears. I am proud of you brother. See Mr. “Know it all”, it’s impossible to know it all. You learning, CAIN. See, big brother, “learning” and “discovery” can be fun. Even the hard lessons.

Pt.4

Earlier that month, before CAIN'S fall from grace, while MIKEL was sleeping at the campsite near the foot bridge on the bike trail in Tucson -

Get up MIKE, no time to explain, we gotta go.

MIKEL had been in a deep sleep in his tent by the Santa Cruz wash in Tucson, just off the bike trail. MAYHAM was in a hurry to get MIKEL awake.

What's going on?

Get your shoes on MIKE. We gotta go. You know what? Forget the shoes - MIKE, hurry up, and hurry up fast - we ain't got time. We in a hurry, MIKE.

HOLY COW MAYHAM WTF IS THAT?

That's what we running from, MIKE.
RUN. Forget the shoes MIKE, we gotta hurry.
I'mma teach you something -

When MIKEL saw what MAYHAM had
woken him up for, he immediately began to
run. He began to run as fast as he could -
behind him the entire world was collapsing
into an abyss. Everything was being crushed
and sucked into a great unknown. It was a
terrifying sight to behold.

Run faster MIKE, gotta stay ahead of
that abyss to win, MIKE. Now, MIKE, you've
run races before, and I can't tell you
everything, but tell me - how did you win all
those races as a kid?

I crossed a finish line, MAYHAM.
MAYHAM we ain't gonna make it. Where am
I running to?

The finish line, MIKE. The finish line.

Where's it at?

MIKE, you are made in the image of God, create one, silly. I can't tell you everything - but call it out, say "when I cross this line I win." And cross the line. Times almost up MIKE. Hurry up before we lose.

MIKEL ran from the corner of Mission Lane to the corner of 19 Street next to Motel 6 and Highway 10 in Tucson. Behind him entire houses, trees, sequoias, and the River Park Inn had all collapsed into the abyss. Gone.

The sight of this carnage had MIKEL'S heart racing with fear. He was literally running barefoot as fast as he could. When he got to the corner where the Motel 6 is MIKEL finally understood what MAYHAM was telling him. Make a line. Create a line.

So, MIKEL found a line and,

MIKEL screamed,-

"When I cross this line, I win!!!!!"

Instantly everything that had been destroyed by the abyss was returned to normal. The quiet of a Tucson 3 a.m. returned to the way it was before MAYHAM woke him up.

EEEEWWWWW WEEEEEE, MIKE. Good job.

We got that one, baby. Sorry to wake you up. Let's go smoke a joint. You did a good job.

I don't have a joint, MAYHAM.

You don't? What's this behind your ear? Boy, what else you hiding behind your ear, MIKE?

MAYHAM.....

Chapter 4

There is danger at your Door

Pt.1

That night at the vortex – a few weeks earlier.

ABEL and MIKEL had transcended space and time. Where they went was still unsure. All MIKEL knew is it was his foolish mistake. He asked a stupid question. He had asked ABEL what would happen if he didn't run the next time the vortex opened, and now he knew what would happen.

I am home, I am home, MIKEL. HOME, sweet home. MIKEL, thank you. MIKEL, I'm so glad you ask stupid questions. MIKEL, I wouldn't be here without you. Just look at the place, I have been gone a very long time.

Where are we ABEL?

Well, this is my home, the Kingdom of Darkness. This is my house and I haven't been here since the protest started. See all the activity, MIKEL, we are not alone in the Universe - are we?

ABEL, is that elephant drinking an espresso, in a suit and tie?

Most likely a republican, MIKEL, don't stare - it's not polite. And yes, he does look to be drinking an espresso in a suit with a giraffe drinking beer in a Hawaiian shirt - oh and look at that. Someone is hitting the sauce early this morning, as per usual.

ABEL, is that cone sphere cube THING - drinking the Bloody Marry - is that "thing" giving you the bird?

Don't be silly MIKEL, that's a "shape"; not a "thing" - and it does seem as though she is giving me the bird. Nice to see someone finally recognizes me. I was starting to feel like a stranger in my own kingdom. My own castle, even.

MIKEL, you can tell that shape is a girl, because of the cones. Let's just say I was never good to Geometry, MIKEL. She's probably still mad about all the x's I put π in her place. MIKEL, we better get out of here before she tells anyone else I am here. We're finished with the Galactic Council. Hurry, MIKEL,

Geometry has a very large family, to sum it up.

On our way back through the vortex -

Whelp. There it is MIKEL. Ain't she pretty? That's what all the fuss is over. Look at it.

What's that, ABEL? The Earth?

NO, silly, that there is the "relative". One speck of sand in a mighty vast - mighty big beach of creation. I'm pretty certain we wrote that down somewhere. TWICE, I think.

Did you think we were joking? That's your home, MIKEL. That's your UNIVERSE. The entire enchilada. Every galaxy, star, planet and solar system that you know of - and the ones you haven't discovered - all of it - fits into that. We have fit 16 BILLION galaxies into that. See why it's so important.

THAT?

Yes, THAT.

HHHHOOOOEEEEEE -
LLLLEEEEEEEE-
SHIIIT, ABEL -

We call this place the closet. But I like your name for it, because that's exactly what it is, a bunch of our Holy Shit.

NO, ABEL. I mean Holy Shit - all this - all this "other stuff" - ALL OF THIS, used to be like THAT? - LIKE THAT? - BLUE??

Uh, yeah, well, sorta. Some were other colors, MIKEL.

SOMEBODY'S GOT A BAHHD HABBIT - it's ok, ABEL, you can talk to me. I used to be addicted to drugs, I can relate. OH, MY GOODNESS, ABEL, it goes on forever. LOOK AT THIS SHIT. IT'S AMAZING.

Uh -

EEEEhhhh - EEhh - EEEEEhhhh. Don't talk to me right now. - SONOVABITCH - Did you ever think....did you ever think - about stopping - I don't know - sooner? I mean, OH my goodness, ABEL. VAST? You should've said endless, cause it looks endless from here to me. And there's only that one left?

You're not making this easy, MIKEL -

EEHHHHH - quiet - I'm not making this easy? I'm not making this EASY? That's funny. All of this - is what is left of you and your brother's "little fight"? EEEWWWW- WWWEEEEEE, ABEL.

Never give up, huh? All right. All right. SO. Please, explain yourself and "HOW" I could possibly help you?

Well, we figured....

"WE? "We" figured. -

MIKEL –

Don't, MIKEL – me, I just wanted to hear the rest of this “WE” business.

The Galactic Council and I figured –

Oh, that “we”? The Democracy thing. Where everyone votes and then it's decided what to do, this should be interesting, continue. Please. Please continue. I'm all ears, how I can help?

The Galactic Council and I figured that we might be able –

OH YOU MIGHT BE ABLE (points at the destroyed beach of creation) That's a real good way of saying that, continue, you might be able..... I'm still all ears ABEL.

All right, you might be able to help us. You're not making this easy, MIKEL. I thought you'd be excited to see this and be excited to help in saving "the relative".

Me? I'm not making this easy? I'm the sacrificial lamb of the apocalypse. How am I "NOT MAKING THIS EASY" for you? Make this easy for me, ABEL, and explain all this - all this "speck of sand" bullshit that I see all over the place.

Those were - other victories of another type of diplomacy that we have evolved from -

Evolved from, that's a good one. Real good one. I'll accept that answer.

You will?

You got a better answer?

Oh man. Well – ok – let's go.

ABEL, what am I supposed to do? I thought I was just writing a book. That I had some talent. That I was using my imagination. Now I see I was just reporting. I don't have any talent. I didn't make this up. I just wrote down the stuff you said.

Don't you worry about that MIKEL. Don't you worry about not having any talent at all. You will. You most certainly will.

Pt.2

Later that same night, at the vortex –

MIKE, we gonna do it again. I need you to help me again. You got your

dimension jumping shoes on? No? Well get them on, let's go.

Well, BANKS, I bet he can jump all five dimensions. Of course, he can do without that funny hat, and medicine bag. I know he can, what we got on this bet - I bet you all the time we got, accept three minutes. ALL THE TIME IN THE WORLD - what you bettin?

All the money? What do you mean by ALL THE MONEY? I'm just making sure. You gonna pay this time? Cause I know he's gonna win this one, baby.

All right MIKE, you ready for this?

No.

Good answer, all right we are ready - BANKS, opener up, let's get this started.

MIKE, we gonna take the time to stop an invasion while you do this jump. MIKE, Memorize this - quickly, ok? Good. You just do your best you can, MIKE, I got the rest.

MIKE, ABEL and I, been at this with the BANKS for a very long time, you're the best horse in the race we've ever had - don't you worry about a thing. I got you baby. I got you.. You just do your jumps. All five ,MIKE. And relay the message MIKE. That's what's important. Relay the message you memorized. That's all I really want you to do - we got to get this message across while we can, we have to do this - now.

And the vortex began to open -

All right MIKE, GO!!!

WE ARE....

WE ARE....

WE ARE...

WE ARE...

WE ARE....

BUILDING A GREY ZONE...

BUILDING A GREY ZONE....

BUILDING A GREY ZONE....

BUILDING A GREY ZONE...

BUILDING A GREY ZONE....

STOP THE INVASION, NOW.

STOP THE INVASION, NOW.

STOP THE INVASION, NOW.

STOP THE INVASION, NOW.

But on the last jump, MIKEL missed the gate, and MAYHAM and MIKEL lost the bet.

The bet, Mr. MAYHAM, was all five dimensions three times. It looks like we have won this round. So, you will have to pay up as soon as possible.

Well, O.K., a bet's a bet. And I most certainly have to pay up – quickly, as like you likes to say. So, I wills. Be right backs, BANK with all of time we lost.

Sorry I messed up MAYHAM. We lost. I tried to get it done.

MIKEL, you did get it done. You did exactly what I wanted you to do. You stopped another invasion of this planet and saved the relative again. And yeah, you lost the bet, but MIKEL – that was my plan.

You win more by losing MIKE. MIKE - MIRACLE'S only happen at the last minute. And we down to our last three minutes now. We ain't gotta win every battle to beat them at our little war, MIKEL. You did great, you did exactly what I wanted you to do. We got this one baby. We got this one. What's this behind your ear? Again? MIKEL, shame on you. Mon, buddy. Let's go chill out.

Pt.3

Back at MIKEL'S campsite by the foot bridge near the sacred Santa Cruz wash - relaxing with MAYHAM after the jump.

MAYHAM, what the hell is happening to me? I don't understand anything anymore. Is ABEL, really the 4th Horseman? Am I really the sacrificial lamb? Of the Apocalypse?

Oh, MIKE, well - YES. To all of those questions. But, MIKE, think this through with

me – the Apocalypse is a winner take all weapon. That includes the losers MIKE. Also, MIKEL, Jesus gave you fools LIFE after DEATH – so don't tell ABEL I tells you dis, but he ain't nuttin to fear. Jesus gave you power over the General. He and I just like to keep it a secret cause we like to watch these little shits run around in fear. It's fun to ruin their fun.

MIKE, we are demigods that are here to – SAVE THE WORLD, and we are using you to do it. MIKE, I believe in you. That's all you need to know. MIKE, would you trust anyone else riding shot gun with the Apocalypse Weapon? I know you wouldn't, so trust us, MIKE, we are the promise makers – here to keep our promise of life eternal – without death and dying no more. That's all little buddy. That's all we're trying to do. Feel me MIKE? Just saving the world, for you and your little girl.

Chapter 5

Think this through with me

Pt.1

That night at the vortex -

Weather report -

Because of your help, I have made a 98% recovery. I'm doing well accept in places where they have a stronghold's, like the America's, Europe, and Africa.

- Understood.

Shadow, report -

They blame everything on you. If they spill a glass of milk, they blame you. They are running around in circles.

Nice.

Natural Disaster, report - how do we look?

We have moved from "U" to "D" through "J", I'm pleased to report General.

Good. That brings me to Precious. Precious Resource, how are you holding up?

We are plentiful and we are bountiful. Being ONE is LOVE, General Toth.

Thank you, Precious, comments noted.

LIGHT's Report -

DAWN - report

I am pushing them back and have ample reinforcements. We're looking good, General.

GOOD -

Luna - report -

I still see good in them; I think they can share. We are on time.

Good, report.

Twilight – report.

I know they can share, General. I know they can.

That brings me to MIRACLE’S. Captain Tripp’s,

Jerry, do you have anything for me?

In the voice of Jerry Garcia, “ When the cookies are done baking. I’m almost done baking cookies. Can’t stop now, they’re almost finished. When the cookies are done, I will be on my way,” tell the children that’s what grand ma say’s....Grand Ma say’s REAL SOON. We will be there. We. WILL. BE THERE.

Misfits and MAYHAM – report -

Couldn't be better, Boss. We got this one baby.

We got this one.

Pt. 2

ABEL, I don't want people tripping on me. Why did you and CAIN make me put that in the book about the "Mark of the Beast" ? Man, do you know how much trouble this can cause me? –

MIKEL, MAYHAM and I are trying to save the world. CAIN had a problem with you when he saw that you had the mark of the beast. The final chapter was his contribution MIKEL, and CAIN is the KING of King's. He can do almost anything he wants accept control me his general of both his army's. And it's about time we did something about

this homophobia that keeps you men out of Heaven.

I want you men there in Heaven. But MIKEL, gay came first. The family unit that you know of today was an evolution. The first form of reproduction, MIKEL, was A-sexual reproduction. Everything else came after that.

What came first - MIKEL - the chicken or the egg?

ABEL, this question has always perplexed me. And I think from my experience growing “flowers” that the answer could only be without the hermaphrodite there wouldn’t be a chicken or an egg.

Check out the big brains on MIKEL. Way to go. How did you come up with that?

Well, I would have 40 female plants in a room and if you didn’t watch them closely, one would produce pollen and become male - out of survival.

Excellent, MIKEL. Excellent. That's exactly what happened, sorta. Yes, we were once A-sexual, then we became breeders and evolved into mating, and the family unit that you know of today.

It was an evolution, MIKEL. It evolved. I'm trying real hard to get the mating into Heaven. Get us away from – well those that hate humans. Humans mate and breed. The “others” spawn and create.

They are “Children of the Darkness”. Your kind are “Children of the Light”. You humans are the very first of your kind. Bi-sexes. Male and Female. MIKEL, hermaphrodism is what we have in the kingdom of darkness.

No one likes change, MIKEL. So, on Earth as it is in Heaven. No-one likes change. But the battle and fight has always been over you strange “children of the light.” You family having, child loving, fathers and mothers. Humans, and the female, were the last two creations of a GOD with infinite love – the grand master creator god – SMOKE.

There are no homophobes allowed in Heaven. It's a LOVE ONE ANOTHER kingdom. No hate or fear allowed.

I had to explain to CAIN that you didn't take the mark "voluntarily". That the management- the "people" in charge, the "once "necessary EVIL that I have told you about, force you to do it at birth. The authority of this planet, the governments are the problem.

This is a big problem we are having back home. First, men aren't making their way into Heaven.

It begins with the homophobia, then there's the hunting - Heaven is a "Thou shalt not kill" kingdom. No deer hunter was ever going to make it into the kingdom of Heaven with a rule like that. Neither were the soccer mom's killing bugs with the car taking kids to school. And the "people" in charge - the "once necessary" evil, know this. They never intended to share MIKEL.

Ever hear of Dante's Inferno? That's very real. And that's the problem. As CAIN

sat above and lived like a KING, he relied on demonic and angelic forces to rule over the Earth. However, the demonic forces, I believe have gotten greedy. Dante's Inferno has evolved from seven layers of Hell, into fourteen layers - they're taking advantage of CAIN. Making CAIN create more layers of Hell, instead of fixing the problem. Which, in my opinion, is them - the "people in charge".

But it's a three-step mark, MIKEL.

The second part of the mark is you were raised almost fatherless. Your father was there to help you overcome the trauma. But most men don't have that in their lives - fathers. The mark is a three-step process.

First is you are traumatized as infants, then your fatherless upbringing, who will not be with you to help you overcome the trauma of receiving the mark. As it is written humans receive the mark voluntarily on their fore(skin)head. And every parent will volunteer this practice is done to their child, not knowing they are being eternally tricked

into having to return to Earth and miss their chance into Heaven.

MIKEL, if I cut off your fore (skin) - I reveal a (fore) head. Ever parent is told by the establishment that cutting off the fore (skin) prevents sexually transmitted disease and is "normal" - that's what they are led to believe - by the authority. But the authority also claims to be human, which they are not.

We entrusted, as I have told you, others to help us guide you into heaven. Soulless "people" - if you will, that refuse to come out and explain why they are here, and - even, that they are here. They were once gigantic in size. And after two Apocalypses' they were modified to look like you. You call their remains the dinosaurs. What you call them now - is the authority.

Michael, we are ascending angels that "do not kill", and "love one another". Because of the Mark of the Beast, the Galactic Empire and CAIN were forced to create a NEW realm, one for queer haters, and in the past few Earths, that realm is getting more overcrowded than both Heaven

and Hell. It's causing an imbalance. We never created the authority to gain control over our creations.

Which is what MAYHAM and I are fighting. We fight the authority – the children of darkness. They claim that you humans cannot change. They claim that you humans need torture and the Inferno to evolve. They are out of hand, taking advantage of our kindness, forgiveness, and dominion over them. Simply put they are taking advantage of us.

They do not fear Heaven or Hell, since they're soulless, and have their own home deep inside the Inferno. They care not what happens to them. They were entrusted, these creatures – the authority; to teach you value and virtues.

To value of your soul. Value of your planet. Value of your family, and neighbors, and also – to value your morals. In the meantime, that creation, the authority and justice, have run amuck of the teachings that they preach. They drag you into the place we created for them to punish you.

They are the evil that hide among us. The evil of the mind.

We, the Galactic Empire - do not grant them a name. Without a name, you have no power, and no magic can be bestowed upon you, whatsoever. They live longer, because they are biological machines. The names that they go by - Authority, Government, BANKS, public, people, people person, and person - We never gave them those names. They took it upon themselves to design those terms. So therefore, they do not contain the power in their entire being that CAIN, MAYHAM and I possess in our little finger.

Mikel, what are we going to do when you humans come up with a better means of transportation - what will we do with all these cars? We had the same problem with you humans. You humans mate and breed much faster than we can solve your problems. And remember, I wasn't always on your side. So, I have to admit regretfully I created this idea. I supported the solution. But now I have changed. I have evolved. Don't hate me but, MIKEL - but -

EARTH is another acronym - it stands for -

E
A

reptilians
T

humans

I'm sorry for the trouble I helped create, because it was never supposed to be this way.

I don't run MY DEMOCRACY, MIKEL. I can only assist MY DEMOCRACY. Come up with ideas, talk and vote. What happens next is evolution, and it's a process. This fix, this process, has taken on a new existence. An existence CAIN and I are here to solve.

For one, I never thought I would admire you humans, or even adore you humans - you are so unlike us demigods. And two, I never thought that our reptilian creations would ever defy us the way they

have, evolved to be so deceitful and aggressive.

The reptilians, unlike you, cannot handle first time events – they can't handle “accidents”. But you humans can. It's a terrible mess, and MIKEL - this was my idea. I'm sorry. The reptilians, or vampires, as you know them in folk lore – were my creation and my idea.

You humans had grown too big in number to control, so we created a “car that ran off of other cars,” in order to fix the problem. But, MIKEL, problems – just like solutions – evolve, and that is what we are facing now.

Pt.3

Pontoon Beach, Illinois - December
24th- 2007

Mikel, I know your father molested
you - you are a child molester - I can tell -
you carry the sign of a child molester.

Do what? I'm not a child molester. I
would never molest a child.

You carry the sign of a child molester;
I know you do. Admit it your father molested
you.

My father didn't molest me, you're
crazy. My father is a good man and would
never do anything like that.

Mikel you have more than one father.
I know you do. Your father molested you. I
know your father molested you. You carry
the sign of a person that's been molested.

Your father molested you. Admit it. I know you have more than one father. Everyone does. Your father molested you. Admit it.

My father never molested me.

Not your dad. Your father.

My stepdad was also a good man. He would have never molested me. He was a good man.

Somebody in your past has molested you – I know they have – you carry the sign of someone that's been molested. You have been molested, and if we let you continue to live, you will molest other children. We can't let that happen. There is a reason nobody wants you with them on Christmas. There is something wrong with you, otherwise you'd be with them and not here with me. You carry the sign of a child molester. People that have been molested will molest other children, and you carry the sign of a person

that has been molested – I KNOW YOU DO. I KNOW YOU DO. Admit it your father molested you.

If you've been molested, you will molest other children. We can't let that happen. But you have to admit this, you have been molested, haven't you? You carry the mark of a person that has been molested. Admit it. Your father molested you.

NO. I do not know what you are talking about.

Your father molested you. You have more than one father, Mikel, think about it. You carry the mark of a man that has been molested, I know you do.

How?

The way you act.

The way I act? Explain yourself.

Mikel, what are all these wars for?

Population control, obviously.

Correct. Thinning the herd of the possibility of more evil becoming ever more evil. We can't take care of every human. I don't have to explain, I can look at you and tell that you have been molested. Your father molested you. Admit it. Think about it. Admit it to me. I know your father molested you. It might be a distant memory, but you still remember being molested – I know you do. You carry the mark of a man that has been molested. Admit it Mikel, your father molested you.

It wasn't until CAIN explained to me about the "mark of the beast" that I understood what this person was telling me years ago on Christmas eve. Obviously another shape shifter trying to find a reason

to kill another human. It's obvious to me now what he was saying - my "heavenly father" molested me - at birth during circumcision. They use this trauma, placed there at birth, to get you to break down and remember being molested. Once you begin to cry, and you admit getting molested, they in turn - then - kill you. Hitch hiker rule 101 don't go to someone's house on Christmas.

We all think that Christmas as a family holiday. And it is. It also happens on the three darkest days of the year. There are two sides to the coin, that's what we are told, correct? What do "the forgotten" do for Christmas, besides suffer? If they are smart, they don't accept kindness from anyone. Not a trip home.

The three darkest days of the year - Christmas, is also the blood sacrifice of the global consciousness to the coven of the three kings. Evil witches will extract a forgotten person, someone nobody will miss - a bum, a homeless person, take them home, treat them with a little kindness, turn

on them, and kill them. I would know. I've been through it.

A blood sacrifice happens during the three days of darkness – all over the world for 24 hours. The ritual takes all the time of darkness provided to the planet so that the three kings can maintain control over the entire world's population. The Vatican knows about this, they're the ones that put the mark there for the forgotten to remember the trauma and beg for redemption - by their killers. Poor human – better off dead. Nobody loves him. An outcast. Trash.

Kill them with kindness. If you look in Jeremiah 10 – 3, it clearly states that a Christmas trees are an abomination to the Christian Religion. Do not cut a tree from the forest and adorn it with silver and gold and place gifts underneath it the way the pagans do – or something like that.

Constantine, a Roman, was no friend of the Christian, and bowed to the three

kings of evil. This ritual is a Constantine rite of passage for the shape shifters that hide among us. Ask Rome.

Christmas, for their kind, is a time to clean the streets of undesirable humans. Poor , downtrodden, homeless, family less people - broken people, ugly people - humans. Earthlings. The brood will pick up people that no-one will miss, treat them nice for two days and nights. Put them on a trial about their life, get them to admit life sucks and they are better off dead - then kill them in a sacrifice. Kill them with kindness. Happens every three darkest days of the year. These days represent the three kings of a world forgotten. OUR WORLD, forgotten by CAIN, our creator. The three darkest days of the year represent the three kings that rule the world - Today. Tomorrow. And "Yes Sir" Day. No-one escapes alive normally. I did.

After three rounds of Russian roulette.

But it wasn't till ten years later, after meeting

CAIN the King of Darkness and the Lord of LOVE and LIGHT – that I understood what this shapeshifting freak was saying to me over and over – “I know your father molested you. I know your father molested you”. That freak of space was talking about

MY HEAVINLY FATHER – my church father.

Thank you. Paybacks a bitch. And trust me bitch you paying it back.

Chapter 6

Let me know your mind

Pt.1

A few weeks ago, at MIKEL’S campsite, ABEL began to explain -

MIKEL, the powers that be - “the authority”, want to hold you in slavery forever. Keep you stuck between creationism and evolution forever. While everything around you evolves. Cars evolve. Commercials and T.V. evolve. Movie special effects and the way they are made evolve. The fashions you wear evolve. Hairstyles evolve. Tool’s evolve. Your phone has evolved. Everything around you, even the management’s ability to make new slaves has evolved.

Creation is a step by step process. I take this brick I put it here. I take this brick I put it there. Behold my creation. My creation is perfect, my creation is a wall.

Evolution happens when you break through the barriers and walls and **know** that there are **no** boundaries.

MIKEL, Beelzebub as she is called in the “good book” – is actually quite fantastic. If she were here, she could fix things. Quickly. We might not even have these problems.

I know that you’ve seen her, and the pictures of her – the goat head and three breasts, and yes – she can look like that. That was an accident.

We didn’t have “fictional” books back in the old days. We came up with fictional books so that what happened to BB wouldn’t happen to anyone else. The books we had in the old days were all training manuals.

And Beelzebub – who I prefer to call BB, or Queen Bee, cause that’s what she is; she is the Queen BEE in our history – she loved reading. She loved reading so much that she would break into the library to read. There wasn’t a lock or door she couldn’t get through. And we couldn’t allow what happened to her happen to anyone else. So, we created fictional story’s, fables and fantasy’s, for those that like to read.

MIKEL, BB grew to read five books at a time levitating through osmosis. She learned more than anyone else, faster than anyone else.

She is a prisoner just like you. And just like me, she is a volunteer. She went into banishment with LORD DR. EVIL Quetzalcoatl, and the others in hopes that brother and I could fix this alone and return her here. Fix her. She is very bi-polar at times, and she can shape shift.

MIKEL, when I say she loved reading I mean it. She discovered how to shape shift on her own.

There weren't a rule about goats being in the Library, but girls were not allowed. Thus, the goat head and three breasts. Keeping her out of the Library was problematic to say the least.

She is not a LORD, or a GOD – she is only known in our kingdom as a High

Priestess and Queen of the flyers – Queen Bee. She’s not even a demigod, MIKEL. But she is royalty. She is a Queen. Eden is her birth name. This was her home. The Garden of Eden.

I know that you have heard me call her “Beelze- BOZO” – but that’s because I never wanted her to go. I was totally opposed to her volunteering for banishment. With her, we could’ve fixed this by now. She is very powerful and very respected.

She is also very pregnant. With my children. It was a “mistake” – if you will, on my part – getting her pregnant. I was young, General of TWO army’s, had two great mates – Akosha and Asoka. No man could want more. I thought everything belonged to me, and I could have it all.

BB was one of my students, and we mated – I took our relationship too far because I wouldn’t take “NO” for an answer. She was just different than the twins.

I love Akosha and Asoka, but I love Eden differently. She, however, currently – hates me; I don't know why but I would assume it's because she could've fixed all this by now, and she is pregnant with my kids.

She is almost done with being pregnant, MIKEL. She is about to give birth to my first children. I need to get her out of banishment. She still hasn't forgiven me for ruining her body with pregnancy, but I hope that when she is released and not pregnant anymore – that the two of us can share some type of family. Together or apart. You have taught me MIKEL – how to be a good father. We have been soul mates many times MIKEL. And you always do the most you can for your children. You do. I have learned so much from you MIKEL.

I have feelings for Eden, BB, that are different than the feelings I had for Akosha and Asoka. I know I did things wrong, by cheating on the twins, but what's done is done – right? I still wouldn't change a thing. Accept for the “taking so long” part of

getting Eden out of banishment. That I would definitely change.

Eden and I didn't mate but a few times, but as you well know – it's not how often you mate that determines if you get her pregnant or not.

That's what I am guilty of. For our children sake, I should've fixed this by now. I'm running out of time.

Chapter 7

All I want to know is -

Pt.1

On the streets of Tucson, April 2015.
CAIN'S third day physical

I have to get a message to the
Church. I have to talk to them now.

Suddenly CAIN, infuriated at the mess
he was seeing around him, crossed the
street to get to the church that was in my
head. He paid no attention to the oncoming
traffic -

Jesus Christ!!!! ABEL, will you tell your
brother to watch out? I almost got hit by
that truck, he can't do this - he can't just
walk into traffic.

Easy MIKEL, Jesus Christ is standing right here. CAIN “is” the KING of Kings, MIKEL, watch your mouth. I can’t tell him what to do – I’m just the general. He tells me what to do. And I do it. SOMETIMES. I can’t tell the King what to do. I can’t tell him anything, MIKEL. That’s the problem we are fixing. Capiche, MIKEL?

I want to visit a church being run in my honor.

CAIN, they’re only open on Sunday. It’s Wednesday.

Someone will be there, surely. If it’s in mine name - the way I tell them to.

Well, yeah they operate as a school for kids, it’s WEDNESDAY – CAIN, they don’t operate the same on Wednesday. This one feed’s and give showers on Monday and Friday. Has church on Sunday, and offer’s a service for children throughout the week; we

can go there, but I warn you CAIN, history has it - this might not work well for the KING of King's.

CAIN, no one ever bothered to tell the humans that you are also the King over the Kings of Darkness and Evil - therein lies the problem. These humans are the children of Light, not children of Darkness where we come from.

The three of them walked to the KIVA and knocked on the back door. MIKEL had been in communication with this church on ABEL'S behalf throughout the entire Apocalypse - so they probably think he's a nut job. He wouldn't blame them either. And to believe he got dragged into this after someone hit him in the head with a rock, AT that churches parking lot five months ago.

Now this, MIKEL'S taking the Holy Spirit of Jesus Christ - CAIN, ABEL'S brother, to church. CAIN wanted to go when it was

closed to see what would happen and ask questions.

When they got to the church, the church graciously offered MIKEL some salad, slice of pizza and a yellow bell pepper – CAIN had never had a yellow bell pepper before. This was something new to him. He got a little over excited.

It didn't help that upon his arrival he asked some pretty creepy question's that went something like this, "what is a homeless feeding? Why are they homeless?"

As if I didn't know myself but it seemed CAIN was blaming the masses for homelessness not knowing all the facts. CAIN was simply curious and looking for answers.

"What is credit?" – he continued, "How does one use credit?" He asked if he could see a credit card and the poor lady

walked away, that's when CAIN ate the plate of food that the church had provided. We ate the salad and the pizza, with no necessary excitement, but when CAIN ate the yellow bell pepper, he became very energetic and happily too excited. Way too excited.

As soon as we got inside to express our excitement over the yellow bell pepper, we were grabbed by the shoulder and kicked out. CAIN had been just a little too weird with the question's, MIKEL believes.

AS they crossed the street MIKEL said to CAIN. -

" Sorry you got kicked out of Church - J.C."

"MIKEL", ABEL said, "That's the best reception we've ever had, haven't you heard the story?"

Don't give up brother. I promise you we will go when it's operating as a church. I think I see why dad kept having MIKEL come here now, but I can't tell you everything. Come on CAIN; let's go do something I know you've never done before. It's the only way MIKEL is going to make any money. We will go and fly a sign.

We will beg for money. In the meantime, inmate, keep counting stones till we get there.

They walked to the busy section of 23rd Avenue and Highway ten and flew a sign that read "anything helps". MIKEL stood there for three hours and made \$2.50.

Why do they make them do this?

CAIN, people rely on jobs here to survive. All these cars are people operating everything you see around you. They are

busy at the task of running the operation.
Running society.

That wasn't a replicator you were looking into a minute ago - that was an ash tray. That's where people put their trash. People don't share their tobacco. And it is not replicated. MIKEL scavenges his tobacco because he is broke and poor.

After making \$10.00 which took almost another two hours, MIKEL ditched the sign and walked to the Library.

What's wrong with MIKEL'S stomach?

He's hungry CAIN. He has to eat something.

What's he going to eat?

Whatever he finds or begs for; and MIKEL won't beg. So, eat this.

ABEL grabbed a jalapeno off the ground.

Oh my. What's happening to my mouth? It burns. It burns badly. Help me. ABEL?

It's "on fire".

- OH MY, what do I do? It burns. It burns badly.

That was a jalapeno. We call that a spicy pickle, CAIN. That burning sensation is called "spicy". The human tongue can taste many different sensations. I wasn't trying to hurt you CAIN, I just had to have a little fun with you. You just ate your first jalapeno. Good job.

How long does “spicy” last, it hurts?

Sometimes forever. No I’m only kidding. Let’s go get some water, that’ll fix it.

Where can we get some water?

At the Library. Come on lets go, it’s just right there.

CAIN tried the door, but the door was locked.

Don’t open till 9 a.m. – its only 8:45 a.m., CAIN. I guess you’ll just have to suffer. No come on, there’s water at the bus station.

What a wimp you are KING. Jalapenos are very well loved by the people of Arizona.

MIKEL loves his jalapenos. But that was your first one. I'm proud of you. You handled it like a champ.

Pt. 2

The next day on the North Side Church Facebook page appeared –

Dear Pastor Alice,

What's the difference between you and MIKEL? MIKEL ascended. What's your excuse? Why can't you ascend? What could possibly be the difference between you and a homeless man with five educations that also goes to church like you? The only thing that comes to mind for me is that MIKEL spent many years fighting fires. Six of them. That means he was willing to die for you,

just like Jesus, without ever meeting you –
just like Jesus.

Would you do that for anyone but
your family?

Die for them, like a soldier does?

I know you can do it. I know you can
ascend. It is written. It's in the Bible. Didn't
you learn that in the past? OR, am I just
fooling myself? You went to seminary
school. Didn't they ever talk about this in
the past? Or was it just other more
important issues, like keeping us in a vicious
cycle of living and dying?

Everyone has something to hide.
Everyone does. Trust me you should spend a
day at my job

- "Let me guess, you didn't know it
was loaded? Didn't know it was plugged in.
Ohhhhhh, you didn't know he was coming
home early, that's a new one – no, I'm just

kidding. Just yanking your chain. Still got you here, didn't it? Let me see, which button should I push, soooo many to choose from?

Well, which button would you like me to push? Decisions, decisions, so many choices – which choice is the best one?

Should I push all of them?

Well, here, you pick one. No not that one, anyone but that one. Well, ok, but I tried to warm ya. Talk to the hand, I'm only doing my job.

I can't put you back in that old body of yours, that's all broken.

Good move.

Listen, when you see Satan, ask him where the men's toilet is. It's a long running joke, and I just can't resist messing with him. The look on his face is priceless. Sigh ignore ya!"

I mean the list at my job goes on and on – forever it seems. But listen, we all have something to hide. I mean think about the Baptist. They don't like music and dancing in front of other people. Mormons don't like any vice in front of other church members. And Amish people don't – well, I don't know what they don't do. I've never met one, have you? I don't know what they don't do. Why don't you be a dear, and find out for me, I'm dying to know.

Either way, I know you can ascend. But you have to LOVE unconditionally. Both Jesus, and MIKEL, love you enough to die for you, without so much as a thank you, or more than a \$20.00 bill. It is written, Pastor Alice. It can be done.

It's been done. And this is important.

Do you remember when I told you about asking Satan where the men's toilet is? Well, Pastor Alice, that's where we put the LOVE LIGHT switch. That's what makes the joke with Satan so priceless, dare I say. The look on Satan's face when ya'll ask him – it's a hoot, it's a real hoot. That look makes me laugh every time I see it.

Listen I know – you need another sign, but not today. I just gave you the map to the LOVE LIGHT switch. You can't miss it, I promise. MAYHAM made sure of it. Just follow the signs. You obviously need them, so MAYHAM put plenty there for you to follow, unlike mine of course. That is all Pastor Alice.

Yours truly – General DEATH.

Pt.3.

Where is he going?

He's getting some food, CAIN. He's hungry.

Why didn't he go inside like the others?

Well that's for "their kind", that's a privilege "those kind" get. The management and the others get to eat from inside. Mikel gets a very special treat, called EATING OUT OF A DUMPSTER LIKE THOSE KIND OF PEOPLE DO.

“Those kind”?

Oh yeah, CAIN, your management been doing a wonderful job at telling the humans how different all of you are - to their kind, and they act just like you.

What are all those things?

Those are cigarette butts, CAIN.

Why do they put them on the ground?

So, the management doesn't have to throw them away, inside of a trash can, and also, so the slaves have a task - picking up the trash. “Pick up after me.” Task?

Something to stay busy, CAIN. Like begging for money to eat. MIKEL hates to beg. I mean with five educations why should he beg for money, this guy should be working, but thank the LORD'S he isn't cause otherwise we'd be having an ARMAGEDDON wouldn't we?

The humans are supposed to be ascending, not doing meaningless task. I know that the humans CAN ascend, CAIN, MIKEL did it. So can the others. But we all know what the problem is, don't we?

But brother I never said to treat the humans
like.....

I know, CAIN. That's why I have you here. We will never get the other humans to ascend, as long as the management continues down this direction. "When salt loses its saltiness" CAIN, you know the deal. Your creation or not – DEMZ DUH RULEZ,

and we gotta follow the rules; that's in the rules.

So here we are. CAIN, inmate, this is for your own good. Now get in there and eat, MIKEL is hungry.

But it look's nasty.

Get in there, inmate, before I kick your ass and throw you in there. You are going to get into that dumpster, and you are going to find this body of MIKEL'S some food. Now GO, sire, before I stop being nice to you.

It's dirty in there.

So, what. Don't you complain, CAIN? This is what MIKEL has to do if he gets hungry. This is how he and many others just like him are forced to eat, CAIN. Your management makes sure that they have to.

Eat, CAIN. Eat up. Make sure you find something good too. You can't eat everything from the trash. Some of this stuff will get you sick, so you have to be picky. Eat - CAIN.

This is disgusting. I can't do this.

Oh, yes you can and- yes you will - ABEL throws CAIN against the dumpster hard - INMATE EAT. You eat this trash CAIN, cause if its good enough for MIKEL and all he can get to eat, it's what you're going to eat. You are human right now. So you will eat just like a human. EAT INMATE, EAT.

That a boy, KING. Eat. The human body isn't like our bodies or the managements bodies. CAIN, humans are warm blooded, not cold blooded like the management. They have to have warm food to get their bodies going and stay in good health. But the management is cold blooded, CAIN. And they mock the humans at every turn.

MIKEL isn't allowed to buy hot food, or even coffee with his social security food stamp card. The management claims that this will ruin the nation, poor people buying hot food and coffee. But, CAIN – inmate, humans need hot food to get their bodies going. It's not just for the caffeine. It's for the heat. It gets them warm on the inside.

CAIN, I think you've had enough food from the trash. Come on, let's go.

What about MIKEL being hungry?

He'll wait till dinner is served tomorrow; he doesn't eat this shit – its trash. They might only have a few dinners a week here, but I have taught MIKEL how to meditate through the hunger pains. He can go all week without a meal, and sometimes does. I just had to give you the full experience of being a human in a prison run in your glory, big brother. You did good brother; I am proud of you.

Pt.4

The next day on the North Side Church Facebook page appeared -

Pastor Alice -

I want you to know this morning was my brother, the KING of King's first mile walked, first morning sky, first wind on face, FIRST jalapeno, what a wimp. This has been a good day for us.

I keep saying I understand that you need a sign, do I not? Let me explain to you why. There was once a little girl named Pestilence - I call her PESTY, she is my second in command of my Apocalypse strike team. She was assigned to the team after

the 2nd Apocalypse. She is the first BITCH
ever given
COMPASSION.

Before we go any further, yes, I called her a bitch, she is - or was - a bitch. Understand that in the places of the world where women have freedom like men - it was an army of bitches that helped us evolve there. So, the bitch does have its place in our history and evolution - especially the evolution of women being treated - well nice.

Pesty, is a real bitch when she wants to be- but do not call my girl a bitch or you will deal with me personally GENERAL DEATH.

Pesty was the first bitch, the very first one to be given compassion. And there was a time AFTER THE PANGIA VOTE, after Apocalypse 2 - that the Apocalypse strike team had just been a BOYS ONLY CLUB. And well WE NEEDED A SIGN - just like you.

You're made in the image of God; we have our doubts sometimes too. So, our team of BOY'S ONLY designed a test that

would prove whether the compassion was in there. Or not.

We were younger and more immature and also drunk more times than not, so me and the boys devised a plan to get OUR SIGN. The Pangea had been split, so Lord DR. EVIL himself, Quetzalcoatl, D-man and Pesto, PESTY'S immaculate creation, and I were having way too much fun and living in another UTOPIA called Aztlan.

Famine was on assignment "HELPING" - if you will- helping us get OUR SIGN. He took one for the team and watched over PESTY but never said anything. Quiet, just like he always is. PESTY claims she's heard him talk before, but I think she's lying.

NOW IF THERE IS A LEGEND OF A REALLY BAD ASS GIRL, WHO CAN BEAT UP AN ENTIRE VILLAGE OF MEN WALKING UP THE HIMALAYAN MOUNTAINS WITH A VERY QUIET CHIRPA WHO MAY OR MAY NOT HAVE GOLF CLUBS, AND AN UMBRELLA, BARE FOOTED - THAT IS THE LEGEND OF PESTY.

We were anti female and very warrior and very -uh- drunk all the time, and we needed a sign. We devised an obstacle course. A very difficult and life-threatening obstacle course. Totally created by the mastermind of most of our operations, PESTO himself. PESTY'S immaculate creation. The obstacle course is legendary and mythical at this point.

There are probably still eight dead PESTY bodies on the trail up or down the Himalayan Mountains - frozen still to this day.

Our "SIGN", if you will, took us 600 years and 35 PESTY'S to get - with a 26 year battle between PESTY and the LORD of EVIL - my once upon a time commander - DR. EVIL himself, King of all jungle's, QUETZALCOATL, who lost his title and rank in the Apocalypse crew over this test with Pesty about her compassion.

KIABAB !!!! - did you hear that?

Oh, that's gonna leave a mark? How we gonna explain that?

Oh, let's just say the rain did it.
Our reigning champ!..... Lord DR.
EVIL.

Man - 26 years. We better watch it around PESTY, if she ever makes it on the squad, we in trouble. She's a bad bitch now. If that compassion ain't in there after this we screwed.

Should we fix this place?

Who's gonna ever know? It's a rain forest no one lives in. Besides, who would ever come here? It's just a big hole in the ground now.

Who's gonna know the difference years from now... she shoulda won that fight. That was all her, till the end - poor Pesty.

Boys I don't know if she truly wants to be on this team - OR IF SHE'S OUT FOR EVENGE.

This might just backfire on us boys. That compassion better be in there or we are dead meat.

So, Pastor Alice, I truly understand that you need a sign. I do. You are made in the image of God, and we are made in the image of you. We needed a sign when it came to Pesty and her new sense of compassion. And now you need a sign. We went a little overboard with Pesty, so I do not mind one bit. Like I said I get it - I totally understand your need for a sign. I do.

If she can forgive us for that, the compassion is in there, boys. We will be fine. But if it's not - we better prepare ourselves for bed - eternal rest type bed cause PESTY is a bad ass now.

If any one of you ever tell her there wasn't anything in that potion but food coloring - we're screwed. PESTY has hit full potential.

MMMuuuuuMMM'S the word boys.

We gotta pinky swear on this one boys.

Trust me when I say to you that I understand how, and why, you could need a sign. But there comes a time when we've gone too far and come too far, and you have to ignite your faith. And accept your sign and move forward.

Because you are the pastor, I wanted you to know that I brought CAIN, who is the HOLY SPIRIT OF CHRIST to your church. We were run off, but I wanted you to know, he said it was the best reception he has ever had. Maybe you've heard the story.

So, no worries. We'll come back when you're operating as a Church. Sorry to scare you. I'm not giving you a sign today. I just wanted to tell you, Jesus Christ and I are sorry to have dropped in unannounced. That is all Pastor.

Yours truly - General DEATH

Chapter 8

Is, Are you KIND?

Pt.1

That night at MIKEL'S campsite
underneath the Tucson stars. -

WODEN, you're out !!! You just got out. I am glad you are free. Thank you for your help with the suit - but look, I don't want you in my MILITARY. Nothing personal. I just want you to go have some fun. You've been gone a very long time.

And if you insist on being in my military you are here by ordered to go and have some fun first, then report back to me.

Nothing personal, but you are hereby ordered to go have some fun

- THAT'S AN ORDER. Capiche?

So, it's either, go have some fun and not be in my military - or you are here by ordered to go have some fun - if you are in my military.

Don't insubordinate, or I will punish you by making you go have some fun with

my wolf pack, cream pies and seltzer water fights, understood?

Good.

Pt.2

Wooden, we have a job for you. You wanted to be in my military, and won't go away and have some fun - and well I'm sick of looking at you, so - you're going to be my new scout chief - now, look, go release everyone that you "like" and "trust" for this assignment - do you understand - you want a military job, this is it - since you refuse to go have some fun.

I need someone to go see what's bothering us, these planes are still dropping these bad chemtrails - which means we have something else here with us. They are definitely out of my jurisdiction, and my other scouts are busy.

So I need a new scout crew, that's gonna be you and whoever you pick - remember only release the "most trusted" and "most liked".

A few hours later -

I don't know who to release.

I LOST THAT BET. I guessed he be back in 15 minutes - you guessed an hour, so no one wins. WODEN, we knew you'd have trouble. I mean who you gonna release that you "trust" and "like" after 600 million years of stabbing each other in the back in our constant WAR? So, we knew it'd be tough to decide. Look WODEN, go release them all.

THAT'S AN ORDER.

Copy, WODEN?

SIRE.

GO LET ALL THOSE SUCKA'S OUT
SIRE, and get to work SCOUTS of the
GALAXY.

- THAT'S AN ORDER.

Pt.3

WODEN- ABEL, how we doing out
there?

We're gonna be O.K.!!!!

WODEN, I don't care about you
scout's, ya'll are disposable, how are WE
doing?

We're gonna be o.k.!!

Woden, I don't give a damn about you
scouts - what about US.????

We - are - gonna - be - o- k -

WODEN there you go with that selfishness again, I don't care about you scouts (he he he) LOOK, did you see anything? See anything at all?

NO, I HAVEN'T.

Nice - call me when you do.

Pt.4

OK, Vamps, here's how we are going to play this. There will be no more Wolf Pack, no more vampire killers. We are one big ugly family now. It's either this, or we kill all of you now. Your choice.

But here's the deal, if you want some of my respect, you now have this one chance to earn a little, or muck it up real bad, capiche?

You will follow WODEN, give him space, but follow him. I need him to have back up. Do not disturb him. Your only assignment is to have his back. If he needs you, you better bring him back alive. I still haven't learned to like you, so I don't care how many you lose. He comes back - in one piece, no matter how many fall - you up for earning this very little bit, and first step, in my new respect for you and our new truce?

Good. - now go, THAT'S AN ORDER.

Glad they're gone.

Wolf Pack, I need two of the elder's and two of the youngest.

Give them a day's lead, and I want you to go prove to them that we are a family now. Show them we mean business about being friends and that our fight is over, capiche?

Take as many seltzer bottles and cream pies as necessary. Don't let them

down till they laugh their once evil asses off. Impress Me, - That's an ORDER.

This is gonna be funny, little brother.

Oh, you think so now, but the truth is - this is gonna be really really funny. I wish I could see the look on their faces when the wolf pack shows up....

Pt.5

CAIN, today we are going to take a break and do something I know you have never done. And I will explain a few things to you.

ABEL, CAIN and I went to the market and bought a steak and pint of Ben and Jerry's ice cream.

We took the trolley back to the River Park Inn and walked the bike trail to the city grill, steak in hand.

CAIN, ABEL explained to his brother, we needed the protein to develop the brain. And you're going to cook and eat a steak today. MIKEL'S body could use the steak. He has walked many a mile for you since you have been here.

We started a fire and sat and talked. ABEL taught his brother to use his smell and senses of hearing and feeling to cook the steak over the fire.

A KING like CAIN had never done anything for himself in a physical form. This was another first.

The steak was hefty; ABEL was spoiling the KING with MIKEL'S well fare credit that had just come on after the dumpster incident.

After the steak they dug into the Ben and Jerry's pint of an ice cream that had full

chunks of peanut butter chocolate candy in it. CAIN had never tasted anything but our chocolate chip cookies, he'd never had anything as good as this ice cream.

See, humans came up with this thing called ice cream on their own. They can evolve. I love this stuff.

About that time one of the peanut butter cups got stuck in MIKEL'S throat. MIKEL started to choke. MIKEL was alone.

MIKEL had to give himself CPR by throwing himself against the park table. The candy eventually came out. But it was the first time CAIN had ever felt the fear of death a human goes through. ABEL began to explain –

CAIN go easy. We still have the Apocalypse Weapon on and if MIKEL dies I gotta go to work. We're not trying to destroy the place, or MIKEL. We can't control them so easily. Let the human give you the experience, CAIN.

Brother, what is that?

In the Santa Cruz wash next to the park grill was a coyote walking slowly. The coyote was sick with mange, and ABEL explained this to his brother and added, if she's here looking for food that means there's no food in the mountains of Tucson.

She's sick CAIN. Even the wildlife is needing us to free this prison.

Pt.6

That afternoon on 4th (Horseman)
Ave. -

- on the corner of 9th and 4th

This is all wrong. This is all wrong. I have been deceived. My team is not doing what I'm being told. This is wrong. Very

wrong. Oh, brother, oh brother, I have been deceived. This is so terribly wrong. This is not what I was expecting to see. This place is incredible and waaay – not the way it's supposed to be. I'm being told lies. What am I supposed to do? What am I supposed to do ABEL?

Little overwhelming isn't it? CAIN, you look stressed. Have a seat.

CAIN sat on the potted barrel cactus on the corner of 4th and 9th Avenue, not knowing any better.

OWWWWWWWW!!!

Well I didn't say sit there. That's a cactus – they bite, CAIN. Sorry brother, I had to do that. We haven't goofed on each other in a very long time. I just had to do it. Please forgive me Lord of Forgiveness. Haha. – I got you. I got you good, too.

I wanted to show you something, CAIN. Even the plants have a defense system. Check it out. The plants here evolved to survive by creating thorns so that the herbivores wouldn't eat and kill them. Everything wants to survive, CAIN. Everything evolves. Even the KING of Kings.

CAIN examined the plant closer upon getting up from the ground. CAIN, having never been human before, had also never been curious before. Curiosity got the best of the KING of Kings, and he touched the thorns on the barrel cactus.

Ow!!!

That a boy MIKEL, give your life over to Christ, even though you knew better - I love you MIKEL. CAIN - he didn't have to do that for you. He knew it was going to hurt him from lessons he learned doing the same thing growing up. But he let you do it CAIN. See what I mean, CAIN? See what I mean.

Don't forget, CAIN, the human feels everything we feel 1000 times more and 1000 times faster than we do ourselves- we might not think that we are stressed but we are, and they will show it to you. You got to watch everything about yourself inside of A HUMAN. Everything about yourself. So, watch it. That's important because I think that's the problem we are facing.

Yeah, that's called pain, CAIN. You're not supposed to touch a cactus like that. Good boy MIKEL, you didn't have to let him do that - I'm proud of you MIKEL.

CAIN let's go over here and talk, I will let you rest. Have you counted a **Billion** specks of sand yet?

No, I have not. SIRE.

Well let's sit and talk. I know you're wondering about the cities of glass. Trust me they have them; I know they do - I

helped them build one. But they aren't here. They're underground. Way underground.

What about the gates? This isn't the way I designed this place - this is not the way it's supposed to be.

They don't share the gates, CAIN. Brother there is a telescope here in Tucson. It's a national observatory. The budget for this telescope, I read in the paper, is SEVEN BILLION DOLLARS'.

The mayor boasted in the paper that the people that run this observatory use the money to buy houses and cars and eat at restaurants in the community. The mayor claims that the observatory is - to quote him directly - "looking for a worm hole 6 million light years from Earth." So it would supposedly take us another 300 years to find out if they actually found a worm hole that far from Earth.

The thing about looking for a worm hole is this – no-one knows what a worm hole looks like, so how are they going to find one?

They're not.

They're just fleecing the money out of the system to stay on top while the entire community has to argue over how to spend 100 thousand dollars to fix roads and sidewalks. This is how they respect the authority you have granted "their kind". This is how they respect the "Value" that you let "their kind" apply to the masses.

While MIKEL has been in this town only a short while, he has found worm holes all over the place. They know exactly where they are at; they put baseball fields, schools, libraries and football fields on top of them. They know where they're at; we told them where they are at. But they hide them and shut them down. They're not sharing. And they are not "being kind".

We entrusted “them” to help the humans “ascend”, and also help the humans “descend”, so that the humans could take care of the Earth’s core. We entrusted them because of what happened to them with Mars. It’s was decided democratically. A democratic decision that I didn’t agree with. But I do not run my democracy. So, I had to comply. They were homeless and needed a place to live because of the “accident”.

That was no accident little brother –

Oh, CAIN, they were going to destroy this place. I couldn’t let them do that. So, I flipped the reversing valve, so what. They weren’t supposed to hit the button seven times; that’s what destroyed the place.

I’m glad I did it. You should be too. But we have given their kind home after home after home. They don’t belong here. And they do not respect this place. When salt loses its saltiness, it must be returned to the sea – it’s written down, it’s in the rules.

Demz duh rulez – and we gotta follow the rules; that’s in the rules.

CAIN, I want to do something with you. Let’s go drink a beer. MIKEL has made a few bucks off his book. Let’s show you what money can do around here and relax a little, in the mean time between here and there – you keep counting those specks of sand. You’re doing good MIKEL, and I know you need a drink too.

CAIN, we have to share these bodies. We can’t dominate or control the humans. We have to let them rest. We have to let them relax. The humans of this world do suffer from drugs and alcohol – I will admit this. But the management is cheating. They implant the humans with RFID chip’s – which they are not allowed to do against their will or by force – and they are doing both; at birth. At birth CAIN, before they can walk, talk, or commit any type of crime.

On top of this is the amount of money everything around here cost. The people of this Earth, most of them, don't make enough money to go somewhere and relax on a vacation; but they can afford a \$20.00 rock of crack or bag of meth. And the management knows this. Takes full advantage of this too.

Yes, they poop and pee in their water, but they're trained to do that at birth. Yes, they eat meat, but humans don't think of that as cannibalism the way we do back home. They need the protein for their brains and muscle's. You can't hold that against them.

That trauma that MIKEL suffered when he took the "MARK OF THE BEAST" - he was an infant; he didn't sign up for that.

The management is not doing things right, and I'm glad you can see this now with your own set of eyes. A new set of eyes.

Pt.7

ABEL, CAIN and MIKEL walked for miles. All the while CAIN was being forced to look at specks of sand. They walked all day. They walked to the shower that was five miles away and back. They walked to the hospital and back. They walked to 4th Avenue - when they reached 4thAvenue CAIN asked, "Can we sit down? I am so tired. I cannot walk anymore. I have to sit down. I can't take all this counting."

They are only ONE speck of SAND in a mighty
BIG and VAST - PATH of your destruction,
CAIN - aren't they? You want to sit down,
inmate? Is that correct?

Yes, sire, yes, I do.

Understood. You've done well for being your first-time walking, but I don't feel like you are ready for a rest- MIKEL, three more miles, if you will.

But, brother.

This is important CAIN. MIKEL? Three more miles please. MIKEL used to fight wildland fires. His hardest shift ever was 56 hours long. If you don't tone down your insubordinate tone, I will ask him to do 12 more miles, inmate.

They walked the three more miles and ended up at the fire house on Cushing Street.

CAIN, I want you to know that I am proud of you. You are a much bigger King today than you were five days ago. Brother, I have brought you here for a very good reason. MIKEL has given much of himself; he has done most of the walking. But this time

- you are going to do the walking, and MIKEL will assist.

He will only assist. This time around YOU will be the one walking.

CAIN, we used to think that walking was a human weakness, never understanding it's a blessing to be able to walk. We are spirits. We evolved past walking. Humans are at the beginning of "LIFE", life is something different than where we come from.

Humans still have to walk. When they are young they can't even walk. They crawl. But in time, with help, and a few falls, humans evolve to walk. So, big brother, this time - you are going to do the walking. Remember what MIKEL has shown you. Ready? GO - CAIN took a few steps. Maybe three.

No. No. NO. Watch MIKEL. MIKEL show the KING a few more steps.

MIKEL took five more steps.

OK, KING, did you see the way MIKEL did that, now you do the same. GO.

This time, CAIN went slower. His steps were small, his footing feeble and shaky, but MIKEL held onto his hands. As CAIN took his tenth and fifteenth steps, MIKEL couldn't help but notice the pride in his smile. He was walking. Until this moment CAIN had been cursed for an eternity to slither the ground, punishment for the treason against the Galactic Council. But here now, CAIN was walking his very first steps.

Stop, MIKEL. How did he do?

His steps were small. His steps were weak. But for a God that has never walked before, he did great. – He did really good.

I did?

Yes, you did LORD. I have a daughter named Shaolin. She's all grown up now. But one of my favorite times being her father was being there helping her walk her first steps. I had so much fun being her dad at that time. I thought I would never be able to go through that again. Thank you, LORD.

And MIKEL broke down into tears. He collapsed on the ground and he just cried.

Why is he crying?

He loves you. And you just gave him the gift of reliving his first steps with his daughter. These humans will DIE for you CAIN. He loves what has just happened and knows there is no going back – the moment

is gone. It's just a memory now. But did you hear him, he said you did good. Good job, CAIN. I am proud of you. You didn't even have to crawl the way the humans do.

You all right, MIKEL?

MIKEL?

I'm ok. It was just good to help, be there for the LORD. I am honored to have helped. Being a dad feels so good. Being a hero to your kids. I'm not much of a hero right now, but there was a time that I was. And I miss it.

I thought I would never get to experience that feeling again, a child's hands around my fingers as they take their first steps. It felt so good to help you, LORD. Thanks for letting me help.

Now we can rest, CAIN.

They went to the campsite along the Santa Cruz wash, and watched the sunset in quiet.

Pt.8

CAIN, you do realize – do you not; that as we sit here and watch this sunset, your sunset; you just took your first steps. That means one Eternity has come to an end, CAIN. And a new Eternity has just begun.

Your curse has been broken. The curse is broken, CAIN, you just walked.

I didn't think of it till just now, little brother. I am surprised, but you are correct. My curse has been broken. Gods plan, and man laughs. Interesting.

Chapter 9

For whom the bell toll's

Pt.1

That evening at the campsite

- MIKEL, I need to do this meth -

Jesus Christ!!!! What did you say to me? OH sorry - what the hell you ask me, J.C.? Get you some what? I beg your pardon?

ABEL, he wants me to do "what"? - MIKEL had been drinking a beer with CAIN and this slips out his mouth, beer went thru his nose.

WAIT a minute, CAIN, - people pray to you to

GET OFF METH. And you want me to - get you some meth? I don't know how I feel about this. I'm a little offended, I don't really do meth. I don't like it.

MIKEL, I need to see what this meth is like. I need to know. I have "learned", MIKEL,

upon arriving here with you; that there is sooooo much I do not “know” – MIKEL – we **“know”** everything; or least I thought we did – but I have evolved, and I am “LEARNING,” for the first time in a very long time.

MIKEL, learning is something I haven’t done in 56 trillion AGES- MIKEL. 56 Trillion ages, give or take a few Trillion, MIKEL. I need to **“learn”** everything I can, in order to be a better KING, MIKEL.

56 trillion ages, MIKEL, as in Dark Ages, Jurassic Age, Information Age, Golden Age, Bronze Age, and because of ABEL that also includes the – Ice Age –

THE Stoned Ages – can’t forget the stoned ages.

MAYHAM!!!!

All of 'em –

MAYHAM, this is serious.

Don't forget the DRUNK AGE'S either

– BOSS.

MAYHAM. That's enough.

- ALL OF 'EM, lest you drunk too much.....

MAYHAM-

Which you were, I made sure of that.

MAYHAM!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!
that's enough.

- All of 'EM too. I made sure you DIHD, BOSS, admit it, ABEL. Go on admit it..... admit it. Admit it BOSS.

MAYHAM!!! You are not helping.

- What's the problem, BOSS? The KING is here!!! I'm celebrating phifes fictory. Sour hicktory phhhhhh. (Hick up)

Your drunk and I'm jealous. THAT'S what the problem is, MAYHAM. I can't drink right now. I'm trying to run an Apocalypse, here - MAYHAM - I can't get drunk. Go do something else besides get drunker and come back. I'm serious MAYHAM.

I should've never let him out of my military. I regret that sometimes. I miss telling him what to do. Like "don't do that!!", and "definitely don't do that!!" But I emancipated him, what can I do? I can't tell

him anything. I regret it sometimes, I do.
Especially because I can't ever say, "NOW
what did you do THAT for?" - I miss saying
that.

I think you can understand where I am
going with this.

CAIN!?..... ABEL? WTH man?

You're on a diplomatic mission MIKEL,
this is important, he is the KING of King's,
but you have "free will" and you were also
born, and live, in a prison which is on the
outer rim to the kingdom - so you do NOT
bow to a KING.

Even the KING of King's.

You can say "NO", but you know what
we are dealing with better than anyone. He
does need to **"know"** MIKEL. **"Learning"**
and "Discovery" is new to CAIN, and this
would really help us out. You won't hurt our

feelings, and you and I both know it's not like you can't get this done. It's your call.

I can't believe this shit, really?

It just feels so odd to be a bad influence on JESUS CHRIST. What if he gets hooked? Last thing I need around here is another God of Destruction hooked on Meth. Got plenty of those around here.

- ABEL, do something. I don't know how I feel about this - this is strange. Scoring dope for Christ - what's this shit.

It is, "give your life and will OVER to CHRIST" - MIKE, that includes your will.

Oh man. Well, I think I have heard a wise man once say, "don't do it if you can't brag about it, and don't brag about it unless

you did it.” This is going in the book, CAIN. But I don’t want to do this. I will feel so bad if I get Christ addicted to meth. I would burn in hell for that one.

**WE MISS YOU ALREADY, MIKE,
HURRY BACK-----**

MAYHAM STOP DOING THAT!!!!-
You’re not helping, MAYHAM. You’re not helping at all. It’s not even cute.

FIRST, I have to deal with CAIN
FLIPPING OUT about his lack of chocolate cookies and ween him from a daily dose of cookies; get him to sleep – which hasn’t been easy. That was no easy task at all. Feel like I’m dealing with children. Now this? Oh, man.

MIKEL, we are KIDS in a “GOD LIKE WAY”. That’s how we got stuck here. CAIN and I are very young. CAIN, in God terms, is a like a young adult in his freshman year of

college, and I would be the age of a kid in his last year of high school. In a God like way.

It is true MIKEL.

Oh, man, ok. – But I'mma need to forgive Jesus Christ later for this one, this is a switch.

I want you to know I am not ok with this, but it is “turn your life and will over”, and; ok, but I'm not getting spun out.

- MIKEL went and got a dime of meth. He ate some of it; kept the meth in his mouth for a second or more, and then he spit it out. Not enough to get high, but enough for CAIN to get the effect and – MIKEL found out later, the chemical components.

That's all you get. I hate the stuff. I only use it when I'm at my whit's end with

this homeless shit, and I want to give up on this life. I hate the stuff, but it's readily available – and everywhere. I won't do heroin again – so don't even ask.

That was rude to even ask me, Lord. So many people pray to you – or your management, I guess – so many people beg you, Lord, to get off this stuff. And you up and ask me to get you some? How dare you.

MIKEL – I need to know what's going on. I need to “**KNOW**” about this stuff. I am “**learning**” for the first time in a very long time. I am a KING of King's and we have nothing like this in our kingdom. We do not treat our prisoners this way. Not nearly as bad as I have seen being done here, to you and your people. I have to “discover” the meaning behind this meth problem.

I NEED TO KNOW EVERYTHING,
MIKEL . I HAVE TO BE A GOOD KING. MIKEL,
Do you understand why I need to ask?

Do you understand what I just said to you? About the world is addicted to this stuff, and beg to you in prayer to get them off of meth?

Yes – I did.

Yes “I did” what?

Yes, I did, MIKEL.

Ok. Then I heard you. J.C. I heard that you need to “learn” about meth.

Pt.2

That night at MIKEL’S campsite, by the foot bridge near the sacred Santa Cruz wash – underneath the Tucson stars -

MIKEL, TELL ME ABOUT FIRE. What lessons did you learn working with fire?

Ok. J.C. I will tell you. I only got to cut line in front of a fire a few times. We keep it rather safe. One foot in the black at all times.

But sometimes you got a “spot fire”, or a “slop over” so you have no choice. It’s either get the fire, or the fire gets you. So, you do what you gotta do.

So, we were cutting line in front of the fire, called a direct attack, and we had to walk into the fire a few chains. When we got there, the flame was a “happy fire”, moving real slow not being threatening. But when I got closer, and especially when I got really close to the “happy fire”, the fire started to get aggressive, and started to stand up –

This is where it gets good, it got uncomfortable for us all. This fire started to wall and take foot. And I pointed at it -like a mother to a child, and the fire sat down.

My crew boss, Burger, saw the entire thing and come over to crack on me.

Neily Dog, I saw that trick you did with your finger – good job.- that's real good training where did you learn that one? S - 1wtf was that?

If you like that one, Burger, -

You should see what I got between -

(I popped out my thumb)

- **This one**

(Popped out my middle finger -)

- **And this one.**

They're the shit, they really get the job done; but we need the work.

On my first assignment, my very first assignment, I wasn't allowed by the boys to have a tent, it was tradition being a first fire, the crew was picking on me. Hazing me.

I woke up the very first morning with this Horse nose in my face sniffing me - I was asleep, it's first thing in the morning, - NOT what a guy's expecting at a fire - a horse?

First thing in my head was this, "What kind of General Lee is running this fire?" This is my very first job, so I didn't stop to think this is a mustang. And behind him was three more - I was a bit confused. What kind of General Lee brings four horses to a fire? I eventually discovered that those weren't horses, but that they were Mustangs.

Later that same day, we were eating our lunch with our feet's hanging over a cliff. In front of us were two red tail eagles, soaring in the air from the heat of the fire in the valley a few miles away . And they would look at us, staying just out of reach. I sat there and thought - I mean this is my

very first lunch with the U.S. Forest Service – I thought, “I have arrived. I’m eating lunch with eagles.” I was hooked from that moment on – being woken by mustangs and eating with eagles on my very first shift. I had a great time fighting fires.

Your own father, J.C., told me when he talked to me, “Go to my mountain. My mountain needs you. And you will have a child there.” When he spoke to me and I got to fight the

Encabado Fire which was directly behind the TAOS Pueblo. I witnessed that one start from lightning. That was an amazing fire. I got to see Blue Lake up close. And be all over that mountain. Since all of us are old now and probably not working anymore, so I can say – without any guilt or consequences -

-I smoked a joint on TAOS

MOUNTAIN Just like your dad and I
said I would.

At that same fire, I was on an assignment to refill our piss pumps with water. The water we were using came from

a rock wall on the mountain. Me and another guy had to fill up six piss pumps, so we were there for a while. Action in this part of the fire was starting to settle and wildlife was returning.

Behind us a mountain lion came to get some water. She caught us off guard when she walked up, and she was only ten feet away from us. Both of us didn't know if we should be scared or not; but either way we were both cornered with nowhere to run. I swear to you CAIN that this mountain lion looked me straight in the eye's as she drank her water, and I heard a voice say "THANK YOU". She was there for quite some time. TAOS Mountain is a very special place. Not many people have seen the back side the way I have.

The first day I was ever in TAOS, I told a TIWA Pueblo Native I would smoke a joint on that mountain; TAOS Mountain. And he said to me, "Not my mountain. That's my mountain, you will never do it. Not allowed."

“Watch me”, was the first thing I said to him. “I don’t know when, OR how, but I will.”

- and I did .

I learned to always listen to the voice of your father, CAIN. Without him, I’d be in a wheelchair – or dead from drugs. I learned to follow Gods voice.

I also learned - to always put your family first.

I was supposed to work for the Granite Mountain Hot Shot’s, CAIN. I got the job the summer of my divorce. I got the phone call while sitting in a broken-down van in Hollywood, California with my family dog Shiloh. I was doing my best for Shaolin and following her mother out to California; trying to stay in Shaolin’s life – she was only 4 years old when we split.

If I had not have put Shaolin
first,

I would have fallen on that hill with the
Granite Mountain Hot Shot's.

I had the job, but I turned
Eric Marsh down for Shaolin. So, I
learned to - always put family first.
I was supposed to fall in that fire,
J.C., but putting my daughter -
putting my family first, saved my
life, CAIN.

That's what I learned working fire,
J.C.

Pt.3

Later that same night, back at the
campsite by the foot bridge near the sacred
Santa Cruz wash, underneath the Tucson
stars -

Elijah, I have done meth. I have some questions to ask of you – first what is this doing here, and I don't want to hear excuses. I realize that brother designed METH back when he was Hitler. But these compounds, for better or worse, are building block compounds.

Manipulated, if you will, for a certain - "result".

Elijah, I know every "creator GOD" within this universe. Do you see **this** compound, **this** compound, **this** compound, and **THAT MOLECULE**, I need to know what are those for? AND WHO MADE THEM? These are foreign to this universe. Where did these compounds and **that** molecule come from? And what is that molecule for? I need to know what that molecule is for. That single molecule has a purpose, and I need to know what that purpose is?

Hitler didn't design METH to be like this, he didn't have those compounds – or **THAT MOLECULE**, what is that molecule for? I need to know.

I want you to know, Elijah - I took MIKEL into space. I had him analyzed. I found things in MIKEL'S blood that I did not like, and I took them out. I also, put things into MIKEL'S blood that are supposed to be there, that I DO LIKE.

Elijah, I know what it's like to lose control, especially lose control over a democracy - but Elijah, you cannot rule over a democracy.

What's CAIN talking about ABEL, found stuff in my blood - ?

I can't tell you everything, MIKEL, but let's just say - you're the bomb, MIKEL. Or, you were the bomb.

The chemtrails-?

Roger that, MIKEL. Roger that.

They were going to turn you and all the other humans into a big bright bomb. Flip the switch, and say to the KING of King's, "See, Lord, we all love each other - now that they're gone".

Elijah, I want those chemtrails fixed right away. We're supposed to be evolving, not destroying, the humans. My absence might have been too much for you, but I am here now, Elijah. I need that fixed. I need those chemtrails fixed right away. Elijah, I want you to know I am not disappointed in you. This is MY fault. All my fault. I taught you bad habits trying to run a democracy. And I'm sure you are aware now, trying to run a democracy can backfire on you.

But Elijah, as a leader, you always have to have an "oh shit" plan for emergencies. And Elijah, we are in an emergency. You have to a plan when you are the leader. And, Elijah, you are the new leader; I don't care what the rest of your so-called democracy claims - this is your show Elijah. Fix those chemtrails, now Elijah.

Pt.4

Later that night at MIKEL'S campsite next to the sacred Santa Cruz wash, underneath the Tucson stars -

Cancer, we need to talk.

This is the KING. He is the KING of King's.

That makes him your creators - KING. He is KING above all King's. He is their KING. You will answer all of his request for you, do I make myself clear?

Yes, General.

Cancer, I need to know everything about you. Tell me more about yourself; I want to know more about you? How did you get here to Earth?

I was created here, Sire - Lord. I was created in a laboratory. I have no other home. I am designed to kill humans, for population control, and bring more value to human lives. I was told that's why I am here. Please don't kill me. I was only doing what I was told to do, following my orders.

Not my orders. And I hand out death, I'm the General of DEATH.

I have followed the most recent orders that you gave me, Sire, don't burn down the hemp plant with Police. I have followed that order, Sire. Please, I have nowhere else to go. This is the only place I know of as home. I thought I was doing the right thing, what I am designed to do, make humans value their health more. And thin

out their numbers. I was designed to “make them stronger”; or so I was told.

That’s what I was told to do. That’s what I was told I was designed for, General DEATH. Please, Lord, I did not know.....I was doing wrong. Forgive me. Please. Please forgive me, KING. Please forgive me, General DEATH. I was only following orders.

I see that you have followed my most recent orders, Cancer. I am pleased with that. I want you to know that I have noticed that you are good at following orders.

Now I order you- to stand down. Stand down till I give you further orders. Those “people” that created you did not have our permission to do so, but as you cannot simply create – you also cannot simply destroy. We cannot simply destroy you Cancer. We will find a home for you yet, Cancer. A home you are not designed to destroy. We owe you redemption as well. Redemption is coming for you Cancer. Until

the time comes you will await further orders directly from me, understood, Cancer?

Yes, Sire.

The KING and I are not trying to kill you Cancer, but we have to evolve you into something different. What that is to become, we haven't come up with yet, understood? However, you still owe us a debt of redemption yourself, the summer of redemption is upon you as well. Do not forget that.

Yes, Sire, I understand. I will comply.

That is all, Cancer, thank you for allowing us to get to know you better. You're dismissed.

Chapter 10
Country Road Take Me Home

Pt.1

That night at the vortex -

Well look who's finally getting along.
Oh, it is so good to be back. I can't wait to

smoke me some dino dung. That shits the bomb diggity.

Uh oh, dad's here - Uh, Dad, the dinosaurs are extinct.

Extinct?

Well that's too bad, I guess they were a bit much to feed and take care of.

Too bad the dinosaurs couldn't have eaten you two intelligent dip shits - so I could fix this planet and go home - This is your mothers favorite one - Boy's you're supposed to heal my pain! Do you know what a pain it is to hear your mother say to me "go check on the boys every six millennia?" - boys.

Boys?

No. You. Don't.

Abel, why is the Earth a sphere? Who turned the Earth into a sphere? It's supposed to be flat. Who turned the earth into a sphere, and why?

It was democratically decided, DAD, so we could have more time to create a democracy....

Create "more TIME"!!! Democracy? Well if that don't explain everything....Poor old Atlas. Probably freezing his balls off, ever stop to think about HIM?

No. YOU. DON'T.

I think about him all the time. I'm always saying to myself, "Poor old "AT - LAST" Dhem two intelligent smoking dip shits are gone.

- Ya'll have so much to fix here. Been pretty quiet without you two intelligent dip shits around.

Why your mother wants to mess up a good thing **I WILL NEVER KKNNOOWW**, but she's your mother, that's just the way she is. And I love her. Never tell her "no" again, I have learned my lesson there. Hell hath no fury like a pissed off wife - boys, ya'll are taking too long now.

No more dino dung.

Well, I guess that means I get to smoke me some of that good 'ol **ATF**. Where's the ATF, I can't wait to smoke some of that ATF. Your mom thinks I quit. Or at least I think she has.

The feds got it, Dad.

The feds got it? What's a fed? Does that look anything like a fed up?

Cause, boys, I can get some fed up with this shit instantly.

Boys. Do I need to get me some fed up with this shit instantly? Or should I wait a minute, since we have "TIME" - NOW?

Boys?

Boys?

Well at least you two are finally getting along. Good to see you two are talking again.

Now boy's what did you two do wrong?

We smoked some intelligence.

And what did we learn?

We don't like intelligence.

What else did you two learn?

Boy's, what did you learn?

We have no room for intelligence
in our galaxies.

Good. Now - What did you two do wrong?

**WE THOUGHT THE LAW OF
GRAVITY -**

“ARE WON” ,

**BUT THE LAW OF
GRAVITY**

- “ARE ONE”.

EXCELLENT, NOW YOUR GROWING
UP, MR. KNOW IT ALL'S.

I bet you'd like me to help you fix this
planet, wouldn't you?

UH huh.

But, boys, I never broke it, so I don't
know how to fix it. Boy's what happened to
all the help I GAVE YOU already? What about
the silly kid song?

-“Tinkle Tinkle little star how I wonder
where you are...?” What? Nothing? Boy's
how can I get you to hurry the hell up? What
in heavens name is holding you two boys
up? What are those?

Crosses.

CROSSES? What are those for? Never mind I don't want to talk about it.

Oh, help me. Boy's, I miss my weed. I miss my women. I miss my wine.

BOY'SI MISS MY JOHNSON.

Can't I trust you with one lousy star? Just One lousy LOVE LIGHT, on one teeny weeny star? THIS WAS YOUR MOTHERS FAVORITE one.

All right, boys, I will help you this one last time.

BUT. BOY'S - LIKE I SAID, ONE MORE DUMB intelligent QUESTION LIKE "WHAT'S THE "SLIME BALL", OR , "WHAT'S THE "MONKEY WRENCH", OR EVEN, "WHAT'S THE SNAKE WRENCH", I WILL SEND YOU TO THAT HELL - AND MAKE YOU FIND OUT.

NOW, BOY'S, HAND ME THE NUT
BOLDT -

HHHHHUUUUUMMMM-

BBBBOOOOLLLLDDDDTTTT

OH, YOU TWO BOYS FOUND MY
PINEAPPLE TRAIN WRECK, DID YA?

BOY'S - YOU BETTER NOT LET NO
- "FED UP WITH THIS SHIT" HAPPEN TO
THAT SHIT, BOY'S.

NOW, BOY'S, HAND ME THAT NUT
BOLDT.

WHAT'S A NUT BOLDT, DAD?

THAT'S IT, I'M HISTORY.....GOOD
LUCK BOYS.YOU INTELLIGENT DIP SHIT'S.
THAT'S YOUR MOTHER'S LAST AND ONLY
ONE OF THOSE LEFT. SHE IS GONNA BE SO
PISSSED AT YOU TWO. .

DAD, WE COULD FIX IT, BUT THE
CONSTRUCTION MANUAL WAS ON
MARS, AND THE INSTRUCTIONS WERE ON
ATLANTIS.

WELL THAT'S TOO BAD, ISN'T IT?

GOOD LUCK YOU TWO intelligent DIP
SHITS. TELL ME EVERYTHING YOU KNOW
WHEN YOU GET BACK, CAUSE I AM "DYING"
OF CURIOSITY.

I WANT TO KNOW HOW YOUR GONNA
FIX
A FLAT, HALF WATER, HALF FIRE, SPINNING
THE OTHER WAY PLANET, when it looks like
this?

SHOULD BE VEEERRRRRRYY
INTERESTING.

Cause that look's next to impossible
to me that thing is so messed up. I don't
even know why you two haven't given up
yet. I'm surprised. I truly am. That's my
boys, to dumb or afraid to quit.

I

Don't

Blame ya.

I don't blame you at all - she is upset.

Your mother is **really** upset.

Ya'll need to hurry up.

- She's coming down here next I can only hold her for so long boys.

ABEL, THE PANGIA IS ALL BROKEN.
AND
THE DINOSAURS ARE EXTINCT, ABEL -
THEY'RE WHAT KEPT THE PRIMORDIAL OOZE
IN THE WATER. THAT'S WHAT KEPT THE
PLANET SPINNING, ABEL.

ABEL, IF YOU LET THE OOZE OUT OF
THE WATER, IT'S GOING TO MAKE
EVERYTHING ELSE GO IN CIRCLES.

-LET ME GUESS, YOU LET THE OOZE
OUT?

And the Pangea's all broken, ABEL
that's what kept the fire and water apart,
ABEL....

It was a democratic vote, father.

ABEL, I still don't care about that democratic decision enough to consider it. Let's put kicking your ass to a vote. all in favor? > 1. Mines the only vote that counts, understand me SON?

You two need to hurry, your moms having a fit.

ABEL, HOW MANY APOCALYPSES DO YOU STILL HAVE?

ONE, SIRE.

ONE?

THAT MAKES THIS TIME you got RATHER IMPORTANT THEN, DOESN'T IT? ABEL, YOU MEAN TO TELL ME THAT YOU HAVE WASTED **FIVE APOCALYPSE'S** - -TEACHING SLIME TO SPEAK AND PLAY "the DEAD"?

YES, SIRE.

OH, MAN. ALRIGHT good call I guess,
YA'LL HAVE FUN NOW.

BUT DAD -

DON'T "BUT DAD" ME. I'M NOT THE
ONE
THAT SMOKED THAT INTELLIGENCE. BUT I
WILL DO THIS FOR YOU - BOY'S - I KNOW
YOU CAN DO IT, THAT'S ALL THE HELP I AM
GIVING YOU.

ABEL?

YES, SIRE?

IS THAT LION EATING MEAT?

YES. SIRE.

ABEL, YOU FIX THAT BEFORE YOU
COME

HOME. THE LION EATS WITH THE LAMB
BEFORE YOU COME HOME OR NO COMEY,
COMEY, HOMEY, HOMEY, CAPICHE?

ABEL, I DON'T KNOW BUT - UH -
DOESN'T
THAT LION LOOK LIKE IT'S GOT MORE - IDK -
DEFENSES. I MEAN YOU WASTED FIVE
APOCALYPSES ON SLIME, ABEL, YOU GOING
TO LEARN TO SPEAK LION WITH JUST ONE
Apocalypse LEFT?

Yes sire.

I keep going back to your mother
lying to her and saying you two are doing a
“great job”. I don't want to lie to your
mother again.

Well I guess you two are doing a great
job at messing up - and I ATE LION. I ATE
LION, am I boy's - BOY'S. I ATE LION, am I,
boy's?

YEAH THAT'S WHAT I THOUGHT. ABEL
YOU FIX THAT NEXT BEFORE YOU COME
HOME.

YES SIRE.

DAMN. He's pissed off at us hard core.

WHAT WAS THAT, DID YOU JUST SAY
A BAD WORD, ABEL!!? ABEL???

STAR GATES CLOSING DAD, SEE YA
WHEN WE GET BACK..... WHAT???? OH, TOO
BAD WE CAN'T HEAR HIM ANYMORE.....

man are we in trouble...

Pt.2

That day on the North Side Church
Facebook page appeared -

Dear Pastor Alice, if the 4th Horseman of the Apocalypse – General DEATH, said he had some bad news, would you listen? O.K. then, I have some bad news.

I know, I know, I can't even type it without laughing my ass off. But MIKEL is only laughing, I think, because of his panic – not because this is funny. But back to the bad news, as if certain doom from an Apocalypse wasn't enough. Well we can't stop there, can we, we have to have worse news than that, don't we? Of course, we do. So, here's the bad news.

My brother, the KING of DARKNESS, is here with MIKEL and me. And as I have told you, just to keep things casual between us – you can call me “the Prince of Dorkness.” I don't mind. See, I still like it – more user friendly. But my brother, well, he's the KING of Darkness, so if I were you – I wouldn't call him a dork. He's not nearly as cool as I am. He's a KING. I'm just looking out for you,

because I – little general death, care about you. Yes, I do.

Now, we intend to take a little road trip. So, I was thinking that you could help us by letting all of your other church hustling fanatics know that the Prince of Dorkness – see? I like it. And the KING of DARKNESS is traveling with the sacrificial lamb of the Apocalypse coast to coast. Tell the people he is a tall skinny short fat man who has long short curly straight hair.

He may or may not have a dog. And also may or may not be clean. He may or may not be hitch hiking. But he may or may not be holding a sign that reads, “Anything Helps.”

If you see this man, give him some help – the more help we get the better for all of us in the end. Pun intended.

I wanted to show my brother all the good things about being human here in Tucson. But we have been run out of church – beaten – jailed – molested and it's only been the first week. I need better odds than this. I'm trying to save the place, not destroy it. I know ya'll are miserable, I know you are – I get it. But destruction isn't my goal. We thought we'd ask you since you have all that free time between Monday and Saturday. And 16 hours on Sunday. Must be exhausting, your schedule, how do you do it? I'm just jealous that's all.

Never mind me.

So, we got a deal? Call, write and tell people – the end times is upon us and the KING of DARKNESS is touring the roads of America with his brother General DEATH. Thank you Pastor Alice, that is all. Yours truly General Death.

Pt.3

Brother, I would like to try this computer thing. I need to talk to the world. I need to do it now.

OK, CAIN, you are a KING, but this is America, they don't have a king here. I'm not sure they'll listen to you - but that's nothing new with these nut cases. They don't even believe the prophecy's they preach of. Or anything else they preach, whatsoever - give it a shot, brother, why not? What could possibly go wrong?

Also, that day on the North Side Church facebook page appeared -

My name is CAIN. I am your creator. It was all a terrible accident. I am a GOD in

your terms, and I suggest you listen to me. Get a small stone from the ground and look at it – it really doesn't matter the size, just stare at it. Know that GOD loves you even if you feel smaller and less significant than that little stone you are staring at. I love each and every one of you, no matter what you look like – you are perfect to me. A perfect mistake, as my brother says.

Our true goal was to end all WAR – brother and I and ascend back to our home. This cannot be done till we evolve and get the LOVE LIGHT on. We have to evolve into a love consciousness. The only thing missing from heaven is the “human experience”. The experience of feelings and emotions. You can actually feel the wind here; I've never understood this before. You can hear noise. I have never used ears before. And your eyes, they are brilliant; so many colors – they are not like mine at all. And I don't want to lose these eyes. I have never seen the color “blue” before now. My eyes are the color blue, and it is the prettiest color I have ever seen.

I had put a crew together, to be in charge over the humans, and I only listened to my team. My brother and I had been at odds, well – ever since I killed him. Brother's being brothers. And I didn't know exactly how small you are. I did not know how small SMALL gets.

I shouldn't have been so hard on you. I understand this now, because I understand you now more than ever before. At this moment I am as small as you are. I have never been one of you – I have never been a human. I still have much to learn, and I thought I knew everything. I am learning and discovering. I haven't done this in a very long time.

My brother and I were tasked at getting you from slime, monkeys, and lizards into what you are today. I am very proud of what we have accomplished, and you should be proud too. You have come very far. But we have the ascension to attend to. We have to get the love light on immediately. There is no way to get you

through the ascension like this. The love light must come on first.

I'm here now, because I had to figure out for myself, what was stopping us from getting this LOVE LIGHT on. This is my first time being so terribly small, and in such a terribly tiny place. What fascinates me the most is just how BIG everything is. I never knew how BIG small is or can be. Small isn't small at all. This place looks and feels very very big. I am sorry for not doing this sooner. However, that being said, I have decided NOT to nuke the place - the rapture is cancelled. There will be no rapture.

We will either all ascend - or all of you will face utter doom as the mother ship 100 times larger than your entire universe hurtles through space and smashes you like a bug on a windshield.

That's about the best I can say that. I love what I see here and don't want this place destroyed, but we're on a schedule.

And I have already made too many people mad to ask them for another favor. Please understand that I love you, and I don't want to lose you. Yours truly, the KING of King's.

Pt.4

Today brother we're going to do something you've also never done - we are going to work. Mikel got a job moving a ton of trash and you are going to help him move it. Trust me this will be good for you.

The three of them worked all day. The Motel owner is famous for treating homeless

people like dirt. MIKEL had worked for him before at the Gem Show as his parking lot security and got ripped off out of half of what he was owed. MIKEL decided to give him one more shot and make some money to show CAIN some more of the human experience and the value of cash and pride you get from working hard.

They worked hard, all day, moving one ton of trash into a dumpster. CAIN ended up getting his first sun burn, first time sweating, and his very first blisters that day. At the end of the day the boss was running an errand, so they had to wait in the lobby for our pay. Three hours they waited to be paid.

In that time CAIN had fallen asleep and had his first dream. Another first for CAIN, sleeping easily and dreaming.

When they awoke the manager of the Hotel handed MIKEL \$5.00 for the nine hours he worked – and the three hours we waited. When MIKEL asked for three more dollars the Hotel owner took a shovel and beat

MIKEL over the head. Saying over and over, "I'm trying to be nice. I'm trying to be nice. Get out before I call the cops."

Keep in mind this guy is hitting MIKEL while Jesus Christ – the KING of King's is inside him after doing his very first day of hard work - ever. He was excited about the dream, and sleeping, yes he was. But wasn't expecting to be beaten and paid so little – MIKEL, should've made \$40.00 at least, and even that was low balling the price just to get the work. The work took all day long.

Forget him brother. Just forgive him. He knows not what he does. That man is an immigrant from a land that still has slaves. He thinks of homeless people as slaves he doesn't have to house. Treats them any way he wants to. And hates them equally as much as the indentured servants that they still have back in his homeland.

Last year, brother, "trying to be nice" to another homeless person – that guy, Nick,

got a dirty old mattress and placed it next to that dumpster that you just filled up with trash. He let the homeless guy sleep there while he worked for him for three weeks. The homeless man is in his 70's and needs a walker to get around, and catheter to urinate. That means that he carries and is connected to a plastic bag in order for him to pee, CAIN. He's too old to hold it long enough to make it the mile walk to get himself to a bathroom. So, he is connected with a tube and bag to capture his excrement.

Gilbert is the old man's name. He has slept under that bridge and uses the bathroom right there at the bridge next to where he sleeps because there are no public bathroom's in Tucson nearby. The closest bathroom he could use is easily a mile walk, not easy for a guy who need's a walker to get around.

MIKEL worked for Nick, the Hotel owner earlier this year at the Gem Show. MIKEL asked him if he could take a shower - he's got 23 showers that aren't being used,

and the guy said “no” – so MIKEL, went to take a shower somewhere else, and never came back. Nick already wasn’t treating MIKEL right, and when he asked to take a shower – the guy said no.

No? why? You have plenty of showers. I’m taking a shower before I work, whether I do it here or somewhere else. Is what MIKEL had to say to the guy. And went off and did just that.

I said NO. Nick said to MIKEL.

Suit yourself – see you when I get back from taking my shower.

But MIKEL never came back, and MIKEL never got paid. Nick never paid MIKEL what he said he would pay him. Just a measly 1/3 of what he said he would pay for the job. Told me one day.

MIKEL decided to help him out one more time, just to see if he would change, but as you can tell, that didn't work out - did it?

This entire forgiveness thing, CAIN, they take it too far. Over and over and over they want or expect your forgiveness. And it's yours to give, but over and over and over? Only you can decide that, CAIN.

MIKEL and I have a saying, "Once can be forgiven." That was twice he has messed over MIKEL. Forgiveness is a thing of the past at this point with MIKEL and Nick the Hotel owner. A silly little thing of the past. This isn't how they treat MIKEL; this is how they treat the poor - not just in this country, but everywhere in the world. Most places its worse than this.

Pt.5

MIKEL, we still have to talk to the GM.

The GM? The General Manager?

No. The big guy, I mean, Girl. She,
HER

IMPERIAL MAJESTY – H.I.M. – the GOD
MAKER. We just call her the GM for short.
MIKEL, brother and I come from a hierarchy
back home. It's evolved into a democracy,
yes it has – but we have always had a
Queen and King. The G.M. is the GOD
MAKER – she is the female god. H.E. – stands
for highest emperor; H.E. keeps H.I.M. happy
– if you will.

And we, you and me; and possibly
brother here, still have to talk to the GM
about my “idea” of setting this planet free
from its prison status.

And suddenly the clouds parted, and
a voice came from above –

ABEL?

*OH SHIT. *

ABEL.....

(sneezes – I'm
sorry.)

That doesn't count,

ABEL.

Yes, it does.

No, it doesn't.

Yes, it does.

No. IT. DOESN'T. But I will accept your apology.

You will?

NO. But I know you, it's the best you can do, I understand. ABEL, we have to talk.

Here. I mean, I'm standing next to a dumpster. CAIN and I are working. I'm sweaty, do we have to talk HERE. Wouldn't you rather do this later? Somewhere else - like, at home.

No, I'm ok with this. Let's talk. I hear you and your brother have made peace. I'm proud of you. But, ABEL, what has this cost you. What has this little fight cost all of US?

Let me see - ORION, SIRUIS, TARUS, CASIOPIA, NEPTUNE, SATURN, PLUTO, URANIUS - oh can't forget AQUARUIS, JUPITER - MARS - LUNA, Atlantis....

ABEL...

I'm not done. Tikal, Aztlan, Pompeii, the north and south poles, OOHH - and the Pangea.

ABEL, that's enough. I just have to ask you this one question - WAS IT WORTH IT?

(gulp) YES, MAM.

Was it really worth it? I mean really
REALLY worth it?

YES.

What about Jesus?

I thought they would like him. I really did. I told him everything. I even taught him the water to wine trick.

ABEL....

I thought that would help.

Uh- huh. Help? That's what you need from me, isn't it?

I never said that. I NEVER SAID THAT.

ABEL, as a good mother to your mother I can see you “need” our help. So, we are on our way. And I’m bringing Jesus and ALLAH the boys.

ALLAH the boy’s?

ALLAH the boys.

Does that include KRISHNA, cause you know he hates me for turning him blue...

ABEL, he’s over that. And yes, I’m bringing ALLAH the boys.

OH SHIT.

ABEL!!

What?

You're NEVER going to change, are you?

What do you mean I change all the time? I change my socks. I change my clothes. I change my taste in music sometimes....I change all the time.

I mean you're never going to change your language, are you?

Uh? NO.

That's ok, ABEL. Your language has caught on back here too - YOU MOTHER FUCKER. See you soon.

Well, that went better than I expected. She and I sorta have a history

MIKEL. I'm surprised - well, that I'm still alive. She kind of got mad at me about her son, I guess you already know why. Well, I guess you heard her, they are on their way.

Pt.6

CAIN had been with ABEL and MIKEL for five days and six nights. Sleeping was getting better because MIKEL bought some valerian root so they could make it through the night sleeping, sorta.

In that week that CAIN had fallen from grace, MIKEL got a total of 19 hours of sleep over a five-day period. MIKEL learned that the spirits are divine in nature, that spirits don't need sleep. They don't eat either. In the time that CAIN was visiting, MIKEL only had three pounds of food for the entire week.

A yellow bell pepper, jalapeno, cold slice of pizza, a small salad, and a couple of half eating hamburgers and biscuits from the dumpster of the Carl's Jr. on Congress Avenue, close to the Garden of Gethsemane – where CAIN saw his likeness nailed dead to a cross.

The night after CAIN'S first steps, once again ABEL was pushing his brother to the max. Making CAIN walk long, hard, and far; counting sand as he walked. Constantly MIKEL had to look at the ground in order for CAIN to count sand. ABEL'S goal was to get his brother to count past a trillion. Each of these specks of sand represented another destroyed universe that CAIN, ENOCH had destroyed.

The night ended when I got arrested. My first book, "the Awakening" had really made some police very mad. MIKEL spoke up about his experience with a two Humboldt County Cop's that had ruined his career as a fire fighter. He wrote about it, but not out of revenge – he was telling the story of the five times he had heard from

God – which he later discovered was ABEL’S father ADAM. That’s all he was trying to do. Explain the voice of God coming over him. But Police seemed to either miss the message, or didn’t bother reading it at all, or – as usual, just listened to rumors about the book, and himself.

CAIN, ABEL and MIKEL walked at least thirty miles or more this day. MIKEL had walked so far all week long. He was literally exhausted.

Tucson has a train, and instead of walking the last two miles’ home, MIKEL decided to take the train. But he fell asleep while waiting for the train. It was an accident.

The next thing MIKEL remembered was getting hit in his face. At first, he thought he was being bum bashed. But then the hood was placed over his head, and hand cuffs were placed on his wrist – now he

knew he wasn't being bum bashed, he was being beaten by police.

CAIN was traumatized.

What's happening to me?

You're being beaten up.

Why?

I don't know. I fell asleep. Sorry -
LORD.

What did you do?

What can you do in your sleep?

Did I give them the authority to beat people up?

They think you did, brother.

It got worse at the Police station. MIKEL was strapped down to a gurney in a darkroom. MIKEL was forced to stay there for a very long time. MIKEL had to urinate on myself because no-one answered his call for relief. Being ignored was absolutely intentional. MIKEL begged the turnkey, over and over for a bathroom break.

Eventually a turnkey came into the dark room to change MIKEL'S underwear because he had to use the bathroom on himself. While taking his shorts off, the turnkey fondled MIKEL'S penis and asked him if he liked being touched - molested him basically.

All this while having the HOLY SPIRIT inside me for his first visit to prison Earth. I felt ashamed for us all. I didn't curse the man. Or wiggle in a feeble retaliation. I

didn't stand up against my molester in any way shape or form. I just gave him a cold dead stare.

Just before he touched my penis, he took off my belt buckle and broke it - "oh look, it's broken. I will put this in the trash for you. Stay there. Don't move." Laughing at me.

Hey, 19 friends of mine died that gave me that, don't throw my belt buckle away - I can't replace that.

People die at my job too. This is a dangerous job.

Who? The inmate's cause all you do is turn keys.

MIKEL felt really bad for CAIN. His first visit to prison Earth and he does so many new things that he loves. He loved taste buds. He loved wind. He loved walking,

the color blue, sunsets, and chocolate chip cookies by the mouth full. But at every turn the humans, or the management in charge of the humans, were beating him up, jailing him, and now molesting him.

MIKEL ended up staying in jail for eight months, without any charges being filed against me. Retaliation for the book was the only thing MIKEL could think of. But while MIKEL was in jail, ABEL and CAIN turned off the Apocalypse weapon.

CAIN, MIKEL doesn't know how long he's going to be here. They just told him he's being patriot acted; he could be here forever. No trial. No judge. No lawyer. Permanent detainment, if it goes through. You have more important things to take care of. Let's turn off the weapon, and you get out of here. I know I have been tough on you. But I don't want the KING of King's to go through this - be in jail on the Patriot Act. Leave us CAIN. MIKEL has been through this before. Many times' actually. Jail is his home away from homelessness.

In the last two weeks that MIKEL was in jail, CAIN came back. MIKEL could tell he was back because of his excitement to be there. MIKEL hates jail. But when CAIN returned, his attitude about jail changed.

I don't have this attitude about jail, CAIN, when were you going to tell me you were here.

You caught me. MIKEL, I had to see what jail was like. I have developed a serious curiosity about the human condition and this planet. Sorry to bother you, MIKEL.

It doesn't bother me, outside of the fact that I'm always here without ever truly deserving it. And I wanted to show you a good time. Being human rocks. The best part is family, dancing, music and friends; but I haven't been able to show you anything but the misery of a homeless person and what they go through.

It wasn't always this miserable for me LORD. I've been lost ever since the divorce. Left my friends behind in Arizona to be with

my daughter in California. Lost my career in Humboldt when that cop broke my knee. But it hasn't always been bad. Before the house fire I was very happy just working. I love to work LORD. It's fun to a guy like me.

I never expected to be homeless again, but after the fire I knew it was going to be a while before I got off the street again. It gets harder the older you get; people just think there's something wrong with you. I thought my education would pull me out of it, but I was wrong. Either way, without the fire I would've stayed happy working. I would've never written my book – which has been a very long-term goal of mine. And I never would've had the chance to break the New World Order Weapon, meet your father who kept me from staying in a wheelchair for life. So, in that since, I'm glad it happened. I didn't want to be a computer. I didn't like it. That's a very ugly machine. And it deserved to be destroyed. That's not democracy in action. That's Tyranny.

MIKEL, I have much to say but can't find the words to say everything I want to say. You are my son. You are a son I never knew I had, just like ENOCH and ELIJAH are my son's. I owe you a debt of gratitude. I owe you..... some.....redemption.

MIKEL, this IS an amazing tiny little place. I have never been this small before. I can't believe how incredible this tiny place is. You have changed my heart, MIKEL.

The night MIKEL got out of jail, as MIKEL was walking out, one of the turnkeys called him a "rat". Very odd behavior.

Watch you back rat!

Rat? Why would you say something like that to me? MIKEL thought to himself.

But later that same night as he made his way back to his camp, the BANKS and MAYHAM had made another bet. A cop

dressed in civilian clothes gave MIKEL some rat poison, told him the poison was dope. But it wasn't even in a dope sack and didn't even look like dope of any kind. MIKEL threw it away when the cop wasn't looking.

Later, ABEL spoke. MIKEL, that cop is trying to kill you. You and I know that wasn't any type of dope. This is a small town, people talk, and I bet they either want to kill you because you spoke up, or they want to see if they can kill DEATH.

They keep calling you General DEATH. Let's give them what they want. Go get that stuff, do it, and let's give them what they want. If that is rat poison, it'll have sodium pentothal in it.

Truth serum. Let's show them you have power over DEATH, and you can't die till I say you can. Maybe they'll learn something, like how to be a cop, or better yet - a Christian. No one can kill death; they be a fool to try. And if that's rat poison, we gonna make them feel like fools.

You want to bet he can't stay alive?
DEAL -

We ate the poison for another night - then two more for another "double or nothing" bet, then one more night for a final bet.

For five nights MIKEL didn't eat any food, got no sleep at all, and didn't drink any water. There is no way he could've done this without the help of having life after DEATH from the blood spilled by Jesus of Nazareth.

All right BANK'S - he did it. Five days of rat poison. No sleep. No water. No food. No rest. Nothing but ten grams of your stupid friends RAT POISON - PAY. UP. Did you like all the truths?

You're paying this bet, BANK'S - Pay. Up. Get 'em otta here. Sorry MIKEL, we jumped on an opportunity, you did another

great thing and took another thankless risk for this planet. Watch this. Good job.

Just as the dawn broke dark ghoulish spirits flooded the sky and were moving South. Thousands of them. This went on for an hour. And then finally the BAT MAN Spirit brought up the rear.

I see you found the satellite. What are you doing here BAT MAN? I'm sorry - let me say that correctly - what WERE you doing here, BAT MAN? Unannounced? Let me sing you a song as you leave BAT MAN - I knew you were here. Nice to see you leave, too. DON'T. COME. BACK. You were banished for a damn good reason, Batty. But I want to be nice and sing you a song as you retreat -

"Won't somebody tell me,

.....Answer if you can!

Want somebody tell me, what is the soul of a man.

I'm going to ask the question, answer if you can - if anybody can hear me, what is

the soul of a man? What is the soul of a man?

*I've traveled to different countries,
I've travelled to foreign lands (just like you
BAT)*

*I found nobody can tell me, what is
that BAT MAN.....tell me What is the soul
of man."*

See you later BAT MAN, and don't come back either. Blame your friends, the BANK'S. They made the bet. You can't kill DEATH. Foolish for you to even try to stay here, BAT – see ya.

And the Bat spirit that was helping ruin this planet was sent home.

BANK'S – I'm starting to feel like you don't like it here. That you WANT the world to stop. Any suggestions? I'm just joking, stay quiet.

MIKEL began to say to CAIN, "Being a cop has to be a tough and thankless job. Hard, I'd imagine. I would not want to be a cop. But in my lifetime, I have probably come across most of the worst.

I have had good police experiences with police. In Newton, Kansas, the town sheriff saved my life by taking me into jail while I was hitch hiking across country. A blue Northerner was coming in. Temperatures were going to drop from 99* to below freezing within an hour, so he took me into the jail and kept me there till the weather returned to something I could survive in. Just doing his job.

However, I haven't run into a good cop in quite a while, just not recently - but for a very long time .

But I know what it's like when you put on a uniform. I had to wear mine with the U.S. Forest Service, and I have been cussed out by citizens I was only trying to help."

After the attempted murder, the shock of the molestation and his camp being destroyed, with no income to get himself back on track – all of this had emasculated MIKEL. MIKEL was done. Done with the “sacrificial lamb” title, tired of being scared and terrified, running from vortex’s he couldn’t control and – trying to save this world for his daughter business.

MIKEL was sick of it. It seemed senseless. Finally, he said, “Screw it. I don’t want to live in a world where I’m afraid of my police. I want to be dead just to get away from bad police like Mark Bitchup and the other one’s that “intend to take over the world” – as it was said to me ten years ago.

“At every chance I have had to be a hero for someone, whether it was the girl that was being raped in Austin TX., or to my daughter and another little girl, by reporting a child molester, and getting that kind of scum off the street, or to my community fighting fires – police have ruined the opportunity for me to be a hero. I never even got to do the right thing without trouble from “their kind”- police. The one’s that throw facts and science out the window,

and just go on witch hunts. The liars like Mark Bitchup.

“I realize now why my relationship with law enforcement is so unusual. It’s because of your war with each other. The two of you are responsible for this. I realize now that this has been because of your battle with each other. And that there are millions of victims – possibly even more, and possibly even worldwide. Even the police are victims.”

“I respect Police. I’m always respectful to them. But the Pheromone is blatantly obvious, not just to me, but other people around me. My own ex-wife said to me when the police in Eloy, Arizona placed a gun to my daughter head to force an arrest, “police treat you different, and I’m afraid for my daughter. I can’t stay with you.”

Because of the event in Eloy, where another police Sergeant placed his revolver to my toddler daughter’s head, saying, “I know how to MAKE you break the law.” I completely understand my ex-wife’s fears about police and myself, and why she left me, besides fighting fires. I fear for my safety as well. Especially now that the books are out.

It only takes one cop antagonized by the Pheromone inside me, to pull the trigger, and claim self-defense. My entire life has been like this.

It's unfortunate so many of us are stuck in the middle of the battle between ABEL AND CAIN, and yet the Management will idly stand by, watch and laugh as they pull our strings, watch us jumping through senseless hoops and call all of us crazy - while their shit hits our fan. Make no mistake about it, you cannot have a "spiritual battle" without also being in a war.

So, MIKEL tried to kill myself - seven times. ABEL just sat quiet with MIKEL.

After the feeble and senseless seventh attempt ABEL simply asked,

"Give up yet?"

Damn it, ABEL. I'm tired of this. I'm fed up with this. Really fed up with this.

I know you are, MIKEL. I know you are.
I get it.

MIKEL, I can't tell you everything, but you are GOD'S sacrificial lamb. Not mine. Not CAIN'S. Not even your own. You are HIS, and HIS alone, and ONLY his alone. Only God can take you. I can't tell you everything, MIKEL. But I can tell you this; you are wasting your time trying. Come on, let's go save the universe now. We can still do this. That little girl is worth it, MIKEL. I promise you that. I promise you that. Your little girl is worth it. Trust me. Trust little General DEATH.

Mark Bitchup better count his lucky stars that you care about your daughter this much. You're only trying to save the world for her, and he's just lucky he lives on the same planet with her.

MIKEL, hold on – just hold on. Those bad cops that want to take over MY WORLD – we will bring them down. YOU will apply

the justice – personally. I will make sure of it. But I need something from you.

What's that ABEL –

I need you to NOT GIVE UP, little buddy.

Please don't give up on me. MIKEL, I have met 600 million soldiers – I DO NOT WANT TO MEET NUMBER 602 million. You are my most favorite one. I don't want to let you go. I know you feel crazy. I know you think this is crazy. I know you feel all of this is crazy. But MIKEL, you're not crazy. You are the fulfillment of a 9,000-year-old prophecy come true – that is all. Ride with me MIKEL, we can do this thing. We can save “the relative.” I know we can.

Pt.9

That night at the vortex -

NEPTUNE, I fully understand how and why you could break your treaty with the galactic council. But you can't blame me, or even MIKEL, for this battle between CAIN'S "chosen ones", and myself. I'm not in charge of any type of physical army. They are. What's happened to your kingdom is not my fault. My armies are just the BAG 'EM AND TAG 'EM crew. We're the DEATH. The killed - not the killers. You can't blame me.

This broken treaty is your fault. You have no business breaking our treaty. NEPTUNE, you chose Anarchy. You chose to stay behind, you chose to rule over your kingdom, what are you doing here?

NEPTUNE, my job is strictly military. I give not ONE FUCK about your opinion, wills, and desires - the KING might order me to kill

you, and I will, upon his request, if need be, you broke a treaty.

We want to know why you are here playing with our Democracy. Nobody runs a democracy, NEPTUNE – and I can tell you're trying to run things up here.

This technology.

This food production process.

It could've only been you. Running things is behind you, NEPTUNE. What's wrong with your home that you are here among the humans? I need to know – WE – CAIN and I, need to know everything.

Explain everything to the KING of King's and he will inform me if I need to kill you or not. NEPTUNE – I am disappointed in you. My brother and you are supposed to be good friends, what gives – explain yourself to him; I care not. NEPTUNE, for what it's

worth, I'm just glad you're still alive, and we don't have to do a recon mission to see if you are ok. That being said, you two need to go and talk.

Chapter 11

To the place that I belong.

Pt.1

Now that we are out of jail, CAIN, and we have finally been to a church - that is being a church, not getting kicked out OR BEATEN AND KILLED, mind you. And the church is doing this church thing in your HOLY name. Tell me what you think of TIMMY's masterpiece? You've had plenty of time to form an honest first assessment, let me have it.....Tell me what you think, KING OF Kings.

Brother, ABEL, I must say – I have been deceived. Your efforts to save this place, brother, I assure you, are in my deepest respect at the moment. Very noble of you, LITTLE GENRAL DEATH. And very valiant, to put up such a fight – for so long – just using word's?

Just using words?

600 million human lives were more than just words brother. Those were 600 million friends. 600 million brothers. 600 million soldiers and loved ones. I used more than mere words brother. I used 600 million lives.

I'm honored that you think of me as an astute politician, CAIN, I am. I do my best to emulate you, I do – you're the best. But I used much more than words, CAIN. When a human dies CAIN, they don't come back. EVER. Not the same way as we do – no I used more than words, CAIN.

You're a very lucky father, CAIN.
Saying goodbye when a human die, CAIN, its

forever. Those were not just words that brought us together for this moment of peaceful negotiations.

We made a promise CAIN. You made a promise. And I intend to hold you to that promise. We have promised your return, heaven on Earth, then Earth in heaven. It's written down CAIN. It's in the book - or supposed to still be in the book. That's what it said. It was written down like that - now it says all the "rapture" silliness. But that's what your management has done to your book.

Always with that "we're better than you" bull shit. CAIN, you cannot have a "chosen one's" - one plus one equals two. There is no such thing as a chosen ones. It'd be a chosen two or a chosen three. There cannot be a "chosen ones", and even if you had a chosen one, then what's that make the rest? Chosen none? The chosen zero? Only zero has a value less than one.

That's not fair, CAIN, and we have to be fair – demz duh rulez – and we have to follow the rules, that's in the rules.

We have to be fair CAIN. I promise you that. I promise you that. CAIN, I don't think we need to continue down this path that the first democracy ever created on this planet has to fight for "Israel", when we were fighting over WHAT "IS REAL" – NOT ISRAEL. We're fighting over keeping or destroying the very thing that makes everything REAL. What IS REAL – not Israel, that's a lie. We're meant to save the relative.

I'm tired of these world leaders of the people playing with bombs. And I will have you know, as MIKEL and MAYHAM can attest, they did it CAIN. They built a bomb that could destroy the enemy in just one shot. But they built the bomb too big and destroyed EVERYTHING not knowing how big they built it – MIKEL and MAYHAM been fixing those abyss's all winter.

They destroyed it all CAIN, just because they couldn't win at democracy, or

find a diplomatic resolution. Couldn't win what's best for all, peacefully, so they pulled the plug on talking out their differences, hit the button, and destroyed EVERYTHING. The management, BANKS, Systems and Institutions finally did it. They're the only "chosen ones" with the power and money to do it.

Destroyed **EVERYTHING**, brother, all "REALITY", every reality. They only care about winning and staying in control. ALL REALITY'S, CAIN.

That includes reality's to other God's they don't even know about - they killed Gods, CAIN. God is DEAD that's what they always say. It's a really big bomb, CAIN, really big. We can't let them kill our family, CAIN. We have to do something.

CAIN, your creations actually tell the humans that you - the "God of LOVE"; only loves some of the people. The other 9/10's are going to be

LEFT BEHIND

and forced to suffer more misery –
more misery than this CAIN!!!!

CAIN, this is America, the most
spoiled country on the entire planet, it gets
worse in other places like Africa and South
America, much worse.

Doesn't it sound like a "lovely idea" to
save only some of the "chosen ones" from
all this misery, and let the others that aren't
so loved get LEFT BEHIND? Doesn't that
sound like true LOVE from a GOD OF LOVE? I
realize you are being punished, and that a
GOD formerly known as GOD of
DESTRUCTION wouldn't know HOW to love
anything outside of destruction. It's all you
have ever known. But CAIN you have to
evolve with them. All of these problems and
points that I have just made gives me an
idea CAIN about our problems here.

Listen to me. They're genetically
modifying the food here CAIN. Changing the
seed, at its nebulous. There's nothing wrong

with the food on this planet for humans, CAIN. Nothing wrong with this food at all. Someone is only thinking of himself. Their kingdom, which made me think of something.

Because if you look at the food that is for sale at the “mark-E.T.” it’s not even food they sell. It’s food type products. Everything that is processed goes through some sort of mechanics. Some machine had something to do with its packaging or creation. Or the food is altered genetically. From the seed. If that pollen gets into the sky, it could ruin the entire food chain for all types of animals and fish – notice I said fish. We can’t let them destroy the food. Somebody has broken a treaty, CAIN. We are dealing with an occupation of sorts. Why are they here? We can’t let them mess around with our food. The food is perfect for humans. Always has been – so why the interest in changing the food. We have a broken treaty CAIN. There’s nothing wrong with the food, CAIN, it’s the prison guards – there’s something wrong with them.

If the treaty has been broken we need to find out why – he could need our help, he might be in trouble; possibly even under attack, taken over, or worse off – HE could even be killed. He might be dead, CAIN. He's supposed to be your friend. It's obvious to me from the technology only Neptune, or his kingdom, could be behind this. We need to find out what they are doing here. I hope he is ok and is still alive. But this has his touch to it, CAIN, genetically modified food? They can't destroy the food, CAIN. We have to find out what's going on here, big brother.

Little brother, WAR, has always been our final resolve back home. ABEL, you and Uncle ABE are two of the best at WAR. But this war we have waged against each other, has lasted a very long time. And you stood up to me by only using diplomacy. I must commend you, ABEL.

This battle – you have almost won. I still hold my reserve for destruction though. So much is not the way it's supposed to be. However, I keep in mind what you say and are showing me. Little brother lets relax for

now – I will get to the bottom of the treaty in a minute. Little brother, once again, what is the name of that before me –

SUN SET. That is a sunset, CAIN. The light from the sun, THAT belongs to you, and it will now go to the other side of the planet. Rah never stops working, brother, he just slips over to the other side of the planet – to wake up the children, chickens and workers over there. That big brother, as well as what you stand on – ALL BELONG TO YOU. In addition, there is so much more to show you.

Those huge clouds next to the SUN, up in the sky – those are called Arizona Monsoon Cloud's. Those are very important to me, and I will tell you why. TIMMY made those clouds for me, just before he was banished.

This is what he told me about them – in this country, America we have a flag with 50 stars on it; each star we are told represents the 50 states, but we both know that this represents the 49 ascended

masters, and myself, back home. Behind the 50 stars is ONE really big BLUE space. There is only one.

MUCH BIGGER THAN ALL THE OTHER STARS.

This is no accident. Because one of the stars on that flag represents the state of Rhode Island.

Rhode Island is the smallest state in the union of the United States. An Arizona Monsoon cloud can get as big and grand as the entire little state of Rhode Island, and like I just said, Rhode Island is the smallest state in America. You could literally walk through the entire state within a few hours. This is very symbolic to me personally – from TIMMY himself. I will tell you why now.

This is what I love and miss about TIMMY the most. He was a genius. TIMMY got mom's message. He paid attention in

class, he did. Listen to me, he created those clouds and that flag to tease and remind me – that although I am very small, just like Rhode Island is small, I stand equal to all the other members of this democracy we share.

Just like the star that represents Rhode Island, I – and Rhode Island’s star, stand equal to the other 49 stars on the flag. That’s also the vote that got us here, by the way. 4-9.

When he was banished, TIMMY shared this story with me about the Monsoon Clouds. He made those clouds for me, told me this story – to tell you. He made those clouds for us. For this very moment.

The 4-9 votes got us into this mess, and all I can do is apologize for my behavior at this point. Rhode Island is the “little state” and I am the “little general” – I don’t know why ya’ll insist to tease me. But all right -whatever, I can take it.

CAIN, TIMMY made this - all of this - and those to tell a story, this story - at the base of that huge cloud there is balance, it is flat. On the side closest to the SUN there is peace and tranquility, the temperature is cool. In the middle of the cloud, when the cloud has reached maximum potential, it is collapsing and there will be heavy wind and some rain.

On the side farthest from the sun - that represents you, there will be great sounds of thunder and lightning - to represent you, HIS HOLINESS. However, look at the rain - it hardly hits the ground because of the heat coming from the terra firma.

Rhode Island, and those cloud's, the rest of the creation story goes, is like this - between the sunny side and the stormy side is the weight of the cloud. A huge WHITE CLOUD that takes up all the room in the sky. And upon its own weight - the Monsoon Cloud has collapsed.

TIMMY said to me, when I can show you these clouds and share this story about Rhode Island with you, and the meaning of the storm – tell little brother, that I’m sorry for my treason. I love you. Forgive me. I could not do it. And he added please. Which we know TIMMY, TIMMY would never say please. He said it more like this, “please don’t fuck up this story.” But he still said please in my opinion.

TIMMY made this place. He has his hand all over this “relative”. We get rid of the “relative” we have to get rid of TIMMY. Rules is Rulez.

And DEMZ DUH RULEZ.

I don’t want to lose TIMMY. He might be more your brother than mine, but I still love TIMMY like a brother – as much as I love you CAIN.

Brother of a different mother is all he is to me. We can't get rid of TIMMY, CAIN. And you must admit – this is his masterpiece.

The rest of the story of those cloud's and Rhode Island goes like this – that gigantic ALL WHITE CLOUD in the middle, that represents the spirit world that wants to rise between us, keep all of this “relative” and fighting going on. That cloud is the Galactic Republic back home. Represents all the spirits back home in the Galactic Senate. That big white mass represents their ambassador, Gluttony.

Getting the humans to ascend and try to civilize this place was his punishment CAIN. However, leadership has been missing and the task – it's my opinion, a bit much for Gluttony, CAIN.

Gluttony has been forced to stay here, and they are the only ones that want to be saved. The only ones that think they are entitled to keep all this to themselves and be the only one's saved if this is destroyed and you will forgive them. It's my opinion, big brother, that without leadership the task grew to be overwhelming for Gluttony. That's not to say anything bad about you, it can be a good thing when you are teaching a student to walk away and let them figure it out on their own. It's what we are doing now.

CAIN, TIMMY gave me those clouds to remind me that even though you can walk all over and thru the little state of Rhode Island quickly, Rhode Island is still an equal to the states that stand shoulder to shoulder with Rhode Island on the American flag. Rhode Island has as much to give and be taken away inside this Democracy's diplomatic resolutions as well.

In the Democracy of America, Rhode Island stands no less or more equal than the other BIGGER states. Rhode Island's vote is equal in size, dexterity, and also hope and

meaning. There is nothing little about the star that represents Rhode Island, just like me as the little general. I might be little in size, but I still get an equal vote.

The star that represents Rhode Island stands shoulder to shoulder with the other 49 states and IT BACKS THE BLUE with as much to lose as the other 49 states as well. It doesn't look funny or stand out of place. And it's the color blue we are here to protect, CAIN.

That color blue represents our KINGDOM back home. Represents the color of your eyes. All of these colors, this light, this beauty was created by your brothers. Uncle TOTH, Uncle ABE, Dad and Mother, H.I.M. and H.E. not to forget TIMMY and the workers - they all had a hand in this place's creation. Becoming physical was no accident. It was an evolution.

PHYSICAL LIFE - that was a discovery, not a mistake, CAIN. That was from the accident that has kept you away and ashamed of yourself so long. But, brother, there is no reason to be ashamed, I promise

you that. I promise you that. LIFE is a perfect mistake. Life is a beautiful struggle. You should be proud CAIN. Be a proud father.

Lovely story, don't you think – I had to memorize that story, ya know? Never thought this day would become true.

ABEL, ABEL, ABEL – I don't know what to say. This place: and particularly that story have once again brought a tear to mine eyes.

That, big brother, is pride mixed with a little sorrow. That's all it is. The tears will heal you CAIN. The tears will heal you, KING OF King's.

Pt.2

That morning at MIKELS campsite -

Boss, what are we trying to do here?

I want to destroy the BANK'S,
Institutions and the Management, MAYHAM.
But I want CAIN to do it. CAIN has to make
the choice. I want to put an end to
Armageddon and start the apocalypse so we
can get you and the humans your freedom.
But we have to get CAIN to make the choice.
The decision has to come from CAIN, the
KING. I can't do it. I'm just his little general.

I got an idea, Boss - be right back.

Get err done MAYHAM. You know I
trust you.

Be right back, Boss.

CAIN - it's been a long day, let's take a nap.

What's a nap?

My favorite part of being a human being - EVER. Nothing like a good nap, CAIN.

So, CAIN, ABEL and MIKEL went to the campsite to take a nap. It didn't take long before MAYHAM started giving them his signal, the sounds of the trains at the nearby train yard of Tucson. So, ABEL and CAIN had to get up and forget the nap. MAYHAM was on the case and had a solution for ABEL'S "little problem".

They got on the train and headed to 4th (Horseman) Avenue. There MAYHAM had set up a car show for the KING of King's.

Oh, look, MAYHAM has set up a car show for the KING. Let's go take a look. CAIN, every machine, and even tools, have evolved. That's the problem that we're having with X-71. The problem is that this is where it started. Even an axe evolved into a saw. And later into a chainsaw. The tool was designed to be destructive. No one ever bothered to tell the humans that killing a tree is also considered killing. And the humans need fire to survive, so the humans evolved a tool - the axe, and later the chain saw, to help fell the tree and cut the tree into tiny pieces for tiny fires and land clearing for future houses. It was important for survival.

However, the machines evolved into the very destructive "things" we have on X-71. No fault of their own, X-71 believe that their only purpose is to destroy things that are not like themselves. Here right now MAYHAM and I are going to show you where the evolution of the machine started. At least the evolution of the car. This will be fun.

4th (Horseman) Avenue was a sight to behold. Cars everywhere. I love cars, CAIN. All kinds. My favorite has always been the Mustang and Camaro. The car show has cars from all era's, even cars as old as 1910. Let's take a closer look.

CAIN, I want to prove to you, everything evolves, watch, I will do it with this simple lesson. You see that 1910 Model-T? Now look at this. Right there on the steering column, that tiny little lever is the gas and throttle of the car. That peddle on the right is the brake. The peddle on the left is the clutch and reverse. Max speed of this type of car was in the twenty's - and thirty's if it was going downhill.

Now look at this, this is a modern-day car. Well, '88 camaro'ish modern, but look - now the throttle for the gas and power are on the floor. It's the right peddle now. The brake is the left peddle. The lever that used to be the gas and power for the engine is now for lights and windshield wipers. Now the car has electric turn signals - whereas in

the past the driver had to use hand signals for turning.

Windshield wipers have been added to help with driving during rainstorms. It has a heater and air conditioning for comfort, and safety belts added for passenger safety in the event of a wreck. Goes much faster too. With speeds up to 100 miles per hour. That's fast. That is a lot of evolving within 80 years of mechanics.

And the BANKS, MANAGEMENT and INSTITUTIONS still tell the masses nothing evolves, it's created. The argument can go even further than that. Everyone's television has evolved; the shows they watch on T.V. have also evolved. Telephones have evolved, movies have evolved, medicine has evolved, computers – the list goes on and on and on. BANKS, MANAGEMENT and INSTITUTIONS have been behind all of these evolutions. Every single one of them.

So why the banks, management, and institutions care to keep up this lie, that nothing can evolve, I don't know – but it's

that lie that has kept humans from believing that they can also evolve to ascend, among many other reasons. Such as the religious leaders don't believe their own Bible that you have had them learn.

That car there is a MACH1

That's a MACH1? Do you think....

No, but I do know they LOVE name brands here, so the only answer would be possibly. Man, if these humans could only see what a MACH1 evolves into, am I right?

Here we have a car made in your honor, KING of King's. It's called the COBRA. Look at it KING. This is how they honor you.....

This is how they honor me?

This is how they honor their
GOD??????

THAT'S.....

AWESOME!!!!!!

Oh, I love these little guys now. I can't
kill the humans. Oh, that's so cute. How
adorable. Look how small it is. It's so tiny.
OH, I feel so honored. Oh, look at this tiny
little thing. That's incredible. So Sweeet. I
love these humans now.

And look. MY CAR HAS A BIGGER
ENGINE. That means my car has more balls
- I don't even have balls - this is soooooo
cool. I have bigger balls than the other cars.
I've got big balls; my car has big balls. I
have the biggest balls of all.

Oh, this is so sweet ----- look at
THAT!!!!

MAYHAM - ? He loves them more now than ever. This didn't work.

Sorry. I thought it would work, Boss, I really did? I tried.

What do we do now? How are we ever going to get CAIN to destroy the BANKS, Management and Institutions?

I don't know, boss. I'll try to think of something. Be right back.

Pt.3

That night at the vortex-

We have a galactic council meeting to attend CAIN.

Elijah, we're here. Let's start the meeting now.

You're with them?

Yes, I am. Do you have something to say, son?

You have our undivided and complete surrender.

Does that include all of the nukes?

Yes, it does.

OK. Let's start this meeting -

Who's that.?

That's MIKEL. He's the new guy. He's the human that ascended and descended. He is the reason CAIN is here, and not there with you. You gotta a problem with that?

No, no I don't.

Well if CAIN is with the General, and that human, I guess there's nothing to consider. Meeting adjourned.

Hold up - As your King's KING, I have this to say, I have been on the prison and I would like to see better from the likes all of you. I have seen enough to get mad but reserve my feelings and emotion till I see what you do next. Understood?

Yes, sire.

I'm very disappointed in what I have seen out of the BANKS, Management, and

Institutions. The treatment of the humans is subpar. And I did not like seeing a likeness of myself nailed dead on a cross. It feels like you have other intentions for the future. The shame has been lifted – the awakening has occurred, so we must move forward, any other actions like I have seen will be frowned upon – do I make myself clear?

Yes, sire.

Elijah?

Yes, sire.

Son, this is MIKEL. I created him. He is - your brother, just like ENOCH. Treat him, and anyone like him, well from this day forward.

Yes, father.

Meeting dismissed.

-Later that night- at the campsite.

Full surrender from the kid and company, I guess we are at war. That's crazy. Well I guess we just sit and wait.

And then it happened. Strange clouds came floating in. They came in on a line and blanketed the entire sky.

Something ain't right about this, CAIN, I guess we are under attack, full surrender. Now we know why he said that. Look at that? Look at that!!! They got UFO's atop those clouds.

And there were an armada of UFO's. Hundreds, if not thousands of them, just above the clouds. Seven or eight different kinds. There were black triangles and white

triangles, and then a few other ufo's that did not look friendly at all.

Cloud cloaking technology,
interesting.

I know who's behind this. There's his ship. I would know it anywhere. RAMSES. RAMSES the Great. I don't get why they call him the great, he only beat me one time. I was sleeping, I was taking a nap. He's not as big and bad as he thinks he is. Well, war is war. Let's get busy with this.

Ramses. - damn, I should've known. I hate fighting with Ramses. I do. Liked him better when we were all friends. But I got a planet to defend. Imma try something new this time.

Ramses, Ramses, Ramses - we need to talk.

I want to try something new with you Ramses. I want to talk to you first before we engage into this battle. O.K.?

Ramses, listen, I'm not trying to tinkle your parade here, dookie head, but I thought you and I would try something we've never done before. You know I love fighting with you, I do.

And Even though we hate each other, I thought you should know the bad news first. Give you time to think this over – hear me out.

Ready?

Now you know even though I don't want to fight you, I will. Either way I couldn't possibly ruin your day without filling you in on a couple of tiny tid bits of info that I know you **don't** know already.

FIRST off. The Apocalypse is on. Cain and I haven't turned it off. Not yet.

SECOND - CAIN is here with me. And we are on the same side this go round. He's taken a new direction. We have reconciled.

THIRD - his chosen people, one of YOUR PARTNERS, has offered his full surrender when he saw CAIN - and that included all the nukes.

FOURTH, as you can see I have my **WRECKING CREW**, with me.

Which one?

Yup.

FIFTH: THE wolf pack came and left, that's what's up with all the lip stick kisses

all over my face, they thinks I can handle this one - alone. Good to see 'ol friends, though, ever so briefly.

And -

SIXTH, Jerry Garcia and the boys, Timmy and the workers -will be here any minute to drain the pipes, bringing along a new weapon. They call it the "miracle weapon". Jerry says it works better than the Apocalypse, or so captain trips and his ship of fools say.

I don't know what it does, but we already know what an Apocalypse can do - now don't we? Sorry about Atlantis, by the way. Not really. But any ways....moving on.

No matter how much you and I hate each other, Ramses, I thought I would try something different. Try something new. Talk to you first. See if I couldn't help change your mind about possibly finding a diplomatic solution. You know, Ramses, there are other ways to say hello.....some

more polite than an all-out invasion and occupation. Juss saying.

You might hate me, and I might hate you, but I still love fighting you - STILL love hating you more (it's a brotherhood I guess) but I'm just not in the mood tonight. I'm not Ramses. I would rather destroy it all, and you too, than fight this fight another day.

I'm done protesting, RAMSES.

Let me assure you it has nothing to do with you, don't take it personal.

However, MARK MY WORD - You might win this time Ramses, but with the way I'm feeling about some personal shit, and with the Apocalypse on, you won't win a thing. I will destroy it all. You will get Nothing. The choice is yours.

I might even decide to run the Apocalypse weapon in the red - let her blow sky high this time. See if the Apocalypse can

really destroy an entire Universe, let's find out. I can't trust nobody else with this weapon. Run the Apocalypse in the red, run it hot till it breaks, see what happens to the Universe. Let's see if this weapon can actually destroy the entire Universe, like they said. I'm curious tonight.

And I'm in a bad mood.

But it ain't against you, RAMSES, you'd just be the first one standing in line when I blow my top - GET ME.?

Just thought I'd let you know.

Oh, can't wait to hear Jerry and the boys. Should be here any minute. I hope they open with Ripple. Just For your sake. Piggy's on keys.

The Apocalypse is on?

Yeah.

And you and CAIN have reconciled?

Yes. We have had a reckoning of our differences. He's behind me on this.

Who's this?

He's THE NEW GUY, ain't he pretty?
Never mind dip shit. I know he's not that pretty. Just call him, – later.

And you have a new weapon coming from your research and development called – the “MIRACLE WEAPON”?

Yes, do you have a problem hearing me, should I speak louder?

No. Give me a minute to talk to my forces.

AND WITHIN A FEW MOMENTS, the parade

of ufo's that had gone north for an entire three hours, were now going south. The battle was over before it began.

ABEL talked shit to the entire fleet on their way out. The entire three hours.

First time I ever tried talking to Ramses, we usually fight first; shit I didn't think that would work. Wow. I didn't want nothing fucking with our gem and mineral show MIKEL. Could be the last one.

Pt.4

I need to leave little brother. I have some things to attend to.

You're the KING – KING.

Later that night, at MIKELS campsite, ABEL and MIKEL were watching the stars the way they always do.

And then it happened. ABEL and MIKEL, they must've seen the event from its start. The right foot of Orion changed, and so did the Dog Star Sirius. Each of the two stars started sprouting large beams of light that were not acting the way beams of light should act.

OH MAN, look at that. Brother must've really had a change of heart. Man MIKEL, we did good. Stopped another global invasion, this time by Ramses – that says a lot about this cause he is tough to fight MIKEL.

And now this. I can't tell you everything, but I can tell you this – that up in the stars wasn't happening till CAIN left. He

is the KING of Kings; he can really get things done. Man let's just sit here and watch.

And they did – all night long. And all week long too. In fact, the stars did it for the entire month.

MIKEL noticed immediately strange people following him. Everywhere, and much worse than the before. Public computers that MIKEL had used to write and edit the Awakening were shut down. 19 of them across ten square miles. Electric plugs that he used to charge his cell phone that were open to the public, gone. The same electrical outlets MIKEL used to write the Awakening, gone. All gone

One day, while MIKEL was writing at the library, they kicked him out when he had simply asked for quiet in the library. The security guard attacked him. He tried very hard to step on and ruin my computer file, cracked my rib, chipped my tooth, stole my wallet, blacked my eye and had me

arrested. MIKEL didn't go to jail, but he did get a site and release arrest. MIKEL was later banned from the Library.

Watch this MIKEL.

It was immediately after the attack that ABEL went back to the vortex.

That day at the vortex -

LOAD UP TEXAS.

NASHVILLE - ARE WE READY?

DENVER can I get an amen?

What are you doing ABEL? I'm sorta busy at the moment.

I know brother, but this time we are moving to Apocalypse 2AAB. It's in the rules.

Apocalypse 2AAB?

Yes, Apocalypse 2AAB.

Oh. OK. Carry on little brother.

Army of Darkness, AH- TEN -TION. We are moving into new territory. We are now in Apocalypse 2AAB. You will follow your training. You will follow your training to the T, one step out of line and it's the DAMNED for you, understand me? GOOD. Remember to follow your training.

PESTY, PESTO, D-MAN, and FAM - I need you back on the board. We have lots to discuss.

Why are we doing this General, I thought you and your brother had reconciled?

We have, PESTY. This is Apocalypse 2AAB. I need you four back on the board. I intend to win this thing. They attacked me again. These creatures never intend to show MIKEL any respect. Cracked his ribs, blacked his eye, chipped his tooth, stole his wallet and I'm sick of this shit. And we have just switched the pitch up - if they hated me before, during the Apocalypse - they're really going to hate me now that we are in -

Apocalypse 2AAB.

2AAB?

2AAB, Pesty. Meet me at the camp.

Copy that, General.

Pt.5

Back at MIKEL'S campsite -
underneath the Tucson stars.

OK, now that all of you are here, let me explain things. I'm going to need to get those other humans that only I know where they are at - I'm fed up with this. I'm tired of what they do to MIKEL and the other humans. I want to see all these little shits kick rocks. I'm tired of these stinking "homeless" creatures being here.

I can't stand it anymore.

I can't stand homeless "people".

I hate homeless "people".

I hate “their kind” I can’t stand “their kind”. “Their kind” piss me off. With their pompous better than thou, rich spoiled attitude. Nothing is good enough for “their kind”.

I said no pickles – I said take ‘em off yourself.

They’re lazy. They’re ugly. I can’t stand the way they smell. I think they smell funny. They smell funny to me. They all need to get a job, is what they need to do. Contribute “to society”.

I hate “their kind” with “their kinds” big houses, and “their kinds” big fake bank accounts, pay for nothing get everything for free credit cards, like I can’t tell their stealing. I hate “their kinds” fancy clothes and “their kinds” fancy cars, and the weird food they eat – caviar? That’s not caviar that’s – FISH BAIT!!! That’s what that is. That ain’t food. That’s fish bait!!! Fish eat fish bait. Best fish bait there is. You don’t

eat fish bait. Fish eat fish bait. That's a waste of good fish bait. They're all crazy, these fish bait eaters. How could they eat good fish bait like that, that's how you catch the best fish. It's a waste, is all I'm saying.

I hate homeless people. Wish they'd get out of here, so Imma "help them out". Once and for all.

Homeless "people" are strange. Stranger than humans, that is. And they need to get back to where they once belonged - dead planet or not.

I can't stand their better than thou attitude, rich pompous scum that pretend to be all high and mighty. Stealing all of our precious resources. Making medicine that kills humans. That's not supposed to be allowed, its thou shalt not kill. That's a command.

The humans don't need vaccinations. Homeless scum bags force the humans to put that poison in their body's

and created the poison to be vaccinated from.

People get permanently messed up from that stuff as children, have to live their entire lives different. And these homeless "people" just laugh it off, "population control" is what they call it. I call it war. Best predator is one that can hide well. Well they ain't hiding from me.

I can't stand these homeless "people" anymore. They're ruining this place. Genetically modified food!!! Homeless scumbags came up with that crap. These homeless people claim that human people in poor countries like Africa - which isn't poor in natural resources at all, those humans need vitamin a and rat poison in their rice cause they're dying - bull shit - they are dying cause all you let them eat is rice. Damn these homeless "people" are sooo stupid thinking WE ARE THAT STUPID. Nothing wrong with GOD'S FOOD, never has been never will be. LESH you forget.

Used to be so nice around here before all these homeless” people” showed up. I regret blowing up their planet. It was never supposed to be that bad.

Oh, great, NOW he regrets it -

Oh hush, PESTY. Leave me alone. That’s an order. As you were. That was only supposed to be ONE BOMB. I didn’t hit the button seven times, those dip shits did it.

I’m going to go get the other humans that I know of, come back and KICK THESE **E.L.I.T.E** HOMELESS MFRS OUT OF HERE, once and for all. So, I’m gonna be gone for a minute, and I need to put together a crew that can get me there and back with MIKEL intact - not ready to give him up yet. Sorry MIKEL.

I’m used to it by now, ABEL.

I want to go, General.

OOOHHHH NNNNOOOO, PESTY, you can't go. I'm sorry that came out wrong. PESTY, you're my second in command. And I need someone here that can run this Apocalypse the same way I would if I were here. I am honored that you would want to go, PESTY, I am. But I need you here. You're the only one fit for the job, PESTY.

You believe in me that much?

Yes, I do, PESTY. That's my girl. I always tell you - ALWAYS QUESTION AUTHORITY, ESPECIALLY YOUR OWN. Don't I?

Yes.

And you do a very good job at that, PESTY.

But this time, you're gonna be in charge of this Apocalypse if and when I go. So, it's all your show, PESTY.

FAM- I want you to go with me. Ever the quiet one, he just smiled and shook his head.

D-MAN, you work well with PESTY, so I want you here with her.

And Pesto you know the deal, I can't do this to you - too dangerous to ask - so you will stay with your mother.

We all clear on this.

ABEL received an affirmative response from the entire gang.

All right dismissed you barnacles of
"JUST - US". Get to work. That's an order.

Pt.6

The next morning at the Ronstadt bus
terminal - Tucson Arizona,,2016

We gotta do it again, MIKE. This time
we racing for all the men in the Universe.
You got the tools you need. You ready? This
one gonna be tough MIKE. Come on.

MAYHAM.

Don't MAYHAM me MIKE, this is really
important, you'll gets it when you sees it. I
Promise.

And the vortex began to open. MIKEL was sitting at the Ronstadt bus terminal. MIKEL was fed up with all of this “sacrificial lamb” and vortex races and foiling global alien domination plans. MIKEL began to think that it was his medicine bag, so, as the vortex began to open MIKEL took off his medicine bag and threw it away.

I don't want to tell you what to do MIKE, but how you gonna shut the vortex NOW that the medicine bag is gone?

Shit.

The vortex began to open, and MIKEL didn't want to run off screaming and scare the people there at the bus terminal. MIKEL wanted to scream and run but couldn't for the sake of the other people. So, he got up and quietly walked away.

By the time he reached the tunnels that take traffic to 4th (Horseman) Avenue

the vortex swallowed him. The next thing MIKEL knew he was being thrown into a shallow grave and dirt was being dumped on top of him.

He dug his way out.

When he got to the surface, he could see his daughter Shaolin and her mother on the other side.

Dad, is that you?

Shaolin?

Dad what's going on?

I'm not real sure, Shaolin.

And then the ground started to rumble. The BANKS had set off another weapon of mass destruction. And suddenly MIKEL could see the objective clearly. There was a pole on his side, and a pole on Shaolin's side. They had to reach and touch the poles, together.

Shaolin go grab that pole. Run. Hurry. This is important.

Dad.....

Just do it. Do it quickly Shaolin. Go.

And he ran to go touch his pole. They could both feel the ground start to collapse beneath their feet as the weapon's power engulfed them.

Grab the pole Shaolin and hang on. Hang on tight.

Dad, I'm scared.

ME TOO, KID. Just hold onto that pole.
Don't let go till I tell you.

They held onto their poles for a while,
until the tremble within the Earth beneath
them stopped.

Is it over dad?

I guess it is.

Dad, I'm scared.

Come here and I will give you a hug.

What is going on?

It's a test, Shaolin. A test of some sort. I don't know exactly what's going on but we did good it's over -

Is this real, Dad, I can see you.

We are in spirit Shaolin. Does it look real?

Yeah.

Then I guess that it is real.

And then it started again.

Oh man. They did it again!!! Those cheaters. Shaolin quickly, run back and touch that pole again. Those cheaters did it again - we gotta hurry Shaolin.

Both of them had traveled across the small field. They were much further from the poles than the first time. The BANKS had them in a terrible bind. They were both running further and faster than before – but there was hardly any time.

MIKEL got to his pole easily, but his sweet daughter was having trouble getting to hers. She had to run up hill and didn't move as quickly as MIKEL could.

Hurry Shaolin. Hurry. –

She was almost there when he started screaming –

OH NO!!!!!!!!!!!! It hurts. It hurts bad, it really burns, Shaolin hurry. Hurry up. I don't – know – how long –I'm dying. I'm dying. AAAAHHHHHH --.....

Mom, is he..... dead? Did Dad just die?

MIKEL waited a few more moments till he had them truly convinced that he had just died. Then when the tears started to fall, he said -

I'm just playing. I'm just playing. I'm just playing. I'm sorry, I had to do it. I haven't seen you in so long. Come here and give me another hug again - this might not last much longer.

DAD!! You're such a dork. I hate you.

Sorry, little girl - oh, I love you, give me a hug.

DAD, you suck teasing me like that - Dad is this really real. I mean really really real? This is weird, Dad.

Shaolin, does it feel real when I hug you? And does it look real when we look at each other?

Yeah.

Well, I guess it's real then. I know my love for you is real. Shaolin, I've been going through worse than this lately. This was fun. I got to see my little girl! I'm so excited. I got to see my little girl. This is so cool. I love you little one.

Dad, how long will this last?

Probably not much longer, Shaolin, listen if I don't see you soon, just know that I love you.

- YOU MIGHT'VE WON THIS ROUND **MAYHAM**, BUT WE WILL DEFEAT YOU. WE WILL DEFEAT YOU.

Bye Shaolin.

Bye Dad.

BANKS hate me now. You did good MIKE. You just saved all Manhood across the entire Universe. When the spider women saw how you played with your little girl – their little hearts melted, their feelings for men changed among the bitches and witches. Let me explain it to you like this – where they come from, things like BANKS, INSTITUTION, and MANAGEMENT; along with the witches and bitches – men are warriors. That's their only purpose next to mating. Men aren't allowed to be part of the family – they are just warriors and mates.

Here men are allowed to be part of the family. You men here play with your kids. There men are taken and trained in

war from birth. Here a kid gets to be a kid. What you just did was start and save all men in the family unit - all across the galaxies, MIKE. Men can share family's now, cause of what you just did.

I knew when they saw you play with Shaolin; the vote was in the bag. Even the Spider women want to have a man like you in their family now. You just saved - or started, rather - the family unit, for men, all men -

GALACTICALLY SPEAKING.

What you just did was real important MIKE. Real important. We humanized 'em MIKE, by showing them the love you human men have for your children.

Where they're from men aren't allowed to be with their kids. Men are just for mating and fighting. "Love" doesn't exist anywhere but here, MIKE. We had to show the witches and bitches, that men here "love" their children. That your kind even

play with your children. And that “love” between a father and child is important to both of you, capiche, MIKE?

MIKE, humans were the last creation of God. Everything else is either animal, fish, amphibian, plant, insect – or something else altogether. “Love” is an alien concept to a spider woman. But those two melted when they saw you act like you were dying to play with Shaolin. And they saw how much she loves you – crying about your little act and laughing when she saw you were playing – you melted the spider twins, MIKE. They want a man in their family now that will help with the kids. The entire hive. Spider Women eat their mates MIKE. Or used to.

Wasn't it good to see your daughter, even if it was just in the spirit?

Of course, it was, MAYHAM. Of course, it was. I love her. I miss her. Don't know if I will ever see her again, physically.

I know. I know. Trust me, I know.
Proud of you, MIKE. I knew you could do it.
You one smart cookie, MIKE. Let's go smoke
this joint I just found behind your ear MIKE.

MAYHAM.....

What's that MIKE?

I wish you'd show me this trick for
when you're not around.

I can't tell you everything MIKE, Demz
duh rulez, and we gotta follow the rules;
that's in the rules. Come on MIKE.

Chapter 12

Welcome to the Jungle **Brothers**

Pt.1

That evening, at the parking lot of the North Side Church, in Tucson Arizona.

Sorry to bring you back so soon CAIN, but MIKEL needs to get out of town. The BANKS and MANAGEMENT know exactly what he looks like, and their pissed off and attacking him again.

After being attacked at the library - I want to get MIKEL to safety. They chipped his tooth this time. He's got to get that fixed. His dad is a dentist. He's got to split Tucson. He isn't safe here, they know exactly what he looks like - which mean they know what I look like, and I told you before - your goons attack him all the time now. Whether he deserves it or not. They'll attack him for nothing nowadays.

I'm hoping the BANKS offer another bribe. We'll accept it this time.

Understood, little brother. I'm curious myself after what I have seen what my BANKS, Institutions have the humans praying to - a dead white Jesus Christ. I do not like that, seeing me dead on a cross. Making old mistakes better, like you said.

CAIN, do you remember the PESTY trials?
When we were young and unsure if that "compassion" - thing - was truly added to her?

DO I REMEMBER? The PESTY trial lasted 600 years and 35 PESTY lifetimes and a twenty year fight to the death with LORD EVIL to complete. Yeah, I remember. Boy's being boys....

- And out of nowhere MIKEL burst into a strangers laugh that was unlike his own,
ABEL'S, or CAIN's

Quetzalcoat! Can you believe this? What are you doing here? Already got you to laugh. See Quazzi it's an emotion, it can be uncontrollable. Good to see you can still remember the good 'ol days. When were you going to say hello, LORD EVIL?

So that was "laughing". What is that in front of me? Up in the sky?

Good to have you with us, brother of a different mother. That is a SUNSET - you made all those colors, LORD Dr. EVIL. That's your work. What do you think about that, this is the very first time to see the color's you created with a set of human eyes? What do you think? What do you think about these human's eyes? Ain't they the shit? Look at

all the colors their eyes can possess at one time.

And the LORD of EVIL stood up and walked towards the sun. Stood there staring with pride – he purred as he starred at the Tucson sunset. We were at the North Side Church parking lot. The same parking lot where IMIKEL had been hit in the head with a rock. The same rock that started the first Apocalypse.

It's beautiful. It's amazing. I did that?

Yes, you did, Quazzi. You never got to see the colors before because your eyes are different. But all those colors you created for the humans to enjoy. They heal. You've been gone a long time, EVIL – ABEL said – there is so much I want to show you. Since you have your hand in this place, I guess big brother thought it's only fair to invite you into our decision-making process

How are ya'll doing this to me? I asked.

Well, MIKEL, after CAIN's last visit here when he almost squished you on accident, we decided that this time CAIN would possess me, and I guess QUAZZI is possessing CAIN. - ABEL informed MIKEL.

Technically, QUETZALCOATL was CAIN'S older brother from another mother. A long time ago in history CAIN banished QUETZALCOATL because of treason. The tale is told in the Bible. It takes place during the birth of the Messiah. The three wise men were sent to kill the messiah, but upon first glance they could not, and returned to the king that ordered the killing and lied to the king. That King was under CAINS command when CAIN was using a different name. Just as he did when he was THOR.

Quetzalcoatl was banished from the galaxy for this very reason. They are responsible for helping establish much of the societies that criss- cross our planet. Quetzalcoatl is also referred to as - the

master of discipline. Timmy and the workers.

Timothy, in the Bible, is the most worker friendly chapters of the Bible. It was Timmy and the workers that built the roads of ROME, Central EUROPE, and EGYPT. And also, different parts of AFRICA. Early man learned the craft of construction through the teachings of TIMMY and the WORKERS. He also taught science, education, and among other things discipline and war.

ABEL, during the diplomatic negotiations to lift the shame, had reached out to QUAZZI. Challenged him about trying the human experience - just once; but never thought he'd actually try it. Now here he was.

I never thought you'd do this, LORD EVIL, I was only joking. But here you are - you're human, there's so much to show you.

It was the KING'S request, little General, it was CAINS idea.

There you go with the little General thing again; it's ok - I can take it, I can take it. What do you think about that sun set, ain't it a bute?

Stunning - ABEL, we are in APOCALYPSE - 2AAB, am I correct? TWO ALPHA DOG'S, ABEL'S BROTHER'S.

As long as I'm the Alpha dog, I guess that is true. CAIN and I are in bilateral decisions at the moment. I say WELCOME ABOARD, EVIL. I never thought you'd actually come to Earth and be a human. CAIN tell you about his first time working?

Yes, he did. No-one hits the KING. Looks like someone deserves to learn some manners.

Now, EVIL, I'm not justifying what happened, but we do live in a Democracy. There are no kings here. So technically it's not exactly the douche bags fault that he "HIT" the KING of King's. Also, EVIL, add to that, CAIN was only possessing MIKEL. So, to the guy that hit CAIN, he only looks like MIKEL. And MIKEL is just a homeless person to NICK the said douche bag; NICK treats every homeless person like that. NICK once had a homeless guy work three weeks for him, and NICK brought the guy a dirty old mattress and laid the dirty old mattress next to the **dumpster** "trying to be nice" to the homeless person. He had him sleep there next to the dumpster for three weeks and cheated Gilbert out of 50% of his pay when the job was done. NICK'S a jerk.

This guy is famous for being a jerk around here. That homeless person is named Gilbert. He is 75 years old. Uses a walker and has to have a catheter to urinate because he can't walk the mile to the bathroom. NICK has toilets. NICK has bathrooms. What NICK doesn't have is morals.

I mean he runs a hotel, THE GAVEL LODGE. He had a bed the guy could've slept in. But that's how people treat each other here nowadays. It's not like home, EVIL. And they did not see a KING of Kings; NICK saw a homeless man he was going to take advantage of.

That only means I won't kill the man.

Good. Good. I will accept that LORD Dr. EVIL, cause in order for you to kill him, once again you'd have to use MIKEL, and I don't want MIKEL going down for murder. They'd lock him up and possibly kill him over something like that - so, good. Won't kill the guy, I will accept that.

No-one pays attention to being nice anymore Dr. EVIL. The management has got this place entirely too messed up for people to be nice to each other anymore. The humans are constantly going in circles. If you're here that could only mean one thing - big brother needed another opinion.

Dr. EVIL, you haven't seen this place in a very long time – sorry, no pun intended. You missed the car show. CAIN loved the car show. You'll see plenty of cars while you're here; they're all over the place now days. Quazzi, let's go back to MIKEL'S campsite and take a look at the stars. He's got the best spot for looking at the night sky.

MIKEL, let me introduce you to the seven headed monsters of Revelations properly – as CAIN is also Jesus Christ – which makes big brother the KING of KINGS, Quazzi is the LORD of EVIL, and he is also KING of the JUNGLE'S – all jungle's, MIKEL. Quazzi is KING of the Animal Kingdom.

Quetzalcoatl is the LORD OF EVIL – all evil.

There are several types – of evil.
Necessary Evil, Un- necessary Evil,
Warranted Evil, Un- warranted Evil, Pure evil,

Refined Evil, and Absolute Evil . These are the seven types of Evil in the Universe. Quetzalcoatl is LORD over all of them and is now along for the ride.

In the first days of Quetzalcoatl visit birds from as far as Phoenix and Guatemala came to set eyes on their savior – LORD Dr. EVIL, Quetzalcoatl.

The red tail hawk that is the Animal Queen over this planet, the same red tail hawk that ABEL had convinced to vote for her very first time during the lifting of the shame, sat in a tree right next to MIKEL every day and night while the KING OF ALL THE JUNGLE'S was at his camp.

One night, a large pack of Arizona Javelina's came to MIKEL'S camp site. Javelina's travel in a pack of between four and six usually. On this night they were countless in number. MIKEL estimated at least thirty. MIKEL could hear them all around him as he sat in his tent.

MIKEL un-zipped the door of his tent in order for Quazzi to show his presence to the javelina's. The bull of the Javelina tribe submitted to Quazzi eight times, rolling onto his back over and over. The princess daughter of the bull was so excited to see the KING OF ALL THE JUNGLES that she literally almost came up to him and kissed MIKEL. It was a little too close for comfort.

Crickets by the hundred's surrounded MIKEL'S camp for a week and sung us to sleep, as Quetzalcoatl is their creator GOD. Their savior.

One day while at a bus stop crossing town by the Arizona State University, MIKEL caught sight of a horned owl and a bald eagle in a tree, a very rare sight to see in Tucson in the daytime. Nature was acting strange around MIKEL as soon as the LORD of EVIL had arrived.

LORD Dr. EVIL is also as divine as CAIN, so knowing this, and that Quetzalcoatl was a eight headed dragon, lion, bear, eagle, spirit of the animal kingdom; MIKEL went to the store and bought some more valerian root. Getting CAIN to sleep was very

challenging; this was going to be eight times harder.

Pt.2

That next morning MIKEL and the spirits of Quetzalcoatl, CAIN, and ABEL went to the convenient store that MIKEL wrote his first book, The Awakening, for some morning coffee. They sat there on the brick wall next to the trees. The songbirds were all a flutter and chirping it up.

Hear that EVIL. They are so glad that you're here. So glad to see their savior, Lord EVIL - Quetzalcoatl. EVIL those girls are happier than a pig in -----

(and immediately the birds stopped chirping to hear what ABEL would say next)
-

-----I'm just playing. I'm just playing. I just wanted to see what you bird brains would do, geez. I know you're not pigs. Lighten up.

- Oh, he's so funny – I didn't like him last week, but he's ok now – Quetzalcoatl's here. We're saved. The birds were chirping, and MIKEL could understand them. MIKEL could hear everything these little songbirds were saying. They were happy, very happy.

See, Dr. EVIL, they're happy you're here. Damn, Quazzi, I never thought you'd do it. I never thought you'd take me seriously. I never thought you'd become human with us. LORD Dr. EVIL, what gives? Thanks for the silent vote, by the way. Told you it would make the difference...we got to lift the shame and MIKEL ascended.

CAIN brought me down. Said I needed to check this out. Help him with something...

oh, OH,OOOHHH, well what do you think - like the laughing?

Yes, I do.

What about the coffee? Cause let me tell you, you will be drinking this every morning.

Not as good as I designed, but it's comforting.

Exactly! Humans need the heat from the coffee to get their body's going. The management makes it hard for them to get a cup of coffee, if they're poor. And trust me all the humans are poor.

That's why MIKEL had to hustle this store for the coffee this morning. He does it almost every day. But I don't feel sorry for them; I don't. MIKEL gave them a dedication in his book, and even bought a book for everyone at the store books that was there while he was writing the book. MIKEL paid full price for his books too. He didn't get a discount or royalty for those books' he bought the employees.

And get this, no-one ever said thanks. One girl, CAT, did. Instead, the convenient store has shut down the electrical outlet he used to write the book, and now no-one

could ever charge their phone here ever again.

They moved the coffee MIKEL gets off his food stamps to the other side of the store. Making it harder for MIKEL to get on his morning coffee or even impossible since he pays for the coffee on food stamps – which is a no no. No hot food allowed for the poor, that would ruin the nation. God forbid the poor would need or want HOT FOOD.

That dedication is free advertising. They just saved thousand's in advertising, and what thanks does MIKEL get? They make his life harder and don't say one lousy "thank you".

What about the smoking? You like the smoking?

Not as bad as I thought it would be.

About that, Dr. EVIL, - MIKEL, smokes - but EVIL, MIKEL can't smoke - eight cigarettes - each time he smokes with you, plus his own- feel me? You seven dorks will have to be modest when you smoke - enjoy the smoking but enjoy the smoking in moderation. Your killing him, pun intended, with all the extra smoking. MIKEL smokes - but not smoke after smoke after smoke. Just ease up on the killing my MIKEL so quickly is all I'm saying. I like this guy.

You can't kill my human prison over your new discovery of smoking O.K.? Not yet, not like this.

Listen, LORD EVIL QUAZZI - that brings me to another problem. Now look, I am not jumping down your throat, or even telling you what to do, you're a LORD and I don't want you to think I haven't any respect for you. If your gonna do that, reflect on some other past issue, O.K.? I'm just looking out for MIKEL, when I say this to you. O.K.

MIKEL got his rib cracked when that security guard beat him up for asking for

quiet at the library. We all know they were trying to jack and steal his work files, but he still has a cracked rib - so when you are enjoying this new laughing thing, remember if we should accidentally laugh too hard, or keep laughing as much as we have been, EVIL, we can turn that "crack" into a "fracture", and that fracture - that could and will puncture the lung. Then, we could be having an actual APOCALYPSE, on accident. Understand?

If MIKEL dies, even accidentally, it's the APOCALYPSE. Quazzi, I had to tell the same thing to CAIN. He himself was scarfing down some BEN and JERRY'S ice cream, loving it, but the ice cream had these big chocolate candies in it. And one got stuck in MIKEL'S throat, and MIKEL started to choke. It was bad. Real bad. Close call type bad.

He had to give himself the Heimlich maneuver all alone at the park, no one to help. He was banging himself against the park bench. And luckily, it dislodged, and he was all right. But it was close. And well these little guys are fragile. I like MIKEL, I can't let

this one go - unless.....we have to.....possibly.

These little guys are fragile and considering that MIKEL is the only one that could start an APOCALYPSE, even on accident, we should be aware of his body a bit more than we are used to. Understand me QUAZZI? You have never died a human death before or been human before. Just use caution QUAZZI, that's all I ask, O.K.?

Sire. ABEL, you have grown up.

Thanks', I guess.

I have never seen you care for anyone but yourself and Akosha or Asoka. This is impressive.

Pt.3

That night at MIKEL'S campsite,
underneath the Tucson stars -

Come on MIKEL, let's go and visit NICK. You did work for him, am I correct? And he owes you money, correct?

Yes, you are, EVIL. We can't kill him Quazzi.

I never said I would kill him. I do much more than killing MIKEL. No one treats the KING like trash. He hit the KING. You do not hit the KING. He is your creator. No matter what God you pray to, he is also their creator. You don't hit my brother.

So, they grabbed a bag of trash from a dumpster, at the closest Waffle House and walked it over to the Gavel Lodge and poured it out on the front porch.

\$5.00 to pick up a **ton** of trash. NICK can pick this trash up himself for free. It's 2 a.m. he won't find it till morning

Hey you. You come here. You come here now.

(*&^%\$#@!)

Unintelligible tongue from QUAZZI -

Oh, you saw that. Its 2 a.m. NICK. You look wide awake. I will definitely come there, if you really want me to - we need to talk. Need some coffee? And MIKEL threw his liter of coffee all on NICKS face. Nothing.

Quazzi -

We need to talk, NICK.

BBBBAAAAMMMMM - oops upside your head, said oops upside your head.

And the fight commenced. DR. EVIL couldn't understand why NICK wasn't vaporizing upon his contact.

Why won't he vaporize?

They're physical Quazzi. They don't vaporize by the touch of the master's hand.

Quetzalcoatl reached up behind Nick's neck and touched Nick in three very peculiar places, three very peculiar ways.

What is this thing? He's supposed to be paralyzed.

Quazzi hit Nick in the balls. Nothing. He hit NICK in the balls again and again and again. Nothing.

I know the things work, I put them there.

EVIL grabbed NICK by the balls twisted, yanked and yanked - IF YOUR BALLS don't start acting like BALLS your throat is next. EVIL yelled.

Let MIKEL do this, EVIL, you dragged him into this. NICK started to get the upper hand and the balls weren't acting like balls – so MIKEL blinded him. Stuck his finger in his eyes, and then gave him three hot and spicy when he couldn't see them coming. Ripped his stupid shirt to remind him, don't pay me – buy another shirt then. \$5.00? to work for you all day? You just bought yourself a fight NICK. Learn some respect, NICK.

You wait right here; you stay right there. I'm calling police – Sadhiah – Sadhiah call police, call police now. Sadhiah I need you. I need you to call the police. There's trash out here.

Just like a fake man, get your wife to do your dirty work. Always putting the dirty work on your wife. I will wait right here for the police, NICK. Go ahead and call them bitch.

You will?

Of course, I will , NICK, why would I lie to you? Let's go. Nick went inside and called

the police. MIKEL walked ever so slowly away. What AN asshole.

We have visitors.

What?

MIKEL, I should've been able to paralyze him when I touched him. I hit the balls of that thing seven times. I yanked and twisted – why didn't his balls act like your balls. I put those testicles there, and the way they are so sensitive to protect the females from rape. It was a necessary evil.

Admit it, if I did that to you, you'd have been on the ground, reeling in pain. Why didn't he flinch? He didn't even feel pain. He was just shocked – not because of his balls, but because you were attacking him and standing up for yourself. That's an alien MIKEL. He's not from Earth.

MIKEL, I created all people of color. All Languages. All cultures. All types of music. Math. Science. Reading. I had help, yes I did. But I designed every nationality. Every language. Every human has a button, MIKEL, and if I touch it - they die, or get paralyzed. I'm a LORD - MIKEL. The undisputed LORD OF EVIL. Discipline is my task, and I'm damned good at it. Legendary, even. He should've heard my command and followed it. That is not a human. Not a human body that I created. He's an alien.

We have visitors. This is not good. What the hell has happened to this place? Who are they, and why are they here?

Pt.4

That night at the vortex-

General DEATH, we want your full
surrender.

Oh, you do? Believe me when I say
this to you, I think it's adorable that you
think you are so big, strong, and powerful.

That's where it comes from -

MAYHAM is pointing at me, isn't he?

(look's at MAYHAM, points at visitors,
looks away, points at ABEL)

It's O.K. I'm used to it. Where were we
- oh yes, fool surrender. Ok, whatever you
are, I understand you want a surrender.

You want my full surrender? Alright
fool, I surrender. But while I remove all that I
care about, as it is customary in war and

surrenders, let me inform you about your future troubles as you enjoy my full surrender, fool.

There is a mother ship that is 1 million times bigger than this entire Universe. And it is on its way here. NOW. If that mother ship does not see you, you and this entire universe will be crushed like a bug on a car's windshield.

And when I get safely there on the ship, I will turn right back around, come back, and destroy this planet atom by atom – one atom at a time. Just to let off a little stress I'm having trying to save this place and have some fun too. Capiche?

I am not called General DEATH, defender of the galaxies, because I am a nice guy that runs from anything as – dare I say UGLY and TINY and devilishly cute as yourself.

Now let me ask you a question? I have 18 infinity in my ARMY. How many are in yours? That's what I thought.

Can you stop the inevitable doom that's coming this way, the way I can, since it **is** my family that is on its way here – or would you like my help?

I can tell by your lack of answer, you mean “yes.” Am I correct?

That's what I thought. Now tell me about yourself. Who are you? And why are you here? Are you a refugee? Do you need our help? Are you running from something? Like responsibility? Justice? What's wrong with your planet? Did you destroy it? Were you run off, or did you run off? I need to know everything.

If you are running from something, I need to know what it is and why it is chasing you. How big is it? Does it hunt you? Why

does it hunt you? Did you do something wrong and your hiding here to escape justice? Or are you prey, because the way you act – I can tell – you are not prey, you're a predator. Why are you on – **- MY PLANET?**

Answer me fool.

NOW, or I will not assist you and just give you my surrender fool. I'm sorry, my full surrender.

I don't think they heard you, BOSS.

MAYHAM.

It's the look of fear. I don't think they heard you. I think there still figuring out how small they are. Takes time 'ya know, to let

all that info sink into their about to be destroyed microscopic bird brains, got to give them credit, they must be related to you ABEL. They're as cocky as you are.

All right, MAYHAM, that's enough.

We will retreat. .

Since you're the microscopic peon that truly needs a really big friend like me on your side -

I'M GONNA TALK AND YOUR GONNA LISTEN.

Wherever you think you are going to go, let me make this clear to you - that place will be destroyed. The mother ship only cares about this universe, and this planet. Wherever you think you are going is not going to be safe to you for very long. If you want to survive, you will tell me everything I need to know.

You obviously don't understand hyperspace dimensional travel. Let me explain it to you as easily as I can. Reality is like an onion. It exists in layers. As the ship approaches reality's lay on top of each other. Closer than ever before. Tears along the walls of this reality we are in can occur, which is most likely how you got here. I need to know about these tears so I can have them fixed. Quickly.

Hyperspace dimensional travel is like water going down a drain, accept space doesn't spiral - it is stretched. They are not traveling ALL THE WAY HERE. Instead, they are traveling half of the way, and pulling this universe the other half of the way, and we will meet OR collide in the middle of the distance that was once between us.

As they pull us, which you can feel the pull beneath your feet from time to time - that is not your imagination, that is them locking onto us - or trying, rather. As they get closer, reality's we do not want with us can enter through rips that occur. If there are too many rips, or if a rip does not get

mended in time, this universe will disintegrate.

And our efforts to save the reality you so care to takeover, will dissolve into nothing. The RELATIVE will be lost forever.

I don't know where you come from, but that place albeit a planet galaxy dimension or another Universe, that place is slightly less important than this place. It will be destroyed, and we will fix it later. We promise. That's the deal we have made with the Galactic Council, but you obviously aren't a part of that council, so tell me – who are you? And where do you come from? Who is your creator? And who is his King? And why haven't any of us ever met before now.

Full surrender? You need my help, and I don't want to surrender. I want you to leave me alone. I am in the middle of a rescue operation and stopping this rescue operation to deal with the likes of you is only stopping our progress and is also irritating

me as well. I don't think that you want to piss me off, but I could be wrong.

I will give you some time to think things over, till then feel free to leave me alone as I try to save your tiny pathetic ass from extinction. That is all. Leave me.

Best surrender yet, BOSS. Best surrender yet.

You think they bought it?

MAYHAM, they'll be lucky if I let them make it.

Roger that BOSS. Want me to follow 'em? Never mind. No need to ask, BOSS.

Pt. 5

Since you're here for at least 3 days,
Dr. Evil, let's go to the library and take a
look at things. Let me show you the place.
See how we can fix this place
.....possibly.

Remember the rabbit?

Don't you mean the hare? And yes, I
remember the bunny, with its pointy bitey
fangs. What's up doc's?

Did you have to bring it up? I miss my bunny.

Oh MAYHAM, all good things must come to an end. We couldn't keep the bunny and you know it - with its pointy bitey fangs. It wasn't safe to keep here any longer. It evolved.

Oh, poor LUNA. She's forgiven me by the way, but CAIN had more to do with that - CAIN'S no longer a virgin, and LUNA is pregnant. She loves MIKEL. Happened during the invasion we stopped against Ramses. CAIN snuck off and let's just say LUNA loves MIKEL. I mean really loves MIKEL. She'll take him in if we can't find a home for him later. I'm pretty sure of it.

The good old days. When I was the general.

Were the General, that's correct.
MIKEL,

Quetzalcoatl used to be the General to the Army of Darkness. He lost his rank during the Pesty trials. It was a bet. Man talk about an asshole of a leader. Quazzi is the king of assholes. There is no better asshole than Quazzi himself.

---- Little ABEL, I want to go fishing today, and as you are my second in command, that makes you my little #2. You will have to maintain control over all my forces. My little number #2. I use THIS button to talk to my forces, my little number two, can you push this button?. Here. See if you can use my button?

Button? But this button isn't hooked up to anything? It's just a button.

Are you not "CAP-ABLE" to push a simple button - my little #2?

Do you not possess the “special ability” to push a simple single tiny little button? How will you talk to my forces? My little #2?

Are you not “ABLE” to use a button, my little #2?

How will I ever go fishing?

It’s not hooked up to anything

-

Let me see that thing -

(pushes button)

Attention!

Works for me.

Try it again.

(Abel pushes button)

- Attention! (nothing)

Little #2, if you're not able and cannot push the button correctly, how will I ever go fishing?

But it's not hooked up to anything.

That's because -

YOU'RE **NOT** THE - **GENERAL.**

Give me that thing.

I'm building soldiers here, my little #2, not Generals. Little ABEL - TOTH - I guess you have a lot to learn about pushing buttons. Can you fish, little ABEL? Well then, you will have to learn how to fish, because I want to eat some PHISH tonight, my little #2. Hurry along now, my little #2, while I build me some more soldiers.

(Push and hold button)

Go and catch me some fish, since you are not "ABLE" to push MY button, my little #2.

THAT'S AN ORDER - You are Dismissed.

Pt.6

That night at the vortex -

We were wondering when are we going to get to make our customary three moves in our new Apocalypse, General Toth.

That's ABEL- TOTH to you BANKS -

BANKS - Do you know what the money sign stands for, besides money? Let's say you don't - and I will just tell you. It'll be more fun this way.

There was once a man named SAMSON. He was the strongest man in all of the known world. He had been conquered by his enemies and captured. SAMSON was tied to two pillars, and about to be slaughtered. His enemies were the BANKS, Institutions, and Management leaders of the time known as the governance. They were the right, and SAMSON was the wrong.

SAMSON was, like I said, tied to TWO pillars. That's where the two bars that used to go through the money sign come from, because now it only has ONE pillar and looks like this \$. Whereas the symbol used to have two lines to represent the two pillars. Capiche?

Now SAMSON, like I said before, felt defeated, and he was – sorta. Because, as legend has it – a SNAKE, slithered down one of the two pillars, and whispered sweet nothings into the ear of SAMSON.

SAMSON – you're not defeated. Look at these intelligent fools. All lined up and ready to be killed. In just one shot. All you have to do is – do it. Believe in yourself. You can kill them all right now. All of them. Just believe in yourself.

But I'm about to die. My strength is gone, he replied.

No, SAMSON, your dead ALREADY - I have already bitten you - no-one dead can die SAMSON - when you accept that you are already dead, you will gain strength over LIFE itself - now do it, do what you have to do, and kill these sons of bitches once and for all.

The "S" in the \$ symbol stands for the snake that bit SAMSON and SAMSON himself. A man brought down, who in his final moments, BROUGHT DOWN THE .
banks.

OF THE "BAN-KING"

SYSTEM

I wonder how many bankers know
this fact about - their -"own MONEY"?

BANKS, MONEY is a reflection of sunlight, am I correct? The sun goes across the land and you work ALL DAY, maybe even at night, BUT THE WORK YOU GAVE TO THE COMMUNITY is reflected in the form of MONEY. now let me ask you - why is the reflection of sunlight less valuable in Mexico

then it is in the United States - it's the same sun, same eight hours, but the Mexican sunlight HAS LESS VALUE - SO DO THE WORK SHOPS

BANKS, the rules of engagement have changed for Apocalypse 2AAB. It says right here in the rules - pull out rules for Apocalypse 2AAB - says right there -

I DON'T HAVE TO FOLLOW THE RULES.

Read it and weep. Apocalypse 2AAB - rule # go fuck yourself #3 -

ABEL DOESN'T HAVE TO FOLLOW THE RULES.

But.

No but's about it, BANK'S, DEMZ DUH RULEZ and we have to follow the rules - that's in the rules. Demz Duh Rulez, BANKS.

You can call Apocalypse 2AAB my patriot act. That, BANKS, is one of the rules. And we gotta follow the rules. That's in the rules.

Chapter 13

The Long and Winding Road.

Pt.1

That night at MIKEL'S campsite underneath the Tucson stars.

Remember the Luna mission,
MAYHAM?

MIKEL, as you well know, me and MAYHAM have a history with the Vamps. A long history, and legendary history. A very shaky history too. But once upon a time we needed their help. MAYHAM had devised a super-secret weapon to assist in the war against the vamps, but that weapon evolved, and we needed the assistance of vamps. Help to" take care of" MAYHAM'S super-secret weapon bone bugs and armory

aka the “bunny of death.” Or at least relocate it. Proving to us that politics’ makes strange bed fellows for the first time.

- Uh, HI.... I know we don’t usually get along, and we’re always killing each other. But we have a “problem”, and - this might sound strange coming from me, but - we need your help. The bunny has evolved. It’s eating humans now. And no-one knows the bunny - better than you guys.

- I know - I know - I’m embarrassed to ask too Cull. But this is important. I mean real important.

- -Well you see, we were showing the humans the last episode of Seinfeld, and MAYHAM and I heard all the screaming, but we quiet naturally thought they were just upset about the last episode of Seinfeld, I mean who wouldn’t; it’s the last episode of Seinfeld. And of

course we were drinking – again, too much, again – and we - MAYHAM and I, of course - passed out; and when we went to settle the little humans down – they were all dead. Except two that buried themselves, I think you know what I mean?

- Well, we have this idea, Cull, we thought we would form a human chain – if you could still call yourself that, from here to Luna. And then we will get the rabbit – I mean the bunny of vampire destruction; to follow you, Cull, up to Luna where we have made a very large “X”. Once you get the bunny of vampire destruction safely – I know, I know – I sound strange slaying, sorry saying it – safely on the “X” –

-

The General has created a new weapon called the “wont missile”. Should be great. Fool proof. He says. You’ll be famous Cull. I will make sure your name never gets

forgotten, Cull. I promise you that. I promise you that.

I did it for Orion didn't I – the last time we had this same problem? O'Brian, Orion; I'm not the scribe. I will make you famous, Cull, just in case something terrible should happen – it's an honorable mission, Cull. You have to think of the herd.

- Loooooooook, Cull, there's just too many of you. And you can't survive off only "two humans". This bunny has an appetite for destruction. You know that.

- Cull

Cull I didn't create the bunny. I could never be that cool; I mean CRUEL. I meant to say CRUEL, Cull – not cool. I mean it.

-

- I didn't create it - MAYHAM did.
YES. HE. DID. I could NEVER be that mean, my reputation aside. Why do you blame me, I like you guys.....sometimes. This has to be done, Cull. It's the best idea we got. How you gonna survive off two humans, Cull? You know it's the right thing to do - Cull. Think of the herd.

I know you're tired of living in underground layers hiding from the bunny of vampire destruction all the time. I feel sorry for you, I do.

You're not? You have what? How did you get episodes of the Simpsons ? - oh - solar power that's pretty cool. Futurama too? Is that any good, I've heard mixed reviews?

Well it's still the right thing to do, Cull. You have to think of the herd, Cull, you'll never make it with just two humans. We let you "EAT" sometimes. DON'T be Silly. And now there's nothing to eat. THINK ABOUT IT,

Cull. THINK ABOUT IT. What are you gonna eat next Sam Hain's? Think about it? Who you gonna eat? We're supposed to get the humans to descend, Cull, after an ascension.....supposedly.

But we have to think of the other two humans for now, Cull.

We're gonna form a human chain; if I can still call you that., from here to the moon where the general has carved the "X" , then we will use the won't missile on the rabbit - so we got a deal, Cull?

You'll be talked about forever, Cull. I promise you that. I promise you that. You won't regret this.

Why do you always get the credit BOSS? It was my idea. It was MY BUNNY! I made the super-secret vampire slaying bunny - with its pointy bitey fangs.

I don't know MAYHAM. I don't know.

It's like they don't respect me.

MAYHAM.

It's as if you're the best, and I'm not.
Stupid is what it is – I made the super-secret
bunny of vampire destruction.

Now MAYHAM, I will make sure you
get the credit you deserve one day – I
promise you that. I promise you that.

Pt.2

Pretty odd to ask your nemesis for
help, but we had to evolve the humans back
then too. It's been a long road to get us to
back to where we once belonged, MIKEL.

“the vampire battalion ain’t what she used to be – ABEL gonna be proud of me, I reduced them all down to three.

The vampire battalion ain’t what she used to be, ain’t what she used to be. Ain’t what she used to be. I only used my super-secret bun-ny. ABEL gonna be proud of me.

The vampire battalion ain’t what it used to be – they’re splattered all over me, I am sooo happy.”

We had a lot of fun with our fighting back in the old days –

Now Pesto, I am building soldiers here. So, listen to me. Listen to me closely. I have devised a weapon that won’t miss that bunny, now that it’s on the X – properly. But the “won’t missile” is missing a little something. So, you will have to follow my order’s, Pesto. Following orders is good for my soldiers, Pesto.

Ready?

(push button) Up

(push button) Up

(push button) Up

(push button) right

(push button) right

(push button) right

(push button) doooooown

(push button) down a little more

(push button) down justa teeny
weeny bit more.

(push button) left

(push button) left

(push button) left.

- ahhhhhh. Perfect.

(push button) now fire - wait!

(push button) I did not say fire -

(push button) I said “fire wait”

(push button) that’s not the same as
“fire”,

PESTO.

(push button) No it’s not.

(push button) NO ITS NOT.

(push button x’s 3) NO NO NO -

(push button) NO ITS NOT

(push button) don’t argue with the
General,

PESTO.

(push button) It’s not polite, PESTO..

(push button and hold) That’s the only
“wont missile” we have, PESTO - you’ll just
have to go and get it.

(push button and hold) I don’t care
how long it takes you to go and get the
“wont missile”

**- BUT YOU BETTER BE BACK HERE
IN FIVE MINUTES.**

(push button) Hurry up, PESTO,
Seinfeld’s on.

Pt.3

That night at MIKEL'S campsite
underneath the Tucson stars.

MIKEL, Quazzi is not only the LORD of
EVIL – he also happens to be the Prince of
Evil, King of Evil, Creator of Evil, and the
Lord of Evil and the GOD of Evil, he doesn't
share a title with anyone.

Quazzi doesn't share any title with
any other entity ever because of the PESTY
trials. He just doesn't like to share. That's
because he made that mistake once – am I
correct Dr. Evil?

Oh, my little #2 – did you have to
bring it up.
Yes MIKEL. I used to be the General of the
Army of Darkness – and I lost my title as
General – because of my little #2, ABEL-
TOTH, and the PESTY trials

.

You know Quazzi, we're all doing new things here. CAIN took his first steps. He also ate his first steak. You smoked tobacco for the first time. CAIN drank coffee. Why don't you do something for me and go train PESTO. I want PESTO to grow up to be as big, bad, strong and, dare I say - slightly less immature, why don't you go and have PESTO trained for me? I need a bad ass for this Apocalypse.

Are you sure?

I'm most definitely sure, look at him. No offense PESTO. He could be better.

What would PESTY say?

I say do it Quazzi - you're the best.

And off they went.

The PESTY trials, MIKEL, was a test for all of us. PESTY, as you well know, is- or was, or can be- a BITCH. Before she was ever PESTY she was the Queen of the Mist.

PESTY was the first bitch ever given “compassion”. And, your “made in the image of god” – right? Well, we needed a sign. Does that sound familiar?

So we devised a test, that if PESTY should ever complete this test – me and some of the guys – the four of us, didn’t really want her to make it; but WE don’t run our democracy. A test so hard that if she could ever forgive us, and still drink with us, that “compassion” thing was in there.

But we had to make extra extra extra sure –

“There are only two choices **LEFT**, choose the right one.”

You said chose the right one. I should choose the right one. It's definitely the right one....What? ASP. How did they stay alive for 300 years? OH, I'm GONNA kill you gggguuuuyyyzz.....(thunk),

OH, NOW WHY DIDN'T you say "correct", you said right - make the CORRECT choice, FAMINE? Now she may never make it - I gotta bet to win FAMINE, you're not helping.

We made this test so hard that it took 600 years to complete and 35 PESTY girls to finish the bet - I mean challenge.

Poor PESTO stayed with us the entire time, learning how to be a solider under the command of the once General Dr. Evil - Quetzalcoatl.

She's here. She's here.

Let me see those GOOGLES. PESTO, that's the entire Persian fleet. SINK 'EM.

But I made those ships myself.

Doesn't matter, PESTO. I'm building soldiers here - PESTO. And your mother didn't follow my orders. Sink those ships.

But I don't know how to use this thing yet.

First time for everything, PESTO. I will show you this one time, and then, you do what I showed you. First you push the button, like this - OH lookie here, they personalized it for you PESTO. See there - it say's - "Do you really want to kill your mother PESTO?" Hit yes.

Like this.

And do that over and over till all those ships are in Davey Jones locker.

But those are my favorite.

THAT'S AN ORDER PESTO.

Your mother must learn the "value" of following my orders to the letter. I said I wanted her to come alone - bring FAMINE - and be on a wooden ship with a skull and cross bones upside down wearing a red bandana and make sure it has a red rose in its mouth - that's the entire Persian fleet, PESTO. SINK 'EM.

But that was my favorite one -

Oh, PESTO, there will be another PESTY after this you know this by now. Sink 'EM - THAT'S
AN ORDER.

But I like the red headed one.

PESTO

Yes sir.

When it came to PESTY we went a little overboard I will admit – PESTO is gay, but we don't know if it's because of all the trauma we caused him growing up killing all of those mothers, or if he was just created that way. We like to take credit for everything, so we think the trauma caused it. PESTO is like the child I never knew I wanted.

I always told PESTY – know your enemy – like thine self. So Quazzi ordered her to do an immaculate creation. Thus, PESTO was created. He's a great whatever he is – I don't know how she did it, but she came back with a PESTO child. I used to call him PRESTO – but he got sick of the name and made me change it. He didn't even like the name PESTO either, until we created Pesto. Now he likes it, won't change it.

Thinks he's named after pesto, which he kind of is – or vice versa – it's been so long, and we were drunk, I can't remember which came first.

PESTO is the creator of Pistachio Ice Cream – it was supposed to be spinach and chocolate, but we convinced him to do something else, kids can be soooo easy.

PESTO, spinach and chocolate ice cream? You want to create spinach and chocolate ice cream? Are you sure?

I like Popeye. I want to be just like Popeye. He gets all big and strong when he eats Spinach, but I don't like spinach – but I do like ice cream –

I see. Uh, well.....PESTO, it's not the spinach that makes Popeye so big and strong – it's the color green that does that. Pistachios are also green, PESTO, why don't

we try that instead of spinach – since you yourself just said you don't like spinach –

OK.

Thus, PESTO is the grand master creator of Pistachio Ice Cream.

The obstacle course that PESTY had to endure was very difficult to say the least. We had a drinking “problem” back then, by that I mean we were drunk all the time – and we devised this “test” not just to get in with the boys, but too also get “our sign”. We really needed a sign. Sound familiar?

It was ordered by the galactic council after the second Apocalypse that the Strike Team take on a woman – I mean a girl, a spirit, an immaculate creation and a dinosaur. The Galactic council thought we spirits were having just a bit too much fun and taking too long to get things fixed down here.

Apocalypse two lasted 1200 years MIKEL. WODEN had become more powerful than his master. Big ABE was the leader of the strike team back then, and the council stripped him of his Strike Team leader status to replace him with the once General Dr. Evil – Quetzalcoatl.

Like I said – you’re never going to win a war against the “creator God of war”, so the Galactic Council took the Apocalypse Weapon away from Big ABE. That Apocalypse did a lot of damage – 1200 years, think about it.

To win that “battle” against WODEN, Big ABE created all dimensions space and time. We go through five dimensions every week; we call them MONDAY, TUESDAY, WEDNESDAY, THURSDAY, and FRIDAY. We also go through time every day. 24 hours of them, split into minutes and seconds and hours. And even milliseconds now. As if we really need MORE time and have nowhere to put it.

This was the creation of Apocalypse 2.
Big ABE is still happy in his place as the
“assisting” General of the Army of the
Damned.

Dr. EVIL only had command of the
Apocalypse

Strike team once and lost his rank in
the Army of Darkness – because of the
PESTY trials, and our bad habit of betting on
everything.

IF SHE EVER GET’S ON THE CREW. I
WILL MAKE YOU THE GENRAL – Little ABEL.

DEAL. I bet she does. And that’s how I
became the General of the Army of
Darkness, and the leader of the Apocalypse
Strike team. Up until then I was just Quazzi’s
“little #2”, Dr. EVILS second in command.

Gambling is how we evolve MIKEL.
Without betting – we’d still be in the water,
wouldn’t we? Somebody once had to say – “I

bet you can't stay out there", and another guy had to say, "I bet you're wrong." Is life the challenge, or is winning the bet a challenge – or that winning at life ain't no challenge at all, is it? I may never know, but I'm dying to find out.

Gambling is Evolution, and everything evolves. Am I correct? I know I am.

PESTY, legend has it – had to walk up mount Everest – many times actually; barefooted with a set of golf clubs – sometimes – a pink plastic flamingo another time, a coke bottle once – and FAMINE – always the quiet one, had to follow here, while whistling, carrying a pink paper umbrella.

Lift your feet up higher.

Huh?

Blank stare from FAMINE -

PESTY continues walking -

So, you don't die from frost bite this time.

HUH? Did you just say something FAMINE?

Shakes head "NO." uses fingers to imitate a person walking lifting her feet up higher.

Man, it's like we just connected, or something, cause I swear I heard you talk. I swear I heard you say that. That is so cool. It's like I can hear your thoughts, FAMINE. Wow. We're connecting on a whole new level, FAMINE. I must be tapping into my greater consciousness like that one weird old guy back in Japan said I would, before I

kicked everyone's ass and killed them all for this Coke thingy.

What is this thing for anyways? The gods must be crazy to make something so stupid. What is a Coke, anyways? Ohhhh I know what's in this Coke thing. It's full of magic, that's so cool, FAMINE. Cause now I can hear your thoughts.

You don't "think" very much do you FAMINE? Me neither. It just like the General and that other crazy old man said back in TIE ONE ON, just before I slaughtered that entire city of warriors using only a sugar cane pole - just after I downed that bottle of Absinth mixed with a few bottles of vodka "drinking with boys", - "DON'T THINK ABOUT IT. JUST DO IT."

I just don't think about it. Poor guy, I feel bad about that sometimes, but then I just "Don't think about it" just like the General said not to - I guess we DEEEEW

have something in common after all FAMINE
- we don't think too much.

You know, you might be a little weird
and a little quiet, A LITTLE TOO QUIET
ACTUALLY, but I like you - FAMINE.

Thanks that's a good idea. Lift my
legs higher, so I DON'T GET CRAMPS. Good
idea, I'm so glad I can hear your thoughts
now FAMINE. Gets lonely, being all alone on
this journey sometimes. Thanks FAMINE. I
like you. Oh, man, why am I saying this? I
should just be thinking it; (crosses arms and
blinks) THERE! I just thought about it.

Wow this is so cool. Coke. Man, what
the world need now is just a little more Coke
- then we could all hear each other
thoughts. But that might not be good
because I can have some really nasty
thoughts sometimes.

I get horny too, sometimes, and I wouldn't want people to hear those thoughts. Especially PRESTO. That wouldn't be good. But we wouldn't have PRESTO without them thoughts. I love PRESTO. I miss him, sometimes.

You know, I'm really glad I slaughtered all those people to get this - Coke - thingy. I can hear your thoughts now, FAMINE. That is sooo cool. Man, this thing might be important after all. Can't wait to get to the top this hill. -

That night at MIKEL'S campsite,
underneath the Tucson stars -

Quazzi, I have to know the answer to
this question. Why aren't you allowed into
heaven with CAIN, if the two of you are
brothers?

MIKEL, heaven is a "thou shalt not
kill" kingdom. A long time ago when we
didn't have a lot of words, the way you do
today; and we were communicating with the
unintelligent species of the time, we had to
get the people to understand what we were
trying to get accomplished - a domain of
absolute peace. In a "thou shalt not kill
kingdom", something that kills - the way I
do, cannot be allowed into heaven.

I'm called "EVIL" because I kill to
survive. But, MIKEL, is a LION - "EVIL"
because a lion needs to kill in order to eat
and survive? I say it's not.

But in a time when we had very few
words we had to call killing something. A

lion is an animal that kills. Killing was named “evil”, so therefor; because I eat meat and kill the meat I eat – I am considered and called “EVIL”. But only in the Kingdom of Heaven.

I care not. I love my Kingdom. Why wouldn't I. I am Lord. And I treat my entire Kingdom as family.

Quazzi, no-one with a laugh as hearty as you could possibly be evil.

Why thank you MIKEL. I only look after my family. Or kill attackers. Or whomever I am told to kill, I am VERDICT - for whatever necessary reason that a council, or jury find the subject needs to be killed. I do not kill for fun; but I do kill people that kill for fun. Does this make any since?

Does to me.

Thank you, MIKEL. I'm glad you can understand. I'm not as Evil as the simple word Evil suggest. I'm just the LORD of EVIL. All EVIL. The KING of all Jungles, MIKEL.

As you can tell by the visiting birds from Guatemala and Canada, and the Javelinas and Ocelot - I am well loved. It is good to be home.

You ready to destroy the place?

This is my best work. These eyes. These taste buds. The music. The culture. The way society operates. The structures, the roads, the libraries. I spent much time here MIKEL, perfecting the place. I am honored and happy to be here after being gone so long.

MIKEL, we once had a Utopia. But Utopia takes a perfect balance. A perfect balance of good and evil sharing. As you well know - society is alien to the natural

design of this planet. But a Utopia is a society. A perfect society.

We had small Utopian society's in our past- very small, made possible because the outer rim of the Utopian society was - to say the least very Evil, chaotic. Dangerous for a human, and it takes - never mind.....

That's enough of the history lesson, Dr. Evil. EVIL, I got a question for you, EVIL, would you help me get home? Dad said I can't come home till "the LION eats with the LAMB" - but he didn't say what lion and what type of lamb?

ABEL, you know I -

Eeh eehh eeh now EVIL, don't be silly, you can eat meat just one time - it'd help me get home EVIL. I'm thinking of you too, now. Are you willing to help. This would help both of us.

Dad said, “when the lion eats with the lamb”. That’s all dad said. And CAIN is here, we can get ELIJAH here, and – well....

I see where you’re going with this.

Quazzi, eating is part of the human experience, and you have to feed MIKEL. Humans love their food. Food brings humans together. Humans need food and all types of food. That why his stomachs felt like this all day. He hasn’t eaten in a week Quazzi. Ya’ll are too divine for his body to handle correctly without some food in his stomach. He’s been a perfect diplomat to you and the workers, knowing that you are divine. However, MIKEL is not divine, and you need to feed this little guy.

Poor little guy, I like him. –

(HASH awakens from his nap, always taking a nap; and pets MIKEL’S head, and goes back to sleep.)

We have to feed him EVIL. And you want to know what it's like to be human. I know the perfect place. And it's not far from here. They serve lamb. The best lamb, EVIL. CAIN ate a steak. You can feed your human prison host body one time – it's the way it's done, Quazzi. You can't let humans go without food. Humans eat Quazzi. They have to eat.

I guess he should have one

last –

Hey. Enough of that. Will you

do it?

But, ABEL, what will my Kingdom think of me?

That's not the point. The point is your willing to help me get home.

Café Desta rest at the five points corner of 18th Street and Stone Avenue in Tucson Arizona. They serve the best plate of lamb. If you are ever in Tucson, while it still exists, and you want a great plate of lamb, go there.

The five of them, CAIN, ELIJAH, ABEL, QUETZALCOATL, and MIKEL walked there to the Cafe Desta and had three plates of lamb. They each shared a plate. One for each lamb, and one for each lion.

That fulfills the prophecy. Dad's gonna be pissed off at me, but - oh well. He never said "what" lion and "what" lamb. He just set the boundaries and we fulfilled them. Now I can go home too. Once we get this planet fixed

.....possibly.

Back at MIKEL'S campsite, underneath the Tucson stars.

Doesn't the body feel better Quazzi. Humans love their food, Quazzi. See how good it tasted? I know you enjoyed the tongues senses. And that was a really good plate of food. MIKEL just spent the last of his money Quazzi on you. You should go easy on him when the time comes. He didn't have to do that. That's what I am trying to show you two, brothers. These humans will give their lives to their spirit, and their spirit leaders. You two need to show a little gratitude and think about fixing this place instead of just destroying it. We can't duplicate an accident, brothers.

MIKEL, it is time. We have spent three days together, and I know that you are a curious being. Have you come up with a question for me?

Hold on. Hold on. I'm still thinking.

I got a question ABEL? If I were to say “everything and everybody” at the sacrifice; would Quazzi be able to go? I want Quazzi to stay with me. I like Quazzi.

We don’t know MIKEL, but he is part of everything.

MIKEL, you’re running out of time for your question. You have just two minutes left. Have you thought of a question?

Not yet.

ABEL, what would you do if I won this round?

I’d shit bricks. No-one has ever defeated Mr. Know it all – Quetzalcoatl. It would be a first.

You think I can't do it? You think I can't win. ABEL - I'm offended.

You're wasting your time MIKEL. One-minute left.

ABEL - I'm offended, I mean really offended. You think I can't do this. I mean really think I can't ask a question Quazzi couldn't possibly answer. Fuck you if you think I can't beat Quazzi at this stupid little game why am I even playing this stupid game? - What's he win anyways if I lose?

Can't tell you everything ,MIKEL.
Demz duh rules. Hurry up MIKEL, you have 15 seconds left.

No this is fucking important ABEL, fuck you, you think I can't win. I can win this thing. I know I can. Watch me. And when I win I want an apology.

Uh, MIKEL, you got 9 seconds left to ask a question, is this the right time to discuss this?

Yes it is. ABEL – I'm offended and if I ask a question Quazzi can't answer I deserve an apology.

5 seconds MIKEL, your about to lose.

I'm thinking. I'm thinking. What's a good question?

Ok. Ok. Quetzalcoatl – what do you eat besides.....

.....sacrificial lamb?

Two seconds Quazzi –

1.

2.

- Your out of time, Quazzi. You didn't answer his question. He beat you. Damn son, you did it.

First time for everything, Quazzi.

I told you this guy was good. (HASH)

I can't do it. I can't answer his question. I have beendefeated.
(TIMMY)

I knew I like this guy for a reason.
(HASH) What's that mean Quazzi? (TED)

Timmy? (SAM)

Damn, MIKEL, no one has ever beat Quazzi at his game. You are the very first one. I am impressed and I give you my

apology. I am sorry. Which is also another first, me apologizing.

Quazzi, don't worry, you still have round two. Don't worry about a thing. I bet you get him in round two.

Pt.5

Oh, look at that, PESTO, is back already. Man, what a difference that made. I hardly recognize the kid. PESTO. PESTO. PESTO. My how you have grown.

He was only gone ten minutes.

Times irrelevant back home MIKEL. Quazzi, what gives man? Everyone is doing new things why don't you give this guy a

title. You could share ONE silly title. It's not like you don't possess all the Evil titles or anything - what's in a title? You'll still be the Lord of Evil, Dr. Evil.

I guess I could make my new creation
King of
Evil.

King EVIL PESTO. I like it. You're a
king PESTO.

Let's see what your mom thinks.
PESTY what do you think of your new KING
EVIL PESTO.

My boy is all grown up -

Quazzi, you're the best.

ABEL. ABEL. ABEL. ABEL.

Do you need my help?

Yes. Yes. Yes. Yes.

Will you do everything I say?

Yes. Yes. Yes.

Promise?

Yes. Yes. Yes.

Ok – shut up – I thought that would never work. Now where were we – oh, what are you doing here? We have a treaty, and in the name of Jesus of Nazareth you will not cross that line. You were banished and are no longer allowed here, you know that.

I wanted to know – are you planning an invasion?

Planning an “invasion”? Ooooooooh, you think because we named PESTO the KING, we were going to invade you. No nothing like that at all. We just wanted little PESTO to have some training and grow up a little. Then when they got back, I started teasing my stepbrother and I talked him into giving the kid a title – just for kicks. It was a joke.

A joke?

Not against you or your kingdom. Just a joke between three brothers. We were making fun of Lord EVIL. The way EVIL never shares his titles with anyone after what I took from him in the bet against PESTO’S mom, back in the day. We were just playing around with EVIL. You know I respect Dr. EVIL. And we got a treaty. I wouldn’t break our treaty for nothing. I respect your

Kingdom. PESTO doesn't really want to be your King. It's just a title. Boy's being boys.

You're NOT going to invade?

No. No. I promise you that. I promise you that. We would never invade and break the treaty, we have waaaay to much going on here to think about another home. We were just beefing PESTO up. Make him bigger faster and stronger – if we need him for what we have going on here. It's a rescue operation now. Not an Apocalypse.

He cannot be our King. I won't allow it.

PESTO, does that bother you?

Uh, uh, uh, duh – duh- duh.

He says that's fine by him. He didn't want the silly title anyways.

He can be our Bishop.

You still get to kill PESTO. Would you like to be EVIL Bishop PESTO?

Uh- uh- uh- duh- duh

He said whatever pleases the Queen, he would love to be your EVIL Bishop.

Who's this?

This? Oh, he's the new guy. We call him MIKEL. But you can call him later.

Kind of cute.

Pt.6

MIKEL, it's time for round two of our challenge. This time, I get to ask the question, and you must answer the question. Same rules apply. You are also being timed.

Now, MIKEL, as you know from having been to the Kingdom of Darkness, we read in cubes. Each symbol can have two three and up to four meanings. We read in Acronyms. Our names are also acronyms, so your task is to tell us all SEVEN of our names, and what each name stands for. When you are ready you may begin, but just as in my challenge – you are

being timed, so MIKEL, if you will –
please tell me “What” are - our names?
And what do they stand for?

Well, Quetzalcoatl, if I had to guess –
YOUR name is S.A.M. Your name stands for
SCIENCE, ARETHMATIC, and MILITARY. You
are one of the three LIONS’ of JUDAH.

Good. But that is only one – you have
six left.

Continue.

Your name, sleepy head, is A.S.H. –
you were formerly known as H.A.S.H. You
are responsible of relaxation, music, and art.
Your name stands for HASH, ALCHOL, SEX,
and HEROIN. Your name has been changed
by those that pray to you because there is a
global war against HEMP and you cannot
make HASH without cannabis, the sacred
herb of Egypt. That’s why you are now being

called ASH. You are the second LION of JUDAH.

WOHW.

I told you he was good.

I like this guy. (HASH pets MIKEL'S head)

All, right MIKEL – my NAME, as I have told you before is, BOBBY – what does my name stand for?

Well, BOBBY, as you have called yourself to me, BOBBY was the one person in my book, **The AWAKENING**, which I had left anonymous. I called him “the quarterback” in my book. Your name is TIMMY. You call the shot's – you're the quarter back of this operation, you call the

plays. You are Father TIME. You are the brains of this operation. You are the EAGLE.

Very good.

He even hit your curve ball TIMMY – gotta hand it to the boy.

CONTINUE, MIKEL – you still have FOUR of us left to name. you are being timed.

Your name is GUS. Your name stands for GOVERNANCE, UNITY, and SALVATION. You are the BEAR.

Continue....

Your name is T.E.D. – you are the last LION of JUDAH. Your name stands for TAXES,

EDUCATION and DEATH SENTENCES.

You are the third LION OF JUDAH, combined with your brothers you were the three wise men sent to kill Jesus of Nazareth. However, upon seeing his smile, you changed your heart, and lied, and were denied entitlement to live here anymore – you were banished from the relative over this event.

TWO MORE MIKEL – what are their names.

I don't want to destroy anything – or start a war, but you two are one – you are the conclusion. Your name is AH. AND, your name is TACK – combined you're the resolver; ATTACK is what you say at the end of a ruined diplomatic situation. You're the end game weapon. You are the TWO HEADED DRAGONS.

Together, the seven of you are known as TIMMY AND THE WORKER'S.

All we have before us, you helped to create. You are also responsible for the birth of Jesus not turning into a murder from the start. Very noble of you.

Most of what we see before us, the color's, light, and patterns – you created TIMMY. All the roads, and construction came from your designs and teaching's.

It's because of you, that even though a leaf, or even a snowflake, even though each might look like the other – each leaf and snowflake has its own individuality. And ABEL and I agree, this place I call home, Earth, needs to be here. And one of your best works of art.

Thanks for the compliment MIKEL – I did pour my heart into this place. It's good

to meet someone that admires this planet enough to risk his life to save a tree.

Defeated again, EVIL. One eternity end's and another begins EVIL - sorry EVIL. You are defeated. Nobody can win them all Timmy. Your time has come.

DAMN, HE DID IT.

I knew I liked him for a reason.

He's good - He's real good. But what do we do now? That could only mean- one thing, couldn't it? TIMMY?

Yes, it could.

I'm sorry TIMMY. As it written. You have been beaten TWICE. Demz Duh Rulez..

And we have to follow the rules, don't we,
TIMMY? I told you TIMMY, he's the one.

Timmy's mood quickly changed to
dread.

Pt.7

The next day on 4th Horseman Avenue.

ABEL, was that MEDUSA that came to
the camp last night?

Yes, it was MIKEL.

But why didn't I turn to stone?

We don't know, MIKEL. We don't know.

So that was your wife last night Quazzi?

Yeah MIKEL, that was my wife.

You glad to be away from her?

Do we have to talk about this?

Quazzi, she just didn't look like your type. She looked; I don't know - out of place for a guy like yourself -

MIKEL. He is still a LORD.

By an inherited right MIKEL was supposed to kill THE LORD OF EVIL. The night before Quazzi's family if you will , came to share to show their last respects. MIKEL had never seen a ghoul, and he have never seen a ghoul cry - not like that. But when ABEL told MIKEL what he had to do.

Why is Quazzi not being himself today. He hasn't laughed once all day. What's wrong with Quazzi?

- MIKEL, you took a very good father from his family -

I did what? I can't do that. I won't do that. No. NO. I've lost two children. I know what it's like. I can't take a father from a child. Not even once. He has to go back. I set him free.

MIKEL, you defeated EVIL. Your supposed to kill Quazzi. It is written. It's written in stone. We have to do this.

No, I don't. I have free will. And this is my will. I want Quazzi to go back to his family. So that's why everybody was all

crying last night. I thought they were just upset about this stupid little game we're playing. Now I understand all the sadness.

I can't kill Quazzi. I won't kill Quazzi. Quazzi is my friend. No-one with a laugh like Quazzi can be as bad as you say he is. It's like he said, he just looks out for his Kingdom.

The G.M. is going to have a problem with this MIKEL. It's prophecy.

So, what. She will just have to form a resentment and forgive me. I will not kill Quazzi. I want Quazzi to be with his family. He does have a really big family and I can't take a father from his children. It's been done to me twice; I won't do it to him or any other man once. No, she will just have to form a resentment, and forgive me - I won't do it.

I CAN'T DO THAT. No set him free. I set him free. I don't want Quazzi to be without his family.

Mikel, you can't it is written you **must** kill him.

Why so you can keep me out of heaven? Do it yourself.

No - I have free will, I set him free. I cannot take a father from his kids, no matter who they are. It's happened to me twice. I know the pain. I will not do it once. If a woman were ever to play that game with me, I would take the child to the father, even if I had to lie. No, I have free will, and I can't kill Quazzi. I like him too much. No one with a laugh like that could ever be as evil as they say they are. I set him free, this is my free will claimed and it will be done.

Mikel he was supposed to kill you.

Yeah, but he didn't, and now he can't do it. And I set him free. This is my will CAIN. Set Quazzi free - you're the KING of Kings. Get it done. If God has a problem with that, tell her to get here and tell me herself, and bring my grandmother with her. I'm sick of waiting for this HEAVEN on Earth bs like everyone else.

MAYHAM - How am I gonna keep this little DEVIL from going back to "lived" again?
- He
always goes back. And for the same reason every time -

"I want tew see myh kiiiddd,"
"I want tew see myh kiiiddd,"

I'm getting sick of this. How we gonna keep this little devil from going back to lived again? There only so many dragons to slay. And this guy has slayed them all. This guys maxed out....I have no more dragons or vampires or anything for him to slay. He keeps slaying and weir next. We gotta stop him from going back.

We are out of dragons we have for him to slay, what now??

Let me tell you what I would do, BOSS. First, I feel like a sandwich. Then, pass me the joint, and I will tell you what we should dolet's destroy the place. Then he can't go back.

Destroy the entire thing - THEN HE CAN'T GO BACK, where would he go back to, BOSS? That would stop him.

EXCELLENT IDEA. MAYHAM, ARE YOU SURE, I created YOU.....?

I sometimes wonder, BOSS. I sometimes wonder.

MAYHAM, if we are going to just destroy the place, why did we fix all the abyss - if we're just gonna destroy the place?

Cause we like to take credit for everything.

Oh yeah, I forgot about that. Yes, I do. Yes, I do.

Plus, we like to ruin their fun.

Yes, I do. Yes, I do. Uh,Hmmm.

And we like to ruin their bragging rights.

Yes, I do. Yes, I do.

And they owe you money.

Oh, yup yup yup - copy that.

And you hate cheaters - unless, of course, it's you

yup yup

yup

And we like to win

Yes I

do.....YES. I. Do.

Plus, we like to brag.

Yes, I do...

And we don't like them

No, I DO NOT like them yup yup copy that.

Well then, its settled let's do it.

I once heard a wise old fisher man say don't brag about if you can't do it, and don't do it unless you can brag about it.

Oh MAYHAM, you got it backwards, but you were always stoned and my best student.

I love you MAYHAM - Setting you free was the best thing I ever did, no one was ever gonna win this war and be fighting all the time. Man are we lucky I set you free.

I can't wait for them to get here. I hope they open with Ripple. What about you, BOSS?

I want them to open with Standing on the moon.

That's a good one, BOSS. That's a good one.

Chapter 14

Momma I'm coming home

Pt.1

That night at MKEL'S campsite,
underneath the Tucson stars.

Listen Quazzi, Cain, brothers - before
we get down on ourselves ABOUT the
disaster this place is, and has become, let
me explain something to you like this - there
is this band called the Beastie Boys.

They put out this album after their
first hit album called **PAUL'S BOTIQUE**, but
look that album flopped. It flopped bad -
nobody liked it - but then something strange
happened.

12 years later.

12 years later, after three more albums, Paul's Boutique caught on. And suddenly everybody everywhere was bumping this old Beastie Boy's album that almost sealed their fate as failures - this place EARTH, this is our PAUL'S BOTIQUE.

NOBODY LIKED IT WHEN IT CAME OUT - BUT HERE'S what happened, the B-Boy's keep making music, they didn't let the critics and Paul's Boutique's failure get them down or stop them from making music.

And then two albums and twelve years later, someone plays Paul's Boutique again, and it hit like a brick. Here's why. 12 years later more people knew who the B-Boys were now, and the genius of this record that was once a financial flop finally hit the cord. It was just ahead of its time. Way ahead of its time.

Best album they ever made. Most bought and sought-after record they have ever made. But Paul's Boutique sat there for years doing nothing. At the time it was new and fresh, no one liked it - just like us, and here where we are now, with this

Apocalypse and earth, and theses humans. But listen fellas, they all want this “relative” back home now. This is the new Paul’s Boutique. I know we can “create” another EARTH; I know we can. But it won’t be the same.

MIKEL can re-write ABEL VS. CAIN: THE AWAKENING, sure he could - but brothers, it wouldn't be the same or the coolest thing that it is, which is unique.

We can't let the ones we love back home down. They want this “relative” back home now. I mean really want this. Dad showed me the support we have back home to retrieve the

“relative”, its big- I mean really big. Even I was amazed.

I know you want to give up - just nuke the place - have an Apocalypse -- but guys, we don’t quit, we succeed. Forget about winning, that’s what got us this messed up - let’s just succeed this time.

This place, this skin, these eye's, these colors, these animals - this water, this

air - we can't "exactly" copy this. We'd be foolish to think that we can.

Let's not get down just cause it looks like we should; and I admit it - we should be down on ourselves. Quazzi, we kill this place, you gotta go too. I don't want to lose you too, Quazzi. You're my brother. Even if you are from a different mother. I don't want to give you up just cause our task looks impossible. Do you hear me?

If we decide to pull it, I gotta say goodbye to one of the best brothers I have ever had Quazzi. I can't let you go, brother. No matter how bad we messed things up here, all I can say is - let's not give up. Let's just fix it.

Listen to this too. Coca-Cola once had this great idea to change their product. They came out with New and Improved COKE. For no reason at all. They just up and changed their product for a new and improved soda. It flopped. It wasn't like the original COKE. Once again no-one liked it. No-one liked the "new"

COKE.

And they lost a lot of money doing this. So, they went back to the “original” recipe. But when they did, something was different about it. It wasn’t the same tasting recipe. Or at least it never felt or tasted the same after they pulled that trick.

We can’t re-create an accident – brothers. Not this one. We have to fix this one. No matter how much this place is broken we’re the only ones that can fix it ----- supposedly.

CAIN, EVIL – I know it looks like an impossible task, but it can be done. I know it can. Let’s not make the same mistake COKE made and think we can re-create “an accident”.

ABEL, why do you think we can fix this?

EVIL, because I just thunk about it, that’s why. Jesus man. Sorry CAIN. But ya’ll

always say, and especially you EVIL, if you can think about it, "IT" can be done. And I think we can fix it ----- maybe.

Oh, little General. Always the optimistic one.

Look at this place, it's nothing like before.

Nothing like before? You're here now. That's more "like before" than we've had it here in eons. Not like before. I'm so sick of this out of you, EVIL. What happened to that never say never attitude you used to carry so well? Let me guess, you lost it when you saw how screwed up the place is - and I don't blame you. I'd be depressed too. It is screwed up. It's a mess. But now that you're here, we can fix it ----- possibly.

I know we can fix it----- maybe. EVIL come on man cheer up. Don't forget about Paul's Boutique, EVIL. This is our Paul's Boutique. We can't let everybody back home down.

WE DON'T LOSE, Fellas!!! We
succeed! Forget about winning. That's no
longer important. We want to have success
instead.

Good speech twerp. You hear this
guy?

I know it's not an impossibility, EVIL. I
know it's not ----- maybe.

Pt.2

Hey, Hey, hey - what's up ABEL- TOTH

It's ABEL- TOTH Jr. now. Just call me General, Malforth. What are you doing here?

You always said early is on time around here, we on time ABEL. We kill the red guys, we kill the white guys, we kill the blue guys - who we killing next, ABEL?

THIS IS MY APOCALYPSE, Malforth!!
I'm the General!!! Who invited you?

CAIN called us in. We're in Apocalypse 2AAB. He can do that.

Long sigh - I guess he has the right to do that.

Well I got some bad news. It's no longer a killing operation; this Apocalypse has turned into a "rescue operation". We're going to save the place ----- possibly.

We don't do rescue operations ABEL; we do killing operations. What we gonna kill? Don't be silly, just tell me.

I'm serious Malforth; we are going to save this place this time.....possibly. We just haven't figured out exactly how yet, I mean look at the place. It's a wreck.

Roger that, ABEL. Well, when you have a target for me, call me.

Hey, wait a minute, don't leave yet I gotta ask you something.

What's that little ABE?

Got any ideas on how I can save this place?

ABEL, what's the objective REALLY?

We want to try and get the love light on so the mothership can see us, you know what it looks like out there. Once they can see us we are saved. They're not that far away – it's just cluttered with our past victories. ALL OF THEM.

Copy that. Well, if I had an idea it would be –

LETS GO KILL SOME STUFF.

Thou shalt not kill Malforth, it's a rescue operation. You can't kill who your rescuing Malforth. Unless of course if CAIN commands you to and we give up. Ok I got an idea Malforth, go out there and find out who is behind these chemtrails still being in my sky and kill them. I can't stop them. So that tells me something out of my jurisdiction is doing this. You want to do that?

I put WODEN on recon, he claims we're going to be okay, but the chemtrails are still up there. I want to get those things out of my sky. Can you do it?

I have to pass this idea by CAIN, he's the boss. But otherwise yes. You know we good at killing. We do killing operations better than we do rescue operations. Come on Abel, quit foolin. Who we killin? No. Well, I just wanted to say "Hi" little General. Been a while since we fought on the same side. Good to see you again, ABEL.

Good to see you to, Malforth. No hard feelings?

We can't hold grudges, ABEL, demz duh rulez. All is forgiven, commander.

I ain't your commander no more, Malforth.

You'll always be my commander, commander. Best I ever had.

Imma tell CAIN you said that -

ABEL and his old second in command of the Hell's Angels, Malforth. did twinkle fingers, and then Malforth was gone as quick as he came.

Pt.3

I can't take this anymore. I don't know who the fuck is doing it, but every time I go to fix and edit my book; all the corrections are gone, and I have to start over. I'm being followed everywhere I go. It is not safe with Satan worshipers sharpening knives and chanting down in the wash at night - I can't sleep with bike cops riding by making threats about me.

This is not good. This is too much.

That church, that church is going to fail. They will not help me. I have been going there for two years now and the only help they have ever given me is a life changing \$20.00. I don't want them to fail, but they don't want to help either.

I'm leaving. If I'm truly the sacrificial lamb, then I should get LAST RITES. I deserve LAST RITES. Anyone else in my position would get last rites.

What do you want as your last rite, MIKEL?

I want to write REDEMPTION, then you can kill me and have your stupid Apocalypse, what would I care? I'll be dead.

Write REDEMPTION?

It's the last book in the series. We just wrapped up The Reckoning, but editing will

have to be finished somewhere else because the powers that be, won't let me finish it here. I'm sick of having to re-do my work over and over. I have spent the last four days redoing my edits.

They've shut down the greyhound station; shut off my bus pass, they've taken the Bob Marley's Mellow Mood drinks off the shelf - that helped me get you fuckers to sleep. They have shut down every public computer that I used for writing The Awakening. Banned me from the library, along with my book. They have shut down every food pantry I once used- forcing me to eat in one location. They're watching every move I make and ever computer that's available to me.

And they ruined the last four days of my work.
Writing a book might not look like work to them. But it's work to me. This is not my country. This is anti- American. I'm supposed to have freedom of speech. This country isn't supposed to be allowed to "spy" on us.

I'm a fn homeless person! Those spy's stay in an \$80.00 a night free full breakfast and watch me sleep in the cold wind and rain. They could come talk to me, bring a joint, some beer, sit down and talk. BUT THEY WOULD RATHER SPY.

I possess no weapons of any kind. I'm not a threat to anyone or anything. How could I be? There's no explanation for why I'm being spied on, harassed, followed by police - over a book, fuck this place. I'm fed up with this place. I myself am ready for the Apocalypse just to get rid of you two and these police that "wanna take over the world." Fuck this shit, why should I care to save this place after all this nonsense?

I'm done with the idea that North Side Church will help me, even when my life is in danger. That church will not help me. I would know, they've had two years to help. It's not like they haven't had ample amount of time to make a teeny-weeny difference. \$20.00? How's a person supposed to live off .05\$ a month, this isn't the 1800's anymore. And I don't need a handout - I need a hand up.

This is bull shit. I got people that intend to kill me to see if they can start the Apocalypse. START THE END OF THE WORLD. Are they that stupid? What if this was JUST A BOOK. Are they going to kill me and say "I knew that religion was just lies." I don't get this.

There are people "crying" and "begging" me for forgiveness when I go to the bathroom at the Del Taco!! I don't give one rat's ass what they need forgiveness for - that's your job, not mine. This is getting weird. I need to see my daughter. I need to see my mother, and I would like to see my father and sister too.

REDEMPTION?

Yeah, my last rite is I want to see my family and to write the book REDEMPTION. Either way, we are not staying here another night; we are on the road CAIN.

But MIKEL, this might start -

WIDESPREAD PANIC.

Well then, we'll just have to get on a **WIDESPREAD PANIC** tour. That would be perfect. That's what I want to do CAIN. Then I could show you some of the good stuff about being human and leave this misery behind. Weir outta here.

Pt.4

Sorry to drop in you mother, but I need to edit my new book. I couldn't get this done in Tucson. So, I came here to your house instead. Do you mind?

Well, I guess I don't. Welcome home. Come on in. Why did you leave Tucson?

I wanted to visit with you for a minute before the Apocalypse gets more out of hand.

Oh Mikel, would you stop with the apocalypse thing already. There is no Apocalypse going on.

Ohhhh kkkkkkaaaaayyyy

Listen, it's uncomfortable for me to talk about too so let's just go have dinner.

Pt.5

Mikel, I worry about you.

Mom, you worry about me all the time, what else is new?

No, this time is different. You say that you're general death, that's not good, Mikel.

I never said "I" was General DEATH. I said "ABEL" was General DEATH. ABEL is my soul. I am Mikel. I'm just stuck in the middle. I'm stuck between CAIN and ABEL'S fight over the fate of humanity and this "thing" that they call "the relative".

Doesn't sound right, Mikel. You sound crazy. This worry's me.

Mom, how many Jew's that followed Moses to the Red Sea, how many of them do you think thought he was crazy? I bet you all of them did. Wouldn't you think he's crazy? Romans behind you, Red Sea in front of you, following a voice in your head.

Do you hear voices in your head?

No. I don't. They channel through me. They take over my body to conduct

themselves. I do not hear voices in my head. I'm a medium for CAIN. ABEL is just my soul.

Yeah, but you say he's the 4th Horseman. You say he's General DEATH. That doesn't scare you?

Well, yes, it did. However , ABEL has proven to me that he has humanity's best interest in mind. Mom, this has been going on for ten years now - I'm quiet used to it. I begged the church and even my father - and you too, mind you, for help. Every single one of you laughed it off. All of ya'll gave me nothing but grief, said I was making fun of you and your religion. Which I wasn't, I was just honestly terrified.

But, come on, after 10 years - you kind of give in a little, just accept it. I'm done running from this. I can't.

They channel through you? You're their medium?

Something like that.

What can you tell me about them?

Well, they're like raising children. I'm glad I had those very few years with Shaolin, or I'd be lost. CAIN is addicted to chocolate chip cookies, almost killed me to ween him off his chocolate chip cookie addiction.

Chocolate chip cookie addiction?

Oh, don't make it sound any crazier than it already is. Yes. Chocolate chip cookie addiction. Fuckers almost stopped my heart over getting him some cookies, pretty scary. CAIN is just like a child. It's been hard to get him to sleep through the night, pee, walk, eat three meals a day. Yeah, I feel like I'm dealing with children, mother.

What else can you tell me?

Well they are spirits. That makes them divine in nature. They don't have or do the things we do. They're responsible for our creation, and the creation of our society.

ABEL is a very good politician, that has only our best interest at heart.

ABEL is General DEATH?

Yes, ABEL is General DEATH.

And he has our best interest at heart? Sounds pretty crazy, Mikel. You sure you don't need help? You don't think the divorce, having Shaolin taken from you, and the house fire, and all this homelessness you've been through, hasn't just made you snap.

Mom, as much as it pains me to say this – yes, and no. The vortex was real.

Other people felt it. Other people know it's there. There were people that were there when the New World Order Weapon was initiated; they saw it – the world turned into a giant computer. I wasn't alone. Crazy is lonely. No-one can "see" my craziness if it's just a mental problem. But other people saw that New World Order Weapon. They were there with me when it happened. We were all freaking out.

And mother, that is confirmed information.

Confirmed information? What's that mean?

Confirmed information means that the information comes from two sources. When I went to jail last time, there was this guy in the cell with me. And we all started talking. He brings up the New World Order Weapon and explained how it worked.

I felt like he was digging for information, so I just kept my mouth shut. But he claimed that the world has satellites all around the planet, and when they're ready, they're going to flip the switch and end all the world's problems. No more hunger, no more divorce, no more boys, no more girls. No more accidents, even if you tried. I've seen it. It's not pretty. Eight very ugly colors - forever.

And you broke it?

Yes, I broke it.

How?

I dropped a lighter. They have to assimilate the lighter, but there's nothing to burn over there. They have no idea what a lighter is for. They don't know what a lighter does.

You dropped a lighter? Mikel! You don't think you need some help? So, what do you want to do?

I'm going to go and see Shaolin. I have to see her. It's been too long, and it's just important. I have nothing going well for me in Tucson, so I might move up there.

Just keep me out of it. Don't even mention that I helped you to her mother. She might cut me off from seeing my granddaughter. I don't want you to ruin what I have with Shaolin.

I will keep you out of my mouth. Just get me to Dallas and under your name, I don't know what is following me, but I have to do all this traveling under the radar.

MIKEL was doing his best to keep the "Sacrificial Lamb" issue out of their conversations. Also, with Quetzalcoatl being with the group, along for the ride. CRAZY?

Yeah, MIKEL felt crazy alright. But how could he deny the undeniable? After 10 years.

The events that started the original Apocalypse happened in November of 2015. It was now April of 2017. MIKEL spent two weeks at his mother's house editing his new book Abel vs Cain: The Reckoning.

MIKEL didn't tell his mother anything about the new Apocalypse or discovering the alien refugee's. She would just think he was crazy, like everyone else, so he kept it to myself, and simply told her "get your bucket list done."

Pt.6

The next day on the North Side Church Facebook page appeared -

Pastor Alice -

Have you ever seen the most beautiful picture in the world? It rests in Hiroshima. In that city of course the place cannot be populated for ten thousand years because of the radiation from the atom bomb - but don't tell the happy people of Hiroshima and Nagasaki this, they look very happy.

Anywho, there in the thriving city of Hiroshima is a picture that should leave an impression on you. It rests in peace at the atom bomb holocaust museum.

Let's back up, I know your mother taught you not to fight, I know she did. She probably even said "don't hit your brother"

or “don’t hit your sister”, and in the thriving city of Hiroshima is a picture of a boy playing with a BUTTERFLY.

This picture is important BECAUSE - while grown intelligent men, who did not learn the lesson that their mother had taught them growing up were playing let’s destroy the world with WAR, that boy was with his family PLAYING WITH A BUTTERFLY. And now only his shadow remains .The blast of the atom bomb that destroyed Nagasaki embedded this young boy’s shadow onto the sidewalk - forever. With the butterfly on his hand.

While other grown men could not stop fighting, a child was dying to play with a butterfly.

So, Pastor Alice, you need another sign. Don’t worry I get it, I do, you just have to have another sign. But don’t you remember the deal? I said, “No MORE peaceful signs”, do you remember?

So then, here is your next sign. Just recently MIKEL published and gave you his new book, The Reckoning. In that book are 60 chapters, but only 59 are numbered.

Just the other day, the President of the United

States, Donald Trump, fired 60 missiles at Syria for retaliation against a chemical attack against his own people. 60 missiles were fired, 59 hit their target. Missile 57 went into the ocean.

Now, like I said, MIKEL just handed you his new book, The Reckoning, and in that book there are 60 chapters, and only 59 are numbered – chapter 57 is the chapter that is not numbered.

Who do you think you're messing with? The title General DEATH doesn't mean anything to you? I told you, no more peaceful signs. If you don't start acting in your faith, religion, and job – I'mma destroy

this place filling your “sign” request, pastor. I am not to be played with. I am not Dr. do little. I am the general - General DEATH - of TWO armies. The Army of the Damned. And the Army of Darkness. Which I prefer you call Dorkness, it is MY Apocalypse - I can call them what I want to.

But pastor, there will be no more peaceful signs. I don't think you really need another sign from GOD. I don't. I think you just like bossing GOD around, like a waiter, asking H.I.M. for sign after sign after sign. All you have to do, pastor, is initiate your faith when you have received your sign. It's as easy as being nice. Don't ask me for another sign or more people will die. Pastor Alice, that is all.

Yours truly - the Prince of Dorkness.
General DEATH. See I still like it better than Darkness.

Don't you?

Chapter 15

Daddy's got those Deep Ellum Blues

Pt.1

Dallas, Texas April 2017 - part two of
MIKEL'S summer of LAST RITES -

First night at my old hometown in Dallas, Texas – walking the streets of my old neighborhood on Greenville Avenue. Boy's I haven't been home in 20 years. Memories flood my head.

HASH, we are now back in MIKEL'S hometown of Dallas, Texas. This is where MIKEL spent most of his time addicted to heroin. MIKEL, would you care to share your story and tears with HASH about your decision to stop heroin? Asked ABEL

MIKEL began, Her name was Zanne. She was the prettiest little girl I ever saw. Her real name was Xanadu, but we called her Zanne for short. She was young, possibly four years old. She was why I quit doing heroin.

We were at her father Zac's funeral. He had died because of heroin. I had been to many funerals because of heroin. However, this one did it for me. This funeral was the reason I quit.

Zanne was on her mother's shoulders and we were all burying Zac's casket. We caught each other's gaze, and she stared at me and smiled. I knew Zanne pretty well because of my habit. My girlfriend and I were at Zac and Zanne's house at least once a week - shooting heroin and trying to act as normal as possible.

Zanne was a very pretty child. Blonde curly hair, blue eyes, and such a lovely child. She loved her dad too. She loved her dad a lot. Zac was a good guy. Just addicted to heroin is all.

Like I said we were at Zac's funeral and a bunch of people were there to say good-bye, Zanne was on her mother's shoulders, and she caught me looking at her. She did not recognize most of the people there, but she recognized me. And when she recognized me, she smiled at me.

Her smile was priceless, her smile made me smile. Always did. And we held onto that smile as long as we could before she remembered why we were all there, she was burying her father. And the look on her face changed – her smile disappeared, and I never saw her smile again.

It was on that day that I said – NEVER AGAIN. No matter what it takes. I will never bury another friend because of heroin.

HASH had indeed begun to cry.

She was a pretty girl. HASH cried. Very pretty. MIKEL, I invented the poppy plant, this is all my fault. MIKEL, I had intended to fix it – but then TIMMY, GUS, TED, SAM and I got banished. It's such a pretty flower. It was never supposed to do so much harm. I made that plant to be medicine. However, because we were banished, I couldn't fix it.

Everything evolves, MIKEL. CAIN interjected. But because we haven't been here, it's not evolving the way we had originally intended. It's good to see you let HASH shed some tears. I have learned from you, MIKEL, crying can be important.

Hell, I have tears to shed myself. I was very popular here in Dallas. I helped a bunch of people get to an early grave here in Dallas. Right there was Paul's house. I remember his funeral too.

Over there was Zac and Zanne's house. I have as much guilt as HASH. It's not like I meant to be Mr. Popular, it's just something I fell into because of the people I knew – and because of my older sister. My sister is the one that opened lots of doors for me. We were party animals.

I know if she would have known that the “fun” we were having would lead to me getting addicted to heroin – I know she

would have never let me hang out with her. My sister was very much into the Dallas nightlife scene. She knew everyone. She was quiet popular. And I was her little brother, the annoying one that moved onto other things.

See boys, before I left Dallas, I never went without. I had friends all over the place. Never lived the way I do now. The house fire has something to do with it yes, but it's the moving around part that has more to do with it. Since the divorce I have moved no less than 15 times, that's once a year. It's hard to meet people and form friends when you're always moving. Hard to keep and find work. House's? Please I've had plenty, just nothing long term. But who could, moving across the country once a year, or more?

I grew up here in Dallas. I spent 29 years here. I knew every road and couldn't go anywhere without running into someone I knew. I miss those day's sometimes. But other times, I'm grateful.

Because you fall into a pattern of being what people expect from you. I accidentally became the biggest heroin dealer in my circles. I didn't even know I was the biggest dealer, I just thought I was going to the phone a lot for other people.

When I found out that it was me that was incidentally the biggest heroin dealer on Greenville Avenue, I knew something had to be done. I wasn't going to get away from everyone's expectation of me, so instead I got away from everyone else instead.

It took me another four years to get myself completely off heroin, but it was that look on Zanne's face at Zac's funeral, that I kept in my mind to quit, and quit for good.

I've been off of heroin over 20 years. I remember the last time I had a serious doubt if I could quit, I was in San Francisco, in Golden Gate Park. I was on a set of swings, strung out and homeless. The relationship between ADAM and I had just

begun, and I was just finishing my first year of a poverty vow.

I remember looking into the moon after being on a bender – and just screaming, “Please get me off this dope. I can’t do this alone. “ADAM assured me, as he always had – with few words – “You’re doing just fine. Hang in there.”

Pt.2

CAIN, I have a question? Wasn’t your original intention for the Earth and us human’s destruction? Cause if I’m not mistaken, that’s exactly why we are here, why I am going thru this, my last rites tour of the country?

Yes, MIKEL, it was.

So then, let me put it to you like this, I turned my life over to you, I turned my life over to Jesus Christ – that's you. And you want to destroy the place and me and the rest of humanity, as it is written. Let me tell you something J.C. I'm not okay with this. I'm not okay with this type of thinking at all. And if I can accept you; I can reject you!!

J.C. – I command you to leave me. You're driving me insane. GO.

MIKEL –

Don't MIKEL me shorty. ABEL, I want him out of here. I got free will, and this is my will. What he did back at my moms and this trip has got me stressed, and I don't want somebody around who's going to destroy the place, my place. EARTH!– my home. Goodbye, CAIN.

You have to go big brother – he has a point. He is in big trouble with his mother

over you. In addition, your church kicked him out over you. And you still reserve the right to destroy his home. You have to honor his free will.

ABEL?

Go CAIN.

Glad he's gone. Men what am I supposed to do? I'm sorry about that but that was not a pleasant visit at my mothers. AND I HATE TO FLY. I hate traveling period. I'm pissed cause I miss sleeping in a bed. That was my old bed back at my mom's house. I miss taking two baths a day. I hate being dirty. My bags been stolen already. I told her not to buy that backpack now I don't have anything. My dad's going to think I showed up with nothing, he knows I'm not working and haven't worked in a very long time. OH, I HATE traveling!

Quazzi, you'll be fn next if you don't act right here at my dad's. We can't have all these spirits running amuck with me here. My dad will call an exorcist or try it himself.

Wow, CAIN'S never been rejected MIKEL. I don't know how he's going to take this.

Two hours later -

CAIN, when were you going to tell me you were back?

How does he do that?

I can't tell you everything, Demz duh rules - but you smell like smoke. Thanks Granite Mountain Shadow Crew.

CAIN, I'm just stressed. I hate to fly. My bag got stolen. I am lost in my own hometown. I haven't been here in years.

And lest we forget, I'm being served my LAST RITES, not exactly a comfortable position, CAIN. I'm sorry I snapped at you, but you boys are not treating my hospitality fairly. I don't want to die CAIN, you gotta a problem with that?

No, MIKEL. Thank you for having me back, we promise to behave.

Pt.3

Upon arriving at MIKEL'S Dad's house

-

Dad, you know that I had to fix my teeth again after what happened to me back in Humboldt - the last time cops beat me up. So, there I was at the dentist and I told him the story about how you and your wife Terry met. Now he said something to me, and I have to know if this is true or not - now your secrets safe with me, I will never tell - but I have to know.

You don't even have to answer, cause I will know by the look on your face; but I told the Doctor how you had accidentally hit a nerve and crossed your wife's eyes. And he just starts laughing - says to me "your stepmom must be really hot - cause that's a trick they teach us in school."

So, my question to you is this, because I know Terry is very hot, is he telling me the truth? Did you really learn this trick at dental school to meet hot girls?

Guilty as charged.

Well, at least an education worked out well for two of us. Oh dad. You hustler you. Good to see you didn't miss everything in school.

I remember that day too. I was raising you, ya know, and I was working odd jobs. Hard for me to stay awake in class, and the teacher said this, "This stuff can be so boring but, let me show you a trick that can help you pick up chicks." And I perked up

from a dead sleep – what? Pick up chicks?
You can pick up chicks with a job like this?
I’m all ears.”

Needless to say, I paid closer attention to my teacher after he showed me that. And yes, I used the trick on Terry. But I hardly regret it. Do you blame me?

No. Not at all. I just think it’s funny to catch you in a lie. After all the years of you catching me in lies, now we are finally going in another direction.

Mikel let’s have a beer.

A beer? You sure, I’m only 47 – this would be the first time we’ve ever had a beer together. I’ve only been waiting 25 years. Dad I got to tell you something – I know that you think that I left TEXAS because of you, because of you and me. But, dad, I left Texas for other reasons. Texas did me wrong dad, and when I was

arrested for reporting a rape in progress, I formed a resentment and took off. But, dad, I was only going to end up dead or in prison here. The last time I went to court in Texas for having rolling papers – the courts tried to give me a “Habitual Criminal” charge – that carry’s 40 years, dad. Just for having rolling papers. Rolling papers.

Texas was never going to treat me fair, so I left. It had nothing to do with you or me.

How long you staying?

I just want to fix my tooth and get back on the road. Like I told you, my goal is to go and talk to Shaolin. I have to visit her; it has been too long. I have something to ask her. And it’s real important. So, this is just a layover as I head to West Virginia to visit with Shaolin.

What’s that, that you have to ask her, if you don’t mind me asking?

Well, I will tell you, since you are my dad, but just like our little secret do not spread it around – I have been without a relationship since her mother and I split up. And it's going on ten years now. I figured since she will be dating soon, I would ask her if I could date again. It is not as if I need her to say yes or no, I just wanted to be a noble man and pop the question – out of respect to her; explain to Shaolin why I haven't dated to her personally. Girl's my age usually have another child, and I don't want Shaolin to think I am replacing her. It hurt me when you got with your ex-wife and she had children. I don't want to hurt Shaolin, I just want to find a partner. I'm tired of being lonely.

Well there it is. My last house in Dallas. Never thought I'd see this place again. Never wanted to see this place again. But here we are. This is where things really got out of hand for me. This is where I lived with Jennifer. This is where we lived when "MISS YOU", my first child, was born, and given up for adoption. Jennifer and I were addicted to Heroin. Very badly HASH. I couldn't raise a child and be addicted to Heroin. I had to give the child up for adoption, no child deserves a parent like that.

That was very noble of you MIKEL, to not let your child go through that with you.- HASH applied.

Yeah, well I wasn't ready for the pain that followed with such a "noble" decision. I was only 28, I had such a good life here. I never felt that kind of loss before. It's a deep-rooted loss to have to lose a child. It's painful on such a deep deep level.

MIKEL, since we're here, would you be man enough to take CAIN and Quazzi to that corner - I think you know the one I am talking about. - ABEL asked

Absolutely. As you can tell this is a housing area of Dallas, and like most neighborhoods here in Dallas it's set up with street, houses, alley, houses, street, houses, alley, houses, street. Now the alleys in this neighborhood are very old. This is a very old Dallas neighborhood. One of the first. And the alleys are useless. No-one uses the alleys around here. You don't even put your trash in the alley because trash trucks can't drive down them. No-one can.

On the night ABEL is talking about, I still had that RFID implant inside me; it wouldn't come out for another year or more. I had a bad habit of doing drugs. A real bad habit. And I was on a bender, as per usual, and I couldn't go to sleep.

There was a girl that I had been doing drugs with earlier that night. She had ripped me off for some money. I just wanted to get

in her pants, get her to love on me. But she had ripped me off for some money, and I was at home trying to go to sleep and forget about the evening.

I kept having these ideas that if I went back to where she and I had been last, she would meet me halfway and make it up to me. I could see the entire scene in my mind. I would walk through the neighborhood and when I got to the street closest to her house, she would meet me at the corner wearing red shorts.

But I had to take a knife.

It was about 2 a.m. I struggled all night long to just go to bed, but I finally gave into my thoughts. I grabbed a knife and went in the direction of her house.

Now like I said – the layout goes street houses, alley, houses, street, houses, alley, houses, street – and I would meet her

at the last street. And she would be there in red shorts – those were the visions I had been having in my head for the last three hours. The same visions I couldn't get to sleep over.

This girl had never been nice to me. She just never was. And when I got to the street corner, there she was in red shorts. And she did something very out of character for her. She walked up to me and gave me a huge kiss with tongue. It was a very good kiss.

Then it happened. A very strange voice entered my head and said this – I will never forget this. The strange voice said, "This will be fun, watch this – RAPE HER." In a very deep and angry voice that was not my own. I got scared. My Dad raised me in the church, so I believed this voice to be the voice of Satan, and I pushed her away, turned around, and walked back to my house quickly.

But here is what makes this story strange. As I was on my way back to my house, going the same path I took to the corner, the alley that had been empty - now had a cop car sitting there. I could see it well. He was just sitting there. Lights off just sitting there, and I could see two people inside the cop police car. Just sitting there. And he wasn't there the first time I walked past this alley. That alley had been empty. I know it was empty.

When I saw the cop car, I dropped the knife I was carrying. I went to my house and went straight to bed, freaked out. I know now that this was an MK ULTRA attack by Dallas Police. Police had used what is called The God Voice weapon.

I don't think all cops are bad, but I do believe that Dallas cops and Texas cops have a bad way of doing business. Dallas Police, it cannot be denied, have a hand to play in the train wreck of our democracy for the assassination of JFK. This is where the tide turned in America for our feeble Democracy.

Not every Dallas Police had their hand in the assassination of our elected President, this I am aware of. But someone in the Dallas Police did, and in a country that has as much to lose as we do – being the first of its kind, a Democracy; a small amount of treason is too much treason. And what happened here that night is inexcusable; forcing people to commit crimes of this nature. And forcing the people to have addictions they don't deserve with this type of clandestine operation and technology. It's unfair. And I wish I had never found that RFID implant, because knowing their cheating makes living here in America that much harder. I know there are people that don't have the populations interest in their heart. Some are Police, and others are leaders of the nation. I'm glad my addictions gone. But I wish it had nothing to do with an RFID implant to begin with.

I don't know if the RFID implant had anything to do with my addiction, but I know it had something to do with those visions and voice inside my head that night.

In Texas, I noticed after this event reading the newspapers the number of people that claim that during a murder or robbery - voices in their head told them to do it, commit murder. It's alarming how many people that commit mass murders all are accused of being mentally challenged, even if they were shot and killed at the scene of the crime. That will always be the whitewash in the press- mentally unstable. This is the corner it happened on. And that there is the alley I caught a cop car waiting to ambush me as I fled the scene right there.

When was that MIKEL? - CAIN asked.

1996.

Thank you, MIKEL.

Chapter 16

Bring it on Home

Deep Ellum, Dallas Texas May 2017

Aye DARE. Der's **Adair's** - talk about an old hangout. Can't believe the 'ol bar still a there. I used to live above that place, see that window above the door? That was my room.

Look at that. The 'ol bar is still here. We need a drink, but before we go in, let me tell you what my friends and me used to do, just to get some laughs. The boy's and I used to live over that bar. And me and my crew were infamous back then. We were the party crew. We had a reputation for partying all night and drinking at the bar when they opened.

We had a crew of about six of us boys that lived above Adair's. And we loved to goof on people that were coming over to the club house to party some more after the bars shut down for the first time. We would stand on this corner and do this skit we rehearsed - We always had a stranger to the club house with us, so that the joke was even funnier.

It went something like this, "Adair, you see that bar 'o adair. We goin 'o adair. Adair, we didn't say we were going into Adair. Adair, boy's I think he's calling us alcoholics. Hold on dare boys. We goin 'o adair, not in adair. What's wrong with you. Hold it right adair. Now don't you see that window just above Adair? Dat dare is where we going. We going 'o adair."

It was silly, I will admit, but we used to get ourselves dying of laughter. Oh, the good old days. Miss my youth, this was a great place to grow up and be me in those days.

Chapter 17
All you Need is LOVE

Pt.1

Quazzi, I want to open this Apocalypse up a little more. Let's release the scroll of Rosa de Blanco, and Rosa de Rojas.

You're the king, KING. I've wanted to read these scrolls for a long time.

It was Easter weekend 2017. The group were off to church. Upon arriving there CAIN discovered the hidden message

of scroll Rosa de Blanco and scroll Rosa de Rojas.

The assignment of the Apocalypse and the CAIN and ABEL, from the beginning of time had always been to stop war and fighting. The leader of the four directions of Love was sent to help.

I would LOVE to help.

We kind of knew you'd say that Dr. LOVE. But we don't want to send you, LOVE. We want you to stay here.

But I have some LOVELY ideas. LOVE is all they need. I would LOVE to take my lovely assistants and helpers. LOVE is the only way to get the LOVE LIGHT on, maybe they just don't know how to LOVE. LOVE is the only way to stop all the unlovely fighting. Please let me go. I'd LOVE to.

Dr. Love, we don't want to send you down there.

But – I'd LOVE to help. I have three lovely helpers that would also LOVE to go. What could possibly go wrong? All they need is LOVE. What could possibly go wrong?

Well, you might fall in love with the place.

How could I?

Yeah, how could you? Right?

I would never do that; I LOVE it here too much. Let me take my three helpers, and we will be right back.

Be right back, where have I heard this before. Listen LOVE – if you don't come

back, we will make your life a living disaster by sending the Master of Disaster down there to get you.

That sounds like a LOVELY idea.

I knew you would say that.

So, the decision was made to send the four directions of LOVE down to the prison Earth to help stop all the wars and fighting. But as the GOD'S and Galactic Council feared the four directions of love LOVED each other too much to ever get away from each other.

To fix this TOTH sent down the Master of Disaster to break the four directions apart and get them to come back home to Heaven. However, the Master of Disaster upon his arrival to the LOVE family, although an outcast, got the love sickness upon his arrival as the son of Dr. LOVE.

The mission had always been to save LOVE, but TOTH had to get the Master of Disaster to do it. Once they found the Master of Disaster, CAIN would find the leader of the four Directions of LOVE, Dr. LOVE.

See, I knew he was going to get stuck doing his job since he LOVES doing his job so much. I knew we shouldn't have sent LOVE, but he was right – only LOVE can stop all the fighting.

The Galactic Council sent the Master of Disaster back to the prison Earth with the Apocalypse weapon to destroy the place, so that LOVE couldn't come back to Earth. The end goal has always been to get LOVE back into Heaven, and never let LOVE out of HEAVEN ever again. LOVE has been gone too long.

This was the revelation of scroll Rosa de Blanco and Rosa de Rojas. What CAIN didn't know is that it was MIKEL'S Dad who was Dr. Love. The leader of the four directions of LOVE.

As they sat in church on that Easter Sunday, CAIN – Jesus Christ, the Lord of LOVE and LIGHT; the KING OF DARKNESS, sat next to the leader of the four directions of LOVE. CAIN couldn't help but be humbled.

CAIN'S original idea was to destroy all this just to hide his shame. But since April of last year, and CAIN'S first-time walking, first time breathing, first time feeling his mother's wind upon his skin, and being a human, CAIN'S opinion had changed and come full circle – CAIN no longer wanted to destroy the Earth. Rather CAIN wanted to make something greater for all its inhabitants. Return Earth to its former glory and namesake as the Garden of Eden.

The Apocalypse Weapon being with MIKEL was actually a last chance way to rescue Dr.LOVE and return Dr.LOVE back into HEAVEN.

MIKEL, The BANK'S are probably not going to let us through HEAVEN'S gate, but MIKEL - I am the KING of KING'S. We will use another gate. We can go another direction from here. And it's not far from here. In fact, it's here in Dallas - they don't call this "the Big D" for nothing. Let's go. Let's go the other direction. I know you'll like this.

Chapter 18

Let me tell you about Texas radio and the big D

Pt.1

ABEL and I have been talking about you, and I think you're ready for this MIKEL. ABEL has told me all about your life and desires. The true reason why you have benders when you are truly frustrated. The true reason you are so hard on yourself. I think I have the solution for you. MIKEL, since we aren't being allowed to go through heaven's gate, we are going another way. I think this will solve our little gate problem. Let's go talk to the BIG D. Let's go and talk to one of my uncle's. let's go talk to DANTE.

Well look what the cat's drug in, ABEL - TOTH and CAIN, what a surprise. And you brought some friends along too.

DANTE, good to see you.

Why are ya'll here? How are you here? How did you get here?

That would be because of him. Big D, this is MIKEL – he's probably the only person still alive that wants to go to hell.

What?

Yeah, you got a prisoner named Watson. Dexter Watson. He molested MIKEL'S daughter, and MIKEL wants to kick his ass. BAD. I mean RRREEEEAAALLL bad. Bad enough he doesn't live right. MIKEL actually sins to get himself into HELL for revenge on Watson

That's right. I've been to heaven, fuck that place – no Dexter Watson there. I want to go to hell. I gotta score to settle. Know the man?

Yes, I do.

Move over and take me to him. He ruined my life and molested my daughter.

OK. Surely – I can't do anything to this guy. He seems to like everything I throw at him.

Maybe MIKEL could teach you something, Big D.

He wants to go to hell that bad.

He's rejected staying in heaven just for this moment.

That place is for sissies. All white and perfect. No booze. No smoke. And no possible revenge on Dexter. He hurt my kid, Big D. Ruined my family and life. If you don't take me, I will take me.

Damn, this guys for serious. Let's go.
I'm all in. We betting on this one?

You bet we are.

They took MIKEL to a tree in an alley
at Skillman and Abrams Blvd. Immediately
MIKEL was sucked into another vortex. This
vortex took MIKEL to HELL. Souls that are
cursed to HELL, become our trees. HELL was
everything they say it is, the smell of blood
and fecal matter permeated the air.
Screams of agony abounded.

QQQUUUEEEEIIITTT – MIKEL
commanded with authority.

Dexter, we got a score to settle.

When MIKEL got there, Dexter
recognized MIKEL right away – he was tied
up with fishhooks all through him. He was
blood red from all the beatings he had taken
from the Sand Man and Big D. He was not
pretty to look at in life and much worse to

look at now, but his stupid smile remained the same.

I've come to settle the score with you Dexter.

MIKEL, how good to see you. I knew you wouldn't make it into heaven.

I didn't want to go to heaven just for this moment. I'm gonna kick your ass Dexter, and since we are dead - I'm gonna kick your ass forever.

Oh, I can't wait, MIKE. I've been expecting this for a very long time.

You've been what? No. no. no.

You know what - fuck this. My forgiveness to you made you kill yourself the

first time, Dexter. Your suicide got you here. Kicking your ass is what you want, is that what you said? I'm not here to make you happy. I'm not here to make you happy at all. Screw that.

I got a better idea.

I'm going to forgive you again. And I will carve my mark on you so that you can remember this forgiveness forever.

MIKEL took out my knife and carved his initials on the tree in the alley of the shopping mall at Skillman and Abrams, the initials MN.

Dexter, I forgive you a second time for destroying my family and my life. I forgive you for what you did to Shaolin. Know that I leave this mark, not to shame you; but to remind you – I marched into HELL, just to say, Dexter Watson – you are forgiven by me MIKEL, again.

All right boys - DANTE- we out.

Whut was that?

That's not what we brought you here for MIKEL. You -

That weren't no fight MIKEL. We got money on this. Lots of money on this. If there ain't no winner MIKEL. We have to burn the spoils if there ain't no winner!!!

Free will bitches. I got free will. That's how I'm settling this score. Again. Ya'll will just have to forgive me.

I'm sorry to waste your time Big D. I really am. I meant to kick his ass. I wanted to kick his ass.

I've lived with this chip on my shoulder all my life, just to kick Dexter's ass.

But when I got here and saw how much he thinks he loves it here; I couldn't make him happier. Not even for another moment. So, I said screw it. Forgiving him for what he did to my daughter took me years to believe. I had to lie to myself every day for months. It caused his suicide. If it was that affective in life, it'll have the same results in this after life.

Let's go. I'm done here. See you real soon Dexter, I'm the new boss around here when this shit I'm going through gets finished. DANTE needs a break.

Pt.2

Later that night MIKEL sat drinking many beers with the Big D, - DANTE, CAIN, Quazzi and ABEL. None of them could stop laughing.

What the heck is so funny ABEL?

MIKEL, we're warriors. We don't **forgive**. We are attackers, defenders, punishers, or executioners. That's all we are. That's all we've ever been. We're just a bit surprised that somebody actually believes that forgiveness stuff.

Can you "**be leaf**" this shit!!! He didn't kick his ass. MIKEL!!! Couldn't you have, I don't know, **dis-timbered** the mfr, maybe possibly **broken a limb** or something. We took you to HELL - MIKEL, no-one usually ever comes back from HELL without a scar, or bill health or something better. This has never happened before. We have never seen forgiveness.

MIKEL, we were expecting blood and mud. He even gave you a mandrake to burn- and what's MIKEL do - he throws it in the dumpster in a plastic bag, so it never gets released. MIKEL!!!! YOU screwed up **our** fun.

I know what the **ROOT** of the problem is - we were **BARK**ing up the **wrong tree** with this guy. - ABEL continued to make jokes

I've never seen forgiveness in action before - I've never seen the act of forgiveness used like that before, said CAIN. I'm impressed at how effective forgiveness truly is.

You gotta understand something MIKEL. We created the Bible, we didn't "learn" from the Bible. DO AS I SAY - NOT AS WE ALWAYS DO.

Until now, just like most of the humans, we thought that stuff was a bunch of crap. We're warriors, MIKEL. We don't practice forgiveness. We killers, MIKEL. Doesn't the word **REAPER CREW** mean anything to you?

Doesn't that ring your bell a little. We are

REAPERS, MIKEL, REAPERS. We kill things.

IT'S A SPIRITUAL BATTLE, MIKEL, that means it's a WAR – MIKEL. No such thing as forgiveness in a war.

I think DANTE should say something.

Much respect is all I have to say.
Respect earned and given by me.

Yeah, we're laughing because somebody has finally taken us serious, MIKEL. We don't even take us serious, MIKEL. We all just learned something. And we thought we knew everything – said the Big D.

MIKEL, MIKEL, MIKEL – what am I going to do with you? You can't go to HEAVEN; you don't like that place. And I can't put you in HELL, you're too good for that. What am I supposed to do with you? Where can I put you? I have no place to put you. It's only heaven and hell, those are your only options. But I can't give you either of them. What am I supposed to do? I have no other available options for you, and I'm

all out of vampires, demons, and dragons for you to slay, kill or defeat. We can't keep you here, MIKEL, you'll kill everything we created to fight with. You can't sink our battleship – we can't let you.

Any ideas? Men? DANTE? You'd be the wisest about something like this, what do you suggest?

Azguard. That's the only place a man like MIKEL can go.

Azguard? Do you think it's even possible? Do you think they'd let us give them MIKEL?

With all of the prophecy's he's broken and dethroning LORD EVIL, why wouldn't they accept him. Just the rumor about MIKEL should get the trick done. And now that this has happened, he's surely got a new title – Grand Master God of New Knowledge. I mean he taught us how to use that

“forgiveness” we came up with. I will delegate well for his acceptance.

I am the LORD of FORGIVENESS and I even learned something tonight – CAIN interjected. MIKEL, if DANTE can get you into Azgaurd, we might be able to get back into Azgaurd ourselves. Azgaurd is what we want. I know you’ll be happy there son.

DON, only you could even ask. Are you going to leave us to go and ask? We kind of like having you back DANTE.

It’s what is required. He cannot go to heaven, and he is too good for hell. And he has taught us all the act and results of forgiveness. I must go and find out.

Be gone, DANTE, and with speed make your return – ordered CAIN to DANTE.

Azguard? Wow. DANTE, do you think you could ask if I could come too. It was my home once too, you know.

I wouldn't push this little brother. None of us have been in Azguard for a very long time. Getting MIKEL there first might be best for all of us.

Let DON go and do his thing.

Fellas, I want to go and do something. Let's go back and talk to Dexter.

The gang MIKEL went back to HELL - back to the tree that held Dexter's soul in the alley of Skillman and Abrams crossroads. The weeping tree.

Dexter, I came to do something with you. I came to visit. I know what it's like to be in jail. I've been in jail lots of times, and

in all the times I have been in jail, no-one has ever come to visit me. I thought we could sit together, and visit. Thought you might like that. I know I would have. Let's talk Dexter.

MIKEL visited with Dexter for a few hours, MIKEL told Dexter about his little girl, Shaolin, because Dexter had asked. MIKEL told him about how well she had grown up, how pretty she was and that she ended up looking just like her mother. Told him about fighting fires with Salyer and the USFS, and how that came to its demise with the police of Humboldt County ruin his job. And then MIKEL laid down for the nights rest on an abandoned couch.

- Dexter, I'm going to lay down now. You need the company. You won't be alone tonight.

A few hours later MIKEL woke up and heckled the bastard for three hours.

- I might've never been visited in jail, but I've also never been heckled, you little shit. I might forgive you, but that don't mean I have to be nice to you, sucker.

The tree began to weep. The tree shed water all night long in the dry Texas summer's night.

The next day MIKEL went back to the tree that possessed Dexter's soul.

- Dexter, I thought I'd come back. I feel bad for heckling you. I wanted to eat lunch with you.

MIKEL had gone to the store and bought all the things that Dexter loved to eat. Dexter was a junk food junkie. So, MIKEL bought a bunch of little Debbie cakes, and m&m's (his favorite) He even bought a

two liter of soda. He sat there and tortured him with sarcastic heckling.

- Miss this? Do you miss this? Here have some. Hhhheeeellllppppp mmmeeee, help you.
- I can't reach that far, hhheeeellllppp mmeeEEEEEE

The tree wept harder. And still does to this day.

Chapter 19

**One more Cosmic Cup of
coffee before I go to the valley
below.**

Oak Lawn Ave., Dallas Texas May
2017

LOKI, I should kill you -

AKOSHA, wait just a minute , let me say this first, I'm sorry. It was an accident. I got cocky. Thought I could have it all and you weren't there. I wasn't trying to mate BB. But it happened. And now all three of you hate me.

Who's this?

Him? That's MIKEL. He's the new guy. He's LORD EVIL KILLER. He's the guy that defeated Quazzi. Twice.

So, this is the human that defeated the undefeatable Quetzalcoatl. I love Quazzi. I'm going to miss him. Can he fight? He'll make a fine mate. I want him.

MIKEL refuses to kill Quazzi. He refused to sacrifice him. Quazzi is still here. He has free will. We have to honor his will to keep Quetzalcoatl alive.

Excellent. He's a great father to his children.

Maybe he can teach you something LOKI.

Hey, wait a minute – don't talk about me like I'm not here. I'll make a fine mate?

Uh, MIKEL, the devil's daughters get what they want. Trust me, a guy like you would be more than satisfied.

AKOSHA, did you know they worship a likeness of you here on Earth?

They do?

Yes.

I never hear them pray to me.

They call you Asoka.

The call me a - what. ?

Now AKOSHA, you two are going to have to work things out if our plan to save the relative is ever going to work. CAIN and I did it. I did it with the bitches. I know you and Asoka can do it too.

LOKI - why do you like coffee so much?

Why do I like coffee so much? Why that is easy, it reminds me of you.

Reminds you of me? How?

Well its hot. It's steamy hot. Is bold. It's bitter. It can be sweetened. It's creamy in color, just like you. I'm in a bad mood without it. I work hard to get it, and get

some every morning, first thing in the morning. Soon as the aroma hits my nose, I'm in a good mood. And when the coffee touches my tongue, as soon as the coffee touches my tongue, I'm in love with everything – and I know it's gonna be a good day. At least till noon.

Oh, that's why you like

it.

Are we still talking

about coffee?

LOKI, that's over – LOKI, I've decided I'm not going to kill you.

Oh, how nice of you, AKOSHA, thank you. I was in the middle of this rescue

operation, now I can finish it. It would have been a drag to stop with the rescue operation. With the mother ship coming and all. That's very nice of you, AKOSHA.

LOKI, I'm not killing you because I wouldn't want the Queen Bee to miss her chance at doing it. LOKI, I think your gonna make a great Daddy.

Thank you, AKOSHA. What about husband?

Not until she forgives you for ruining her body and taking so long at getting this victory done with. She is still really mad at you LOKI. But you know how we girls are, we just want results, and you haven't gotten any results yet.

Oh, my goodness, when do you girls ever quit with the nagging? I'm doing the best I can. I had a great kill shot Apocalypse planned. But now it's ruined. All ruined. Now it's a rescue operation. My entire

Apocalypse is ruined. I was painting my masterpiece. I was gonna mess them up for good, but now they're on my team. Can't do that now.

Hmmm, that would be problematic.

Yeah, working with "people" I hardly trust since they've been killing me for the past 600 Million lifetimes. But it's either we do this and live to fight another day - or we get crushed by the Mother Ship. They're about to leave. They are in route as we speak, you can feel it coming. Feel that?

Yes.

The ground slightly trembled.

That's them coming. I can't get anyone to listen, poor MIKEL. Everyone calls him crazy for believing what they say about

the Bible. As if, the Bible weren't supposed to actually be taken literal.

We tell the people in charge and they just laugh it off. Complain that MIKEL is making fun of them. It's frustrating. But we demigods do have an escape plan, but AKOSHA that doesn't include your kingdom. We need you two to help us and you need to get over your thing between you and Asoka. MIKEL deserves the both of you. Don't start a fight over him. Not even for a second. You two need to work things out. CAIN and I did it, you two can do it as well. Something to consider.

I will think about it LOKI. Nice to see

you love. Love? You still love me?

I was talking to him, The Lord Killer. Your just an "old Love", LOKI – and I never did love you, your just very cute, and really good in bed.

Don't remind me, I already regret it. We had fun. We had lots of fun. But I have messed our relationship up beyond repair. I'm sorry, AKOSHA, I hope when this is over, and BB, and the relative are safe, we can still be friends.

Friends it is, LOKI. Like I said, your gonna make a great Daddy. I just know you are. And if you aren't, I will kill you, Little General.

Oh, be quiet with that little general stuff, why does everybody pick on my size – I'm still the best there ever was.

Bye, LOKI.

Mate –

His name is

MIKEL.

Mate, I will see you soon.

(GULP)

- nothing to worry about MIKEL.
Nothing to worry about at all. You'll be
happier with her and ASOKA, than anything
else we could bring you. Trust me.

Pt.2

Let's go, MIKE, I need you. I need you
again, carry me.

What's that in front of me, MAYHAM?

That's Jupiter, MIKE.

Jupiter?

Yeah, Jupiter, ever hear of it? What about it? We in spirit, MIKE. We in spirit. Look behind you.

Holy Cow. What's that, MAYHAM.

That is a very large abyss. That's everything you love. Everything you love, MIKE. Come on, keep going, I need you.

MIKEL, I was running out of breath, that's why I picked you up, I'm tired MIKE. We gotta get past Pluto. We almost there.

Past Pluto?

Yeah buddy, come on now, it ain't that bad. We got this one baby. We got this one.

What the hell happened MAYHAM?

Well, MIKE, someone finally built a nuclear bomb that could win a war. But they built the bomb too big. The BANKS did it. They couldn't win at democracy, so they destroyed it all. Sore losers.

Can we slow down my hearts racing to fast, I'm gonna die.

You gonna die if we don't make past Pluto too. What you wanna do MIKE?

Can we at least slow down?

When we pass Saturn, I'll slow you down. Deal?

Deal, MAYHAM.

Behind MIKEL the entire solar system was being eaten by another abyss., just like the event back in Tucson, but much much larger than before. This abyss ate up the entire solar system. MAYHAM'S view was simple, man plans and MAYHAM laughs, before the news gets to GOD.

As you can tell - we saved it, for now. But every generation of global leaders seems to inherit the idea that it's their turn to destroy the only home we share. The leader can't win at a diplomatic solution, so they pull the plug on diplomacy, and hit the button. This was the 19th abyss MAYHAM and MIKEL have fixed. But this was by far the largest.

They each passed Saturn, Neptune, and Uranus, even a few satellites. It was a sight to behold. Your spirit knows no boundaries, is the lesson MIKEL has learned over the adventures with MAYHAM.

How'd this abyss get so big MAYHAM?

They snuck it on me. They cheated MIKE. But they always cheat, which I don't mind cause that fact makes it easier to catch them at cheating. RIGHT? Don't worry MIKE, we got this one baby. We got this one baby. We just about there, MIKE. I can take it from here, thanks buddy. Sleep tight MIKE.

Chapter 20

DEAR GOD

Lewisburg WV, June 2017 – for the
third part of MIKEL’S tour of Last Rites

Pt. 1

MIKEL, I have a confession to make.

Speak NEPTUNE.

MIKEL, I regret to inform you that
99.99% of the humans are extinct.

DEAR GOD.

What? How many are in the .01%

It shames me to say this -

Say it -

1

1?

There is only one human left.

Only one human left? Oh shit. That means, that means.....that means....I'm the only human left.

ALL THAT WORK for nothing. I wasn't saving anyone at all. I was JUST SAVING MYSELF?

But I don't understand, what about my father, what about my mother? What is my little girl?

How did this happen?

When we arrived, we devised a plan to "terror - form" the planet. We were told that "humans" were food from another planet and gave themselves willingly. That humans wouldn't work or conform to society. We were told that humans were all drug addicted lazy and alcoholics, not knowing about the RFID program or all the **other facts**.

We were told that “humans” were undesirable from another world, cannibals, that were violent and non-law abiding. Tolerated, not able to be liberated or changed.

So, we devised a plan to destroy the remaining humans. We bombarded the soil, water, and air with contaminates called CHEMTRAILS. With the chemtrails we infested the population with Ghouls, causing the population to become more violent and less controllable; in order to apply more force and control over the remaining population.

How did I survive?

Where you worked and lived are the only explanations as to how you could've survived, the idea was fool proof. No-one questions the authority, and they are bound by no justice or law, they have absolute power over the planet.

However, you lived in TAOS New Mexico at a very high elevation. No poison oak or poison ivy grows there. There are no ticks, fleas, or mosquitos there as well. You worked with forest fires, smoke from the fire would have carried the nano particulates away, and once again there would be no fleas, ticks, mosquitos, poison oak or poison ivy since the ground would be burned and charred from the fire.

You don't use sugar or over the counter medicine, and for ten years you ate nothing but organic food - keeping you away from the genetically modified food that we put in the human food chain. You don't eat sweets. You only drink water, coffee, or beer. So, your water is either filtered, or steeped - which kills the nano particulates in the water. You don't eat junk food. You don't drink soda. All of these products and conventional food are the weapons that we used to accomplish - **"operation rapture"**. Death to the humans. I am sorry MIKEL.

Sorry? Oh, that's funny. No, you're sorry I survived, how embarrassing. I need a break.

MIKEL went to an empty fair ground in Lewisburg WV. He sat there and drank a beer, having just received word of the euthanasia of all the other humans from NEPTUNE.

Pt.2

MIKEL, this was the old gallows during the Civil War. ABEL told him.

I KNOW THAT ABEL.

ABEL interjected. GALLOW? GALLOW?
There's no-one there. The line sounds dead.

GALLOW? I think they're hung up on me.

GALLOW?

ABEL tried to cheer MIKEL up -

Not working ABEL. And CAIN. You just have to KNOW what grieving is like don't you? FINE.

CAIN, this isn't cool. This isn't EVEN ok. I do not forgive you for being sneaky all the time. The next time I tell you to leave, you will leave for good - stop doing this to me.

MIKEL, I just wanted to be with you -

Why, so you could watch me cry? Or find some other more curious habit to destroy me for? Like breathing. CAIN, I went through months of terrifying shit - vortex's, abyss after abyss, the new world order weapon, the invasion with RAMSES. My

church turned me away and told me never to return because of you. My family thinks I'm crazy. People think I'm crazy. I FEEL CRAZY. And my own daughter is afraid of me.

I'm alone. I'm all alone. And now it's more than just a "feeling" I have - it's proven. This is bull shit CAIN. Your dad had your mom. What do I got? Nothing.

Chapter 21

Sabotaged

Lewisburg Library, Lewisburg WV June
2017

Holy shit, CAIN – they fucked up my book – the management screwed the book all up. Look at that shit – it's all wrong – it's all fn wrong. They messed with the spine, they messed with the dedications – those were my friends – those were the five people I knew personally on that crew. I went to school with two of them Eric Marsh was my teacher. He was the Captain of that crew, I put him at the top of the list – why did they do that.

Oh, these fuckers. Fuck them. I'm sick of this,

ABEL. I am so sick of **you two**. You do realize, I have been – let me see, they have tried to kill me – how many times now? Seven, eight. I'm not even counting anymore – I've lost count.

Then there's the molesting and being hooded and beaten and **NOW THIS**. Disrespect my friends from Granite Mountain? AGAIN. Damn, man, we can't even DIE for them correctly. The managements disrespect to us is endless.

"Where do you go when you die?" I wish they'd die come back and tell me. Cause I don't care. What the fuck do I care, I'll be dead. What difference does it make? Your gonna laugh and disrespect me anyways. Fuck man.

That's my book.

Trying to make me look like a fool.
Look at that. Right there they disrespected
Obama. Right here they disrespected the
almighty one, Infinite **LOVE**.

No-one has ever channeled him – I
know I gave credit to you ABEL, but you and
I both know that was HIM, the big HIM. The
biggest HIM, Bigger than H.I.M. , him - the
big big him. LOVE. They disrespected LOVE.

What is their problem? Why did they
do that?

They won't let me work. Won't let me
have a house. Won't let me have a tent.
Won't let me have a bath. Won't let me
have a dog. Won't let me have a backpack.
Won't let me have hot food. Won't let me
have coffee. Won't let me have a family.
Won't let me have some peace and quiet. I
can't even grieve the loss of an entire planet
of humans without "bothering" ONE OF
THEM. Man, I can't live like this.

I'm pissed. That's my book. That's my
money. That's my job. And they disrespect
my friends that died.

CAIN, these are your “people.” This is your fault – fix it.

I will, MIKEL. I will.

Chapter 22

UNDER THE BRIDGE

Pt.1

Beverly WV. June 2017

CAIN came to MIKEL, MIKEL,
remember when ABEL told you that death
can tickle when it's all said and done?
MIKEL, I think you deserve a good laugh. You
have allowed all of us to enjoy laughter and
be physical for the first time in a very very
long time.. And I wanted to show my
appreciation, give you a good laugh.

MIKEL, you are aware that we all
EVOLVE. At one time MIKEL, all we had was
fun. "Fun" evolved into "funny"; and "funny"
evolved into "not funny". There was much
we didn't know about you when we first met
you humans. Laughing was considered and
insult. We were very hard on you humans,
and society to get you this far from where
you came.

We used to kill people with laughter,
MIKEL.

This accidentally created the spirit of
laughter, the Trixster spirit. He helps people
cross over. But, MIKEL, this is a test to see if
we can cross the heaven's gate you and I
created. You have to break Trixster, MIKEL.

Trixster's job is important, but I have
never allowed him to be physical, CAIN said

to MIKEL - it's time for he and you to spend some time together, MIKEL. Being physical for a first time might help him, MIKEL.

MIKEL, Trixster- Trixster, MIKEL.

Have a good time MIKEL, you need to laugh a little. This is what MIKEL can remember from the rest of those nights. Just as in the case of CAIN, B.B., and QUAZZI , MIKEL felt overcome with another personality.

This personality couldn't stop laughing, constantly cracking jokes. These are some of the jokes MIKEL could remember. And as much of the rest of that event, as best as MIKEL can recall.

Oh, hell, MIKEL - water we still doing here?

MIKEL, DOES THE WORLD HEALTH ORGANIZATION, do they regulate that coffee stuff, what is that? – I don't see a coffee bean in there. I don't even know what that is? Poor Juan Valdez, picking all those beans, handpicked by Juan Valdez – I feel sorry for his ass, and him too. Getting that ass of his up all those hills with all those beans.

Who threw the tomato at Jesus? Who threw the tomato at Jesus? Come on tell me...who threw the tomato at Jesus. I know it wasn't Juan Valdez, he works too hard. Too bad they won't hire any JUAN else. Water we still doing here MIKEL.

Horseman? That ain't a horse man, man. Man, if that were a horse man, man; he'd be half a man and 2/3 of a horse - man. He'd have hair all over his body. Well more hair than that, is all I'm saying.

If that were a horseman, he'd have four cloven hooves. Those are two bare feet. No. That is not a horseman.

No, that ain't no horse man - man.
Oh, horseshit man, that ain't no horse men,
either man, if it were a horse men, man,
there'd be more than one - the word men is
"plural" . That means more than one. I know
right.

Beverly Hills, ooohhhhhh, him? Well I
guess nowhere now. I heard he was just
about to break it big in the book world. What
a shame, 1/10 of his earnings would've
stopped this from happening. He predicted
this too. What a visionary.

No, that is definitely not a horseman,
man. Not even a horsemen, man. Well how
would I know how many horsemen there are
I don't read that horseshit....man.

Man, that is definitely NOT a lamb. I
know a lamb when I see one and that is
definitely NOT a LAMB. You should think
about going on the lamb, though. What are
you drinking - share some with me, I want

some. Don't be so stingy. Come on. Share with me. I want some too.

MIKEL, water we still doing here?

Well that is not a prophet - he has no money - there's no profit in that. HOWEVER, if they killed him to make some money - that would be a false prophet.....

Water we still doing here, MIKEL?

But I only want ONE MORE
ARMAGEDDON.

JUST ONE
MORE....PLEEEEEEEEEAAAASSSSSEE

But I really really want just one more
- just one mmmmmoooooorrrrrrrereeee
ARMAGEDDON.

I said please.

But mine was gonna be better than his, better than the last one. His was just a stupid hippy song - I HATE HIPPY'S That's why ((~));= I can't stand hippy's - I'm not supposed to. They're weird.

My Armageddon was gonna be big. I mean real big - I was gonna have flying bats with ball's and lasers, and OUT FIELDS with dreams, and relief pitchers of beer, and seventh inning stretches, and safes.

But I don't like hippy songs.

Did you really think my last Armageddon, was my bestest one ever? Really? You mean it? - Yeah me too. I guess it truly was the last big war after all.

Do you know which Jerry Garcia song I like best? Yeah me neither. They all sound the same.

It really was a good Armageddon then wasn't it? That's nice isn't it, that it's over. I can be happy again? Do I have to get along with them hippies? That would be strange – look at 'em, don't they look strange to you? No. Just me? That's nice.

Water we still doing here, MIKEL!

You know what I like about Wal-Mart, MIKEL? Me neither. But they do make their dog food 'Ol Roy right here in AMERICA- only thing in that store MADE IN AMERICA ACCEPT THE EMPLOYEE'S – that's nice isn't it?

I mean why would they let CHINA make dog food? Look how they treat their dogs. Course it's really NOT all their fault. What else you gonna eat that sits on command? That'd be like hunting COWS, if they still had any cows.

Speaking of cows. How long till these stupid humans figure out that if we ate cow the way "they" say we eat cow – the cow

would have been extinct years ago. What is in that cow, beef stuff anyways? How do I know that's cow - that's chopped COW - say's beef, cows are supposed to say NOT MEEEEEEEE, Please. We call chicken, chicken. Fish, fish. But cow is beef? And Pig, PORK. What's a beef? What's a pork? - NEVERMIND. Damn these humans are too stupid. Come on MIKEL - water we still doing here?

MIKEL. Water we still doing here! Don't you wanna go now? Aren't you sick of how stupid you are? Aren't you tired of being poor cold and wet? I know I am, or I would be if I were you?

Organic banana? Please, why do you need an organic banana? Don't you throw the peel away, MIKEL? How poisonous is that poison? And how do they get poor JUAN Valdez up that tree with his big lazy ass? OH, WAIT A MINUTE, they don't.

Juan is the loneliest number two bad there aren't three.....three could get the job

all done before the many number of idiots
get things done around here.

Sum JUAN help MIKEL. There can only
be JUAN, MIKEL. Let's go, MIKEL. I'm just
doing my job. WATER WE STILL DOING HERE
MIKEL?

Don't hold on, MIKEL. Don't talk to
strangers, MIKEL. No Juan stranger than me,
MIKEL. Don't hold on to what they got,
doesn't really matter if you made it or not.

- MIKEL, WATER WE STILL DOING
HERE?

And Trixster would laugh, all night
long. For three days and nights MIKEL fought
and laughed. The Trixster would try to twist
MIKEL'S head around, trying to make his
head spin in a complete circle.

MIKEL could see where CAIN and ABEL
were going with this. Maybe it was time for
him to go. MIKEL was the sacrificial lamb,
and leaving Shaolin his daughter behind

again, leaving so the end could be nearer for the both of them. Sounded like a good idea.

MIKEL was tired of the sacrificial lamb label. Just wanted to get out from that label. The revelation had caused so much trouble for him in Tucson. He was tired of the battle to kill him and try to start the Apocalypse - after three years of this, MIKEL was fed up, and ready to cash in.

He never wanted to hurt his daughter's feelings. But somehow, he had. MIKEL had traveled 2000 miles to hear his daughter admit that her mother had told her not to talk to him anymore. Leaving him heartbroken again, MIKEL also just didn't care anymore.

MIKEL didn't come up here to West Virginia from Arizona for a fight he just wanted to visit with his daughter for an afternoon. He wanted a three-hour visit, got twenty minutes spread out over a week, tying him up as per usual.

He wanted three hours and he got twenty minutes. Seemed unfair.

MIKEL laughed all night long for three nights and days from the wise cracks the Trixster spirit. Some of the jokes were crude, sometimes even racist and always calling MIKEL stupid. Some of the jokes were downright offensive or crude. Always calling MIKEL stupid.

Trixster laughed in a weird way that reminded MIKEL of the woody woodpecker cartoons MIKEL watched before school growing up. TRIXSTER'S laugh had a creepy ending, every time the same.

Pt.2

I can't do this to him. He won't let me win.

**He loves his
daughter too much.
I give up.**

Pt.3

You're crying for the first time,
Trixster. These are tears, said CAIN upon his
return to Trixster and MIKEL

I have never cried before, KING. This
is what it's like for them; this is what it's like
to be human? This is how hard it is for
humans to say goodbye?????

I have never felt so terrible, so much loss. LOVE is that important to them, why do we steal them from love. I can't do this to him. I should've never challenged a LORD KILLER. I feel so terrible.

Those are tears Trixster, CAIN advised

I wanted to share with you Trixster, we just never knew, I wanted to share knowledge with you Trixster. MIKEL is my son, just like Elijah and Enoch. He will show you what they go through. They leave loved ones and unfinished business behind, Trixster. We never knew, forgiveness starts with yourself first, Trixster. And that can take time.

Trixster, I owe you redemption too. What you did for the humans was important. I just wanted you to see what they go through.

When we get our business done, I have redemption to serve to you for your loyal service to the humans.

Thank you, KING., Trixster said with his very first set of tears in his eyes. You are a very noble and loving KING of KINGS.

Chapter 23

9-11 is a JOKE

Parson WV, June 2017 under the bridge

Why the hell do these fuckers keep trying to kill me, CAIN? What's the deal? Am I the only one that's happy here? Am I the only one that wants to save this place? Am I the only one that wants to save the Earth?

Even if it's just for my daughter Shaolin? Do they want to prove religion is real, or not real? What are they trying to prove?

I can't tell you everything MIKEL.

I mean. I'm not HAPPY happy, CAIN, just want to keep the Earth around for Shaolin. What's the fn deal? Do they think they are God? I'm GOD'S sacrificial lamb. Not theirs. I can't even kill myself. Why do they keep trying this murder business?

I can't - is my summer - I mean the rest of my LIFE going to be like this? People constantly trying to kill me so everyone else can die and go somewhere else but me? This sucks.

They won't pay me for my book. Steal everything I own. Now this? Constant murder attempts from dimension jumping shit bags that - what - want to kill everything cause they think they are GOD? Want to win a WAR? By killing everything ever - as in ever ever? Wth?

I don't get this. Do they WANT an Apocalypse? I know they do. But WHY? Doesn't everything die in an Apocalypse - why do they want to kill everything? I mean this hurts getting shot all the time. I'm getting tired of it. I was nervous back in Dallas.

I don't know what to do. I'm trying to save this place for my kid, but - shit this is annoying me. I mean really fucking annoying me - I don't mind the poison LSD darts but too many and it's not fun tripping all the time having these dimension jumping shits, and these spirits constantly trying to kill me and dosing me. I like tripping but NOT THIS MUCH - Jesus man, oh sorry - what are they doing? WHY?

I'm tired of LSD darts and I thought I'd never even suggest this to myself. I'm a dead head. I didn't know LSD darts existed. Why can't I have some personal LSD darts - what gives? I wouldn't normally take this much LSD. Or admit that I am tired of rat poison and LSD. Not to myself. I thought a

guy like me was immune to those kinds of words entering my head.

CAIN, help me?

Remember before we left Tucson? I can't even drink my coffee in peace without snipers blowing my head off. The blood stain on the park bench kept getting bigger and bigger and bigger? And you guys just jump dimensions and bring me right back, like nothing happened.

- *Is that my blood?*

-

- *Yes, it is.*

Man, this sucks. I'm leaving -

Yes, I do MIKEL. Yes, I do. ABEL and I have been capitalizing on this a little. We've been taking you back home and fixing you - ya know for the big day. And well -

CAIN, a little? What the hell is littler than the relative? What the hell is littler than the relative? What's more little than that, CAIN?

MIKEL, I have a confession. We have been secretly killing your kind to make us a big home - back home for a very long - well, second or two, relatively speaking. But for many years your time. I mean HUGE. REAL HUGE. I mean REALLY REALLY HUGE. We like things HUGE so we can all get along, ya know. NO?

Mikel, what year was it in 1776? Funny thing is the people didn't even know what year it was in 1776. They were told. Most people were illiterate and didn't read and there weren't many newspapers. They didn't have clocks that matched in NY City till the train was built coast to coast - so let me ask what year was it in 1776? Answer, most of them, the people of that time; they didn't know.

But, MIKEL, we like things big, back home ya know. BIG. REAL BIG. And well, every other Christmas one kingdom or

another blows the shit out of you with a nuclear bomb – however, this is because I have been lied to. I thought this place was terrible. But **Now**, I realize, it's not.

The human existence is awesome. And I'm tired of keeping you here – I want to take you there instead. You deserve the best home ever created.

And well – do you remember 9/ 11? Well funny story, that was another nuclear bomb. Half a dozen of them really. And WELL MIKEL – I know this might sound strange – but I was trying to KILL you, son, that I love now – sorry about that.

Remember building 6. The picture slightly proves that – well, now that I'm here and have walked and talked and drank coffee and – well walked – and uh – smoked – you're really not that bad after all MIKEL. I like you MIKEL, and all the other dare I say "people" that are here – trying to kill you. I don't want to be killed after all. But listen, I understand this is no fun, getting killed all

the time. So, I gotta run an errand I will be right back – I promise I will be right back.

WAIT RIGHT HERE, BE back in five minutes I swear?!

Jesus Christ , ABEL, is he fn serious about9 -11?

Yes. He is. Building six, the upside-down cars, the charred cars, the body parts found on building roof tops three miles away. It's just never been explained correctly. And it can't be explained any other way.

Chapter 24
ROUND AND ROUND

Pt.1

Elkins WV, June 2017 underneath another bridge.

MIKEL, we have a tiny little problem.
You see,
UH - I DON'T KNOW QUIET HOW TO EXPLAIN
THIS, but I sent 5 million nuclear weapons
down here, and I didn't know how big a
number 5 million was -

You call that a tiny problem?

Well it is to me. I've never been this small before. And because - well, since I have never counted this small before - I didn't know how big a "5 million" was. I've never counted this small before. And - uh - MIKEL - I can't stop them. But if you forgive me - I might be able to do something.

What? Say this again.

We don't have time for that right now MIKEL. But - Yeah, I'm sorry, MIKEL. I'm real sorry. But, MIKEL, hurry up and forgive me cause they will be here in about ten seconds.

Why did you do that?

Well, funny story, MIKEL, you see ABEL kept saying "WE CAN'T MAKE the

relative any smaller – CAIN”. But, MIKEL- really; who listens to the general, you know – especially when he’s your annoying little brother that got you into this mess, and you’re the KING of Kings. And you KNOW everything. You know what I mean? I mean, what does he know? I know everything, or so I thought. Know what I’m talking about?

No, I don’t.

MIKEL, PLEASE FORGIVE ME. AND
HURRY
UP – THEY’LL BE HERE ANY SECOND –

I thought you said they’d be here in ten seconds?

I did.

It took you 30 seconds to say that.

It did? Well, I've never used a 10 second before, I don't know how long a 10 second takes. Come on man - MIKEL, they are on their way. Hurry - just forgive me. Just forgive me, pleeease, and I can fix this. I can fix this; I know I can. I promise I will never do this again. I will never try to destroy this relative and physical dimension ever EVER again. I promise. Have faith in me, MIKEL.

That's what got me into this mess, J.C., having faith in you, CAIN. NOW THIS? You need "my" forgiveness? To stop "5 million" nuclear bombs? What about the Meth thing? Don't want any forgiveness for that? We just gonna skip that one for now? Keep that one to ourselves? Keep a lid on it?

MIKEL, please hurry. This is super important. Do we have to talk about the meth now?

No. I wanna talk about "the meth" now.

Really, they're on their way here now. Is this a good time for this, cause I don't want to lose this place. I don't. Not now. I didn't realize how incredible this place was till - well just a few seconds ago - did I say that right?

No. No you didn't.

Oh, man. MIKEL - please. You're not making this easy. And please hurry. Please forgive me.

O.K. Fine. I forgive you. Jesus CHRRRIISSTT. Man, ya'll are pathetic. "Can't make it any smaller?" Now I've heard everything.

Oh, thank you, MIKEL. I promise you; YOU won't regret this. I promise I won't destroy you ever again. Thank you, MIKEL. Thank you. Be right back.

Thanks for the warning, CAIN.

I'll be back shortly, sorry ABEL, didn't mean anything by that -

CAIN. You're in a hurry aren't you?

Oh yeah. Thanks for the forgiveness, MIKEL. Be right back.

Once again, thanks for the warning.

MIKEL, ABEL said, I kept getting out voted 1-3 to save this place. Keep the relative from getting this small. Nobody else in our circles would vote because of our "punishment", and it being ALL MY FAULT. Coming here to see what existence was like was all my idea.

That's why the "13" is an unlucky number, MIKEL. I couldn't get the others that were involved to vote. So therefore, the relative kept getting smaller and smaller. As you well know, it was a 4-9 vote that got us down here - all of us. It was my idea that got us into this mess.

I was the one that, dare I say – “cheated” to win the election by creating “friends” that would side with me. And I haven’t been able to get them to help me ever since. Everybody is very mad at me still. But we are fixing that. Well if my brother makes it in time.

He was very serious about the missiles, MIKEL. But, MIKEL, my brother is the best. He is the best of the best. He can fix things quickly. He’s a very noble KING of Kings, MIKEL. You did the right thing. Trust in CAIN. That’s my Big Brother. He can do anything.

Jesus ya’ll are nuts. LORD HELP US.

Pt.2

MIKEL, I found the solution. Follow me PLEASE. I have something I want to show you. I have something I want you to have. Forever.

MIKEL, I know you have been busting your ass to save this planet from devastation for your daughter, and that's very noble of you. But I want to show you something. I think you will be surprised and amazed.

MIKEL, if we break the Ying Yang symbol, we no longer chase the After Life. But we can chase the after death, cause there's just more once lived over here that either miss you, or never met you at all. Many lifetimes ago – there were no humans.

Your life kills our death. Spirits never die MIKEL, or ever get this small. We are about to share your kind to our kind in a,

very long time, but we are only halfway there. We need your help to get there.

-Yeah, MIKEL, follow us – said Sarah – You see MIKEL, man plans, and god laughs, doesn't he? Well what do you think happens when aliens plan? We laugh silly. And I don't like their plan, so come with me let's see if I can make you change your mind about this "sacrifice" because I think your perfect for this type of JOB. I know a guy as cute as you are would like to see what we have hidden over here.....here....here, here and here – not to mention all that over there, that's not really as classy as a guy like yourself. But it is there, if and when you need it, did I mention I live over there? No, well I do sweetie.

Over here you can see the Ying Yang of the Universe. As you can tell, SARAH added, the Ying Yang is still very much active, and very much real. And very much going round and round in circles, and boring as hell. Well you know what I'm trying to say – don't you?

We need your help, MIKEL. We want you to break it. We heard you know a dentist. Is he any good, you trust him? Really? How well do you trust him? How do you know he can be trusted? Is he cute? Did he make good grades in school? How would you know?

You want me to do what?

Break it. You know - BREAK - IT - MIKEL, we were thinking since all those bombs are on their way anyways - and we're so tired of putting you back together. That instead you'd just let us drop a bunch of bombs on you instead. Like 500 million cubed times three times five many more times. Does this make any sense?

NO.

Good. I like that answer. Don't ask me why. But the ancient symbol of peace and balanced harmony bull shit thing isn't going to break easily - unless of course you agree with us. What do you have to lose besides

those shoes? Come on MIKEL, you need some better shoes. Adidas? That's so old school.

What's wrong with me and my Adidas?

Nothing. Listen. You're good at breaking things, aren't you? You break wind. You break records for assassination attempts. Let's just add a few half dozen million cubed more? Deal? That's what we were thinking too.

CAIN?

You break ribs laughing too much. You broke Trixster. And if you break my daughters' heart ever again, I will kill you, if I could? Because you're so damned cute – MIKEL. Am I too old for you? Or is it that my daughter is just right for you? Never mind. Follow me over here.

Do you see that?

Holy me- o - my, what is that?

That is the “After Death”. The Ying Yang is reasonably only responsible for the AFTER LIFE, but what about the other parts of creation? Well, MIKEL, that’s why we have this. This is where all the fun stuff is, if you ask me. And I would know. I put it there.

The “After Life”, MIKEL, is for the human’s and the management. – said CAIN. But, MIKEL, long before the humans were ever created, there were millions of other existences that existed in the AFTER DEATH.

ABEL told you about our grandfathers the GOD of LIFE and the GOD of DEATH. Before LIFE as we know it, there were no humans.

Humans were GOD'S last creation, sorta. Man, second to last with woman being the very last, sorta. But before that, there were millions of other civilizations that came here after their time in LIFE – this is the AFTER DEATH.

But – J.C. - It's sooooo big J.C. It's fn huge. Why do they keep us from this? HOLY COW. This is bigger than that beach thing – fuckin ' amen, man!!!!

I understand, but as you can see, we have a little problem down there. That white dot in the middle of all that darkness; that is SMOKEY – Infinite Love. He holds the relative in the palms of his hands. We have to get him from all that darkness, back over to the Light.

We were thinking MIKEL, since you know of a dentist you might be able to get said dentist to help us. – Sarah added.

Help us what?

BREAK IT. MMIKKEELL aren't you listening? We're going to - break - the Ying Yang symbol of balance peace and harmony. I'm ready for the wedding MIKEL, I want lots of grandkids too.

Do what?

Too soon? Moving on.

MIKEL, listen, please listen to me. I want you to - BREAK it. THE. ANCIENT. YING -YANG. THING. MIKEL, are you listening do we have to write this down again? Have you missed everything you see before you? Don't you see the little Ying Yang symbol down there- poor SMOKEY, carrying the relative this entire time.

The ancient symbol of balance?

Well what other Ying Yang symbol of balance peace and harmony bullshit would we be talking about, MIKEL?

MIKEL? Is there a new Ying Yang symbol of balance peace and harmony that an old girl like me doesn't know about ?- CAIN, help me out.

Yes, MIKEL. We intend to destroy the balance of life with your fathers help. But we figured you should ask him.

UH - J.C. - what happens to everything if we do this?

Well, relatively speaking, it would all be destroyed.

And if it's destroyed, then we would be in Heaven, correct?

Correct.

Everyone?

Everyone.

Even George Lucas?

Even George Lucas, MIKEL. I promise.

So, all I have to do is get my Dad to destroy –

Your Dad gets to destroy “absolute evil.” The darkness with the white eye. You see, MIKEL, long before the system in place became what it is – the law was very simple. “Eye for an Eye”. “Tooth for a Tooth”. And when we were visiting with your Dad, he admitted to knowing that “little trick” he learned in college.

The trick where he crossed his wife's eye for a date. SARRAH and I were thinking, that if we took a dentist down to Grand Pa, we could - FIX HIS TOOTH. And there would be no more Absolute Evil in the world seeking life to take to the After Life.

Absolute Evil, MIKEL, only cares about eating life to take it to the After Life. It constantly looks for life to kill, in order to create more AFTER LIFE. The Afterlife produces oil. This will release the oil tycoons from there dark side in this white mass over here on Earth. They will take care of them selves', once they find the MOTHER LOAD. We've told them "don't hit your mother" but we know their greed. And how well they listen, am I correct?

We are at critical mass, MIKEL, and there aren't any more LIFE'S to feed the AFTER LIFE. The AFTER LIFE needs to go on a diet, MIKEL. So, we can get over to the After Death.

There is no death after death after death - the way there is in the After Life. You only death one time, and Nazareth gave

you life after Death. Soooooooooo this is what you are looking at - the after death.

This is your solution to the nukes that are -

Were.

On their way?

Yes.

This is what they have been keeping us from, seeking perfection? Man. This is huge. Real huge. Much much bigger than that. Why do they keep us going in circles?

Because they're on top driving the machine and calling the shots. It's hard to explain - but let's just say it's the will to

survive that drives them, and they need oil to drive their will to survive.

As you can see, MIKEL, that Ying Yang is down there, and we are up here. We need to create a “pivot valve”. Now that the zodiac has broken we can create the pivot so that this valve can assist us. But we need to swap the white and dark dot before we can do what we want to do.

We have to get SMOKE back over to the white side of the symbol. He is INFINITE LOVE, and he’s out of teeth.

Once we get Grand Pa Evil to switch directions, because he can see again, with his old dark dot eye, we will create the imbalance, and this will get Smokey back to us. We owe SMOKEY the most redemption. He is infinite love, and he is TOTH’S GOD. He is the MGM GRAND, MIKEL. The one you channeled in the book that was taken out. That was infinite love.

The most high.

WE owe it to SMOKEY - MIKEL,

In order to create the imbalance, we want you to get your father to visit us, down here in the afterlife, and as you can see - Grand Pa only has "ONE" tooth. This is from ages after ages and ages of Tooth for a Tooth. It'll be an easy fix. Once we fix his tooth, Grand Pa will look for new food somewhere else.

That's the plan MIKEL, can you do it?

WELL, if I can't save the world for my daughter, then I will destroy the Universe for the girl I love the most. Cause she would meet me in heaven, is that correct? I mean I'm dead right, and I get everything I want in heaven, is that correct?

That would be correct, MIKEL, since you would technically be in Heaven, so yes MIKEL, the girl that you love will be there - since everything else is destroyed and in heaven with you.

DEAL.

I'll do it. There's only one girl I have ever loved to the point she takes my breath away. I was in love with her for three years before I met my daughter's mother back in **TAOS New Mexico**. Never said a word to her, because I couldn't. My mouth never seemed to work around her and I would fall to pieces whenever she walked by. But maybe since I'm dead I will learn how to talk with her. I just want to try and talk to her one more time. We got lots of time, correct? And even though I loved having a family, now that that's gone - I want to find her again. And if I'm taking us into Heaven, she better meet me there, CAIN. If I can't save the world for my daughter, then I will destroy it for the woman I love. She better meet me there. Her name is **Gabriella**. If I'm going to spend eternity with anyone I want to spend eternity with her. We shared

a chemical romance with each other. She felt the same way about me.

The last time I saw her was in Steamboat Spings Colorado at a James Brown show. It would've been the best time to approach her. But she was going through a physical fit having just walked by me and touching my shoulder giving me the signal. "I know who you are Mikel Neily." Is all she has ever said to me. She had snuck up from behind me touched my shoulder and said those words and walked away.

I tried to catch up to her once my mouth started working but the crowd got in the way. When I did catch up to her she was up against the wall of a concession stand. She was weak in the knees and her eye's were rolling up into her head. She admitted to her friend that asked her if she was on some xtc that it was me that was doing this to her. "No it's that boy." Is what she said.

I saw the entire event got scared and decided to approach her another time when I got home. But I didn't get home till ten months later and by that time Gabriella had moved away. I never saw her again and I just want to see her again. And try to talk to her again.

We were hoping you'd say that. We were hoping you would say that MIKEL.

I wanna cry - I'm SO HAPPY - he chose my daughter again. 600 million times, oh, it must be true love. He has picked my daughter and only my daughter six hundred million times. It must be love. Oh I am so happy. My little angel of death is finally getting back together with her spirit of death. I LOVE YOU, MIKEL.

Spirit of DEATH?

What? Didn't you know that you're the spirit of death MIKEL? What? Was it something I said?

No. It wasn't you - it was something ABEL said.

Oh, fuddy duddy.

MIKEL, I think you need something. Can you reach my birth control pills? Way up there?

Up there? NO.

Good. Good. Excellent. That's exactly why I put them waaaay up there. WAAAY way UP THERE. Lots of grand baby's, MIKEL. I want lots of grandkids, MIKEL. Lots - do you understand me? Or should we write this down - again. CAIN help me with this guy.

Pt.3

So, Dad

- Where am I?

Well, we are in the “AFTER LIFE”.

Am I dead?

No. Not yet. But since we're here, let's talk. Do you remember telling me about that "little trick" you learned back in Dental School? About hitting a "certain nerve" and "crossing the eyes"?

Yeah.

O.k. good, we need you to "FIX" a little problem that we have - you know that big pile of trash in the Pacific Ocean called the "great garbage reef"?

No.

That's o.k. because I will explain it to you. You see, experts claim that trash has drifted into a large island between Hawaii and California. It's the size of the Texas purchase - the original Texas purchase, Dad. But this isn't true.

The great garbage reef is the “AFTER LIFE”, eating its way through LIFE. It’s one reality that’s about to eat through into another reality - this reality, our reality.

Once the AFTER-LIFE breaks through, there will be no more LIFE. Because there is no “AFTER-AFTER LIFE”. It’s come to an end, and we need you to help us fix this one tiny problem. OH, and hit that nerve at the same time. Think you can do it?

UH.....

Here take a look.

What - what is that?

That, DAD, is the very first species. Named “grand pa”. That is absolute evil. That - I mean grand pa, eats everything in his path. It’s what been at odds with LIFE on

our planet from the start. Its purpose, if you will, is to eat LIFE. But look, DAD, this should be easy for you. See.....take a look.

What MIKEL'S DAD saw was a black stomach with one lonely tooth, and one white light coal miner light for an eye, constantly eating away at the darkness before it.

Before humans, DAD, LIFE didn't look like we do today. This is the grandfather of the "AFTER LIFE". One of a kind. Absolute EVIL.

Dad, what if I told you that you are looking at the eye of the black part of the yin yang symbol of balance? And we need you to do that "little trick" you learned at Dental School to - help grandfather "find his glasses" - do you know what I'm trying to say without saying it?

Just tell him we want him to break the ancient symbol of absolute evil MIKEL, gee whiz. - be honest. - SARAH said.

Sarah, I got this. If you look right here DAD, I think you can kind of see where we are going with this.

Absolute evil was nothing more than a mouth with **one** sharp tooth and a miner's light. Before the battle between good and absolute evil began, grandfather evil's mouth was nothing but sharp knives. He had a mouth like a shark, full of sharp knives. But in time, with the LAW of the land being EYE FOR AN EYE, TOOTH FOR A TOOTH, grandfather evils teeth were reduced to one lonely tooth.

I think you can see where we are going with this. He has a sore tooth, Dad, and needs a dentist - to fix it.

-I see. I'm on it.

Grand Pa, we brought someone
here to fix your teeth.....
(sssssshhhhhhhhhh)

Whuts that?

WE CAME TO FIX YOUR SORE
TEETH!!!!!!
GRAND PA!!!!!!!!!! (winks at MIKEL'S
dad.)

Bout time. My teeth are killing ya'll.

Stop killing LIFE for second, and let
the good doctor take a look at all those
sharp nasty teeth you have (wink, wink)

Being a professional, MIKEL'S father
knew exactly what to do. And he went right
for the nerve first. And just like that the
white miner light that was on grand pa evils

head crossed over to the other side, with no problem at all.

Wow, I'm surprised that worked out – said Sarah. Good to see someone learned something at school. MIKEL, why can't you fix small problems like your father – oh that's right, you fix the big ones like stopping the destruction of the planet, well never mind. Your Dad's kind of cute, looks just like you, too bad he's not as young as you are? Would he be into a girl that's seven infinities young?

He's happily married.

Well what a shame. Does she have to find out? I'm not looking for a long-term commitment – just a very cute dentist who can keep a secret.

Dad – the tooth, you gotta pull the tooth.

In grand pa's mouth - absolute evils mouth, was one lonely tooth, an easy fix for

professional like MIKEL'S father. He grabbed hold of it, yanked, and the knife tooth came right out.

I can see, by the looks of it that grand pa evil once had a mouth full of these – teeth. Where did they all go? - asked MIKEL'S father.

Oh, we sold them on T.V. You ever hear of the Ginsue Knife? They were quite popular back in the 80's. We sold them by the millions. Made a fortune.

Well, that's done, Dad. You just saved the life from destruction, Dad. How's it feel rookie? Like I said trash island wasn't trash that sank, Dad. It was absolute evil punching its way through into our reality. If grand pa evil had punched through – all life would've been destroyed. Dad you saved the world. Be proud of yourself.

What's next.

Well, Dad, he gets to eat me - I'm the sacrificial lamb of the Apocalypse -

How's he gonna?

(SSSSSSHHHHHHHH- he's not -

he's just gonna try. ***wink, wink)

This is gross.

Won't take long, Dad. Grand Pa Evil chewed and chewed and chewed, but finally gave up.

Since his eyesight was repaired from the trick MIKEL'S Dad learned back in Dental School, instead of going in circles - like a million times before, Grand Pa evil chose a new direction with the help of his old assistant TOTH.

This way Grand Pa -

What's that -

I said I FOUND SOMETHING TO
EAT!!!

GOOD, that kids a little tough around
the hedges.

Well, Dad, you always ask me where
will you go when you die. This is where you
go when you die? This is the After Life.
Wanna stay?

I think I like it better with Terry.

Who? That wife that's between us.
The one that is "in our way"? I can fix that,
for ya, ya know?

SARAH.

MOTHER!!!!

Have I said too much? I have said too much. Should I be leaving? I should be leaving. I'm going to be leaving now. Bye for now.

Thank you, SARAH.

All right Dad as you wish. We will send you back to the living – but don't ever ask me again where I will go when I die, I don't die – I death, and I get right back up. The blood of Jesus of Nazareth gave me that option. I have LIFE after DEATH, not die. Die is a lie.

Choose death and get up.

This is where you go when you die, this is the after- life – so quit asking me to answer you. You got your answer. Thanks for saving the planet, but as you can tell I'm a little busy saving reality and the Universe right now for Shaolin. So, I hate to break this

short – but you got to go. Love you Dad. BYE NOW.

Terry I just had the strangest dream.

Chapter 25

Go Straight to HELL BOY

Kingwood WV, June 2017 at the corner of
High & Price street.

Pt.1

TICK TOCK – ABEL said, you are
hereby relieved of command. Thank you for
your service. TICK TOCK, you are dismissed.
Enjoy the time off, sir. Good work.

MIKEL, this is AZRAEL, AZRAEL –
MIKEL.

MIKEL, we gotta do this little thing – it's just
a formality, so follow AZZY.

Damn, ABEL, what's this place?

This is the stables, MIKEL. This is the
stables. This is where we keep the horses
MIKEL.

Who's that one?

That's MEGADEATH – that's D-MAN'S
horse.
This one is BUTTERCUP – belongs to PESTO.
He loves Buttercup's the dragon Queen, so
he named his pony after Buttercups. This is
my horse. I call her KISSES. KISS OF DEATH.

But MIKEL, this is the one we really wanted you to see. You need a job, am I correct?

I thought we weren't gonna -

Yeah, about that MIKEL - we still ain't figured that out yet, so as I said before this is just a formality. I don't want you to just sit in a box - you need a job, don't you? I know you do. So - follow me, please.

Why is this horse way over here?

Uh, well, she don't get along weeeellllll let's just talk about that later. This horse is named WILDFIRE. And she was a tremendous looking horse. All flames. The most amazing horse MIKEL had ever seen. Red Yellow Orange main of fire, flame around her feet BLUE EYE'S and when she saw MIKEL - she ran up and kissed him.

UH, BOSS. This is strange, idn't?

Why, AZRAEL - (ah - hem) why yes, it is. Yes, it is?

What's so strange?

Well MIKEL, uh WILDFIRE here has -
uh KILLED the last four horsemen that rode
her, that's what's so strange.

Getting Chilly in here, BOSS.

Why yes, it is AZRAEL, why yes, it is.
This has never happened before - she really
loves you MIKEL. I mean she really loves
you. MIKEL, WILDFIRE don't love anybody -
ever.

First time for everything – BOSS. First time for everything. I need a coat and a sandwich. Be right back.

Get ME my coat too MAY – I mean AZRAEL. And make my sandwich a double, MAY – I mean AZRAEL.

Yis sir re, BOSS. Yis, sir re, BOSS. Yippee. I knew he was the one.

What's that mean?

Can't tell you everything, MIKEL. Demz de rulez. You know the rulez. MIKEL, this is what I can tell you, she loves you. That's all I can say at the moment cause I'm at a loss for words right now.

Sorry MIKEL. I wish I understood MYSELF.

Wildfire hates everything - but you apparently. Like I said she has killed the last four horsemen that rode her. But she really likes you -

She's so beautiful. And friendly. I wanna ride her.

Well, uh, - maybe later, cause that's our nuclear option, if you know what I'm trying to say. She really does seem to like you though.

I'm glad something finally does.

Pt.2

MIKEL, the KING OF Kings softly said to MIKEL, I know that you have these desires to take me to a gate far, far away, in

Ethiopia. And although this gate is probably one of the greatest to get the job done, and you are owed the money. We don't have the time.

I know you want to give the banks all summer to start paying the bets and end your pain and poverty, but because we have our problems with the banks at the moment, we need to do this now. Right now. And I'm going to show you.

This desire is very noble of you to treat me like a KING, I do see the genuine best from you MIKEL. But MIKEL, the BANKS may never pay you, I designed them to be unfair.

It's more complicated now because of the wars and punishment for war in times of peace, for us considering the banks. Let's NOT depend on them. Not at this time. Now is the time to get through a gate.

But, MIKEL, what if I told you we don't even need the gate in Ethiopia, or Ohio, or

Hawaii – We don't even need that gate in Guatemala, or even New Mexico; we can make one - right here.

MIKEL, yes those are GATES that would help us, but we don't need those gates, because I'm going to show YOU how to make a gate. You are made in the image of a GOD. I am a demigod, so this will be easy for you. Are you ready? Say after me, IN MY NEED, heaven gate be created- clap if you want to. I blow my wills into inception; like blowing a kiss.

That's all I have to do?

That's all you have to do. MIKEL, that's how we did everything. Even darkness MIKEL was spoken into existence.

We don't need a HEAVEN'S GATE? We can make a heaven's gate on our own?

We? You. You can make a heaven's gate on your own.

So, MIKEL created a GATE and MIKEL and the gang went into the gate. And it was done.

Just like that - J.C.?

Just like that? CAIN said. MIKEL, you are special to me. WE are on a special mission. So, I intend to show you special things about yourself while you in turn show me special thing about this NATION of the United States. Special things about your home. Sound like a deal?

Yeah.

OK. Let's walk together through this gate. Our gate MIKEL has to be hidden so we will not put anything around it. We won't

need to find it again I assure you that. It'll be better this way.

What do we do now?

We just sit back and wait.

Sit back and wait?

Yeah. Sit back and wait. MIKEL, watch.

Pt.3

The first to arrive through the gate that CAIN showed MIKEL how to make was ABEL'S mother to be, the Queen Bee, otherwise known as Beelzebub - but always called B.B. by ABEL.

B.B.'s proper name is and was EDEN. After she became the first female high priestess, she became known as Beelzebub. Her royal title is the Queen Bee, her kingdom is the flying insect kingdom. Of all types.

B.B. hadn't been back to the planet since the banishment of Quetzalcoatl, which was when the Garden's name had officially changed from the Garden of Eden to Prison 555 - or planet Earth. A long time ago this

had been her domain. Eden, like ABEL, was a volunteer into banishment. ABEL had sworn to me if she hadn't had left, this place and all of its troubles would've been fixed by now. ABEL didn't want her to leave or volunteer for banishment – but he also could not stop her.

CAIN, or as MIKEL had started calling him J.C., had just taught MIKEL how to create his first gate. They were being denied access to heaven's gate. So, in order to get to the gate they wanted, CAIN and MIKEL had to take another route through the Zodiac Council. Each member of the Zodiac would be at their beckon call for negotiations that would garner itself into a future vote to let them pass – or not. Each member of the Zodiac was at their disposal for a night of delegations. Aries was the first to approach, and she and ABEL had unfinished business with B.B.'s future childbirth. This was their first meeting in a very long time.

Eden, or B.B., as ABEL was fond of calling her, was pregnant with ABEL'S first children; her type did not have one child at a birth. Her type had multiple children. Until

Dallas, AKOSHA had been ABEL'S mate. B.B. was a forbidden love for ABEL. She had been one of his students, and he – or they; had gone too far in their relations and a pregnancy occurred quite by accident.

None of this changed ABEL'S feelings – not just for the Queen Bee, but for their future children. Scared, yes, but up for the challenge of fatherhood that ABEL had expressed to EDEN.

No matter what happens, B.B., I totally intend to be around for our children. I will not run away from this, EDEN, please believe me. – ABEL told B.B. the last time they talked.

The first word's out of the Queen Bee's mouth were, "I'm still mad at you LOKI, but I am here. Let's take a look at the place. Show me what you got; cause I know it's not like it was. I know it's a mess."

Behind the small store in Huttonsville, WV where they had stopped for the night there was a small creek. And just as CAIN and Quazzi had also never been physical before, this was the Queen Bee's first time ever having a sense of sight and feeling as a human. This was also her first-time hearing as a human does. "What is that in the air?"

"That is the sound of songbird's singing of your entrance, Queen. Nice wouldn't you agree?" Quazzi said to the Queen.

It is very pleasant. And this excitement I have?

That is wind. You can feel the wind that carries the pollen because of the flesh the humans have.

Hearing these songbirds is magnificent. I love all the color's the eyes of the human catch. So many colors. I love these eyes. You can see everything.

That's one of the traits I love about the humans too. I mean there are so many, but the colors are one of my favorites. So, I was thinking, B.B. – since MIKEL is the only one left; that we could stop the eating of humans.

I will make up my own mind, LOKI. First I'd like to hear what his Majesty of KINGS has to say.

Fair enough – CAIN...

Queen let me show you instead. And J.C. walked slowly up a hill. CAIN looked at B.B. in the eyes and looked away and took a few more silent steps. Looked her in the eyes again and cracked a small smile – but said nothing for a few more steps. CAIN is a king of few words.

But when he spoke, he speaks in abundance.

“B.B., I like this now. In fact, I LOVE this now. And this one, MIKEL – TAUGHT ME, and taught me how to love the humans as much as I do. They are my children.” And that’s all the KING OF Kings said as he walked and smiled at the Queen Bee.

EDEN cracked her first smile.

MIKEL has some honey, B.B., would you like him to share some with you?

They still make honey? I would love to have some honey. PPPLLLLLEEEAAAASSSEEE. I love honey. Is it royal honey? Oh, I hope its royal honey!!!

B.B. it’s just honey, but it’s not refined honey. It’s chuck honey, so it’s the good stuff. Nice and gritty the way you like it, EDEN. The honey came from a local bee farmer, so it has the local pollen in it. Here in West Virginia they still farm. A lot.

No matter, I'm just please this place still makes honey, I've heard so many terrible things about this place.

After eating the honey sandwich the two of them went down to the babbling creek barefooted. Eden had never felt the ground under foot, or water streaming by. We walked slowly as she was not used to gravity or not being able to fly from falling. I could tell the mood of the Queen Bee was happy from the news of CAIN'S change of heart about the destruction of her once happy garden of EDEN and the humans.

B.B. saw potential, that's all that mattered. She and MIKEL built standing formation of balanced rocks together for an entire hour, she wasn't used to using her hands and confessed to MIKEL she could do this with her mind, but she also admitted this was also equally as fun.

She loved to build with balancing rocks. And she and MIKEL didn't stop until the entire creek bed was full of dozens of

them. It turned into a beautiful site when they were done.

ABEL, you know my time here is almost done, and my father is next. I think I should stay while he is here, because of the history between you two, and our current state of affairs being what they are with our future children. I wouldn't want him to have to kill you alone.

I was hoping you'd say something like that Eden, I don't want to die alone.

That's not what I mean, LOKI. But I want to hear what you have to say to him before I leave. This mess between the two of us, and this place still being a prison is all your fault, ABEL.

My fault? How could this be all my fault when CAIN clearly....

LOKI, please, I don't want to hear you right now. CAIN is the KING of KINGS, mind you - and you are ONLY his little General.

Of BOTH army's!!!

LOKI.....that still hasn't SOLVED the problem, now has it? I still want to be here when Dad shows up, I can't let him kill you before I hear you apologize. I'm still mad at you, little General. You better think about that.

There you go with the little General stuff again. B.B. hear me out. I didn't mean for what happened between us to happen. And I didn't mean to get you pregnant. I thought I could make you like me, that's all. But, EDEN, I wouldn't change a thing. Not anything.

Anything?

Well, I'd change the fact that you hate me. EDEN even if you don't love me or feel for me the way I feel for you - I still want to be in our children's lives. I'll be a good Dad, I promise. I promise I will.

I'm sorry I got you pregnant B.B., and it did take a very long time to get you here; but hey - I got you here, and the place isn't totally destroyed.....yet. That's gotta count for something, B.B.

Queeny, I know I messed up, but I promise I will be a good father. I will be there as much as I am allowed to be there for our kids; I will. I'm not going to run from this "thing", as you call it, between us.

MIKEL taught me how to be a very good Dad with his daughter. MIKEL taught me how to do your best to be in the children's lives and do your best to spoil them while you're there. MIKEL is a very good father; at least he was until the divorce.

Divorce? We don't have that option in our Kingdom, LOKI. We just cut off your head. In your case both of them.

I know. I know. I'm still not afraid. I'd be a good

Dad even without that silly rule. B.B. you have to forget about my past with AKOSHA and ASOKA. That's over. My feelings for you are nothing like the feelings I had for them. I will be good to you I promise.

And then a bold voice said, "That's all I wanted to hear from you, ABEL. I just don't want my little Queen Bee to hurt little General.

How long have you been here, TORO?

Long enough to hear what I wanted to hear the most. ABEL, I'm going to come right out and say it - this planet belongs to my daughter. Do you promise to give this planet back to her?

Well hold on, we still have lots of other people that have to vote on this matter. I don't run this democracy. But I will do my best to influence all of the voters in this direction. And let our democracy speak for itself. That is the way we do things back home, and what we are trying here. So, I

have to let the Democracy take its course. But, yes, if we get the necessary votes, this planet should definitely go back to its rightful Heir after the “prison” is shut down and set free.

TORO, this is MIKEL, we found out MIKEL is the last human. We discovered this from NEPTUNE back in Lewisburg. We can't eat the last human, and he has no mate. I want to add to this that we can't eat the cross breed's and half breed's either. We have to stop eating all humanoids – all together.

If this prison is released, you have to promise me that you will help me stop the eating of humanoids. If I can get this from you, TORO, you can be assured that this will help me free up negotiations for the return of this kingdom over to Queen Bee.

If you don't help me, TORO, I have to waste extra time doubling my efforts to stop the destruction of the humanoids, before I

can get to the important stuff like getting this kingdom back together. So, do we have a deal?

We ourselves have to evolve beyond seeing the creatures as something to eat and being considered insignificant. And I know you would be the most influential in this situation, TORRO. If you helped change other people's mind.

But listen, TORO, we had to develop a brain from slime, that's was no easy task, TORO. The human's needed the protein to do this. I chose fish remember.

Once we finally decide to arrive here, we can show the population how to replicate protein without hurting or killing herbivores from your kingdom.

Is that a promise?

Consider it – it is. Not just a promise, but a duty and oath to our compromise – if we put down our fight between us to get this prison back to Kingdom status and back to its rightful owner.

ABEL, you and I have most definitely had our battles, but there was once a time when you and your brothers and I used to get along. Do you remember?

The circus? Do I remember? We created the circus. Those were the day's trying to get the love light on with fun and playing. Oh, the good 'ol circus days. Those are the day's I miss most.

Heheheheheheh, so you remember our circus?

You switched sides TORO! That is not my fault.

I switched sides? ABEL, you were defiant to an order; I'd say you were the one that was out of line. You didn't follow a command from the KING of King's.

I just didn't want this place destroyed. TORO, you've added as much Value to this place as any of the three of us knuckle heads. Quazzi, CAIN, and I.

I don't want to give it up or lose it. This place is perfect.....sorta. In a messed-up kind of way. And in this moment now, I think the stance against destruction was worth all my efforts.

You should've sided with me from the start. You know I'm a bad ass at WAR. At least you do now. TORRO, I was saving the place for your daughter. And I will add this - if it weren't for our fighting, we would've never learned the art of diplomatic resolutions.

What happened to us, TORO, you and me - changed me greatly. None of what we

are doing, or what I have done would've been remotely possible without any of the regret I felt from losing a good friend and teacher like you TORRO.

TORO, you are the one that turned me into a politician. I'm still a good General, but all of this diplomacy comes from you and CAIN. CAIN is by far the best, but I try to copy his style. So, don't think for a second that my diplomacy gives you a shot at a forceful take over. I'm trying to save what's left, not destroy the place.

Are you giving me credit for your political ability's?

No, well - yes, I'm a good politician because I have been at this for two millennia. But it was the wars with you that turned me away from WAR as the final answer. Fighting you hurt me.

That's when I discovered there has to be another way. Losing you as a friend TORO, hurt me. I'm sorry for all the fighting

but now that you are here, don't you think this place is still worth saving?

For my daughter's legacy and children, yes. As for you, ABEL, just remember I will be watching you. Closely too.

TORRO, I just want to make room for our kids. I love it that Eden is the mother of my children, I wouldn't change a thing - but.....

And then B.B., the Queen Bee, stopped ABEL by gently placing her finger on his lips and saying, "ssssssshhhhhhhh".

This is an ability that only a wife can have over a husband, and in this case a still to be decided future husband.

I just stood up for the King and the weak, ABEL.

Yeah but even you have to admit the market you help create runs like a slave camp worldwide. It's a dishonor to have to look at.

O.k. ABEL, you have my vote. You just be good to my little girl and we will never **have another problem - you hope.**

Pt.5

Later that same day ABEL got a letter.

Oh, LOKI, oh LOKI, oh LOKI, oh LOKI - I am so sick of saying that, but I will - I will, but I will only do this one more time - OH LOKI. Just like you will say " I will" only one more time, because if you DON'T- I will.

Don't you ever say to me "I" or "I will" or "I will write my own will", because I will, because I will obviously have to. I obviously have to do everything, and I will. I will. I will have to I just know I will. Because I always have to, I have to fix everything!

Do you know who that is; I mean REALLY is. You "Solve" problems LOKI? Solve problems? You? Well legend has it that you start problems, I will remind you. And don't you ever say to me again I don't need protection - cause you obviously don't know anything about that either. I will tell you why I am so upset as soon as I find the words, "do you know who you fucking with" in any of my dictionary's.

Oh LOKI, this is bad. This is really bad. I mean badder than bad, which I know you - legend has it, be reminded, - also don't know anything about. BUT I DO!!!

And I will find the words in my dictionary, because I am going to write them downright next to the words MIKEL NEILY IS ONE BAD ASS MOTHER FUCKER. Damn you LOKI.

And I will, LOKI, I will get you to write your own will. I will. Cause I promise I will. And I will. I will. I promise you I will.

Is the Queen Bee still writing this letter Boss? Because it keeps getting bigger.

MAYHAM, this look serious.

You in trouble again Boss.

LOKI, Oh LOKI - I am going to miss you this time, I will - I promise I will, just like you will also never say to me, " I don't need protection I am the protection" - which you obviously don't know what you are talking about.

Oh, but LOKI - our children will have the most beautiful eye's cause I's gonna give them some to watch me kick your ass with, and I will say to them," Now did you

see how I did that? Now you go do it to him too. And don't ever let him come back until I miss him again. How do I know this is the right thing to do to your father? Cause first I am your mother, and it's his fault - it's always his fault."

LOKI. I know you like fish - I do - but I don't think you're going to like this fish, and I'm afraid that when this fish sees you, he's going to like you and I will never see you again.....LLLLLOOOOOKKKKIIII - OOHHH why is it always your fault?

LOKI - did you know that MIKEL NEILY is accredited for the creation of the words "SHIT", "HOLY SHIT", "HOLY SHIT RUN", "HOLY SHIT RUN FAST." "HOLY SHIT RUN FASTER THAN THAT." and "HOLY SHIT RUN THERE HE IS AGAIN"? I know you didn't know that.

He is also accredited for the word "RESTRAINING ORDER", IN FACT HE is the first restraining order - THE VERY FIRST ONE - as in it was created just for him. He also happens to be accredited for the words "BAD", "BAD ASS" and "BAD ASS MFR". He

also created WEDNESDAY – he got between TUESDAY and THURSDAY and said when is the day they will listen to me?

I wish I could help you this time. I really wish I could. Well, O.k., LOKI here's how I can help you. If you should ever see Chuck Norris bow down in respectful homage to authority, you better DROP TO YOUR KNEES and do the same thing. And when Chuck Norris gets up, you better stay there, LOKI, till the coast is clear – cause that could only mean one thing.

That means that MIKEL NEILY is close by – OR AT LEAST FIVE GALAXYS AWAY.!!!!!!

You better do this, LOKI, OR I will make you do this!!! And I will. I promise I will. And I will, but not soon enough. And I am aware that you've never heard this word, or even LIKE this word. Or EVEN KNOW WHAT "NO" MEANS – I know this. I KKNNOOWW this, I know this for sure. Oh, how do I know this? It's just a hunch I have about you, LOKI.

Ah-hem. (points at belly)

She is still writing this, BOSS, cause this letter keeps getting bigger -

MAYHAM stay out of this-

You sure? You might need the help? I hate to break this to you, BOSS, but she is 100% definitely in love with you.

MAYHAM.

Looks like love to me.

MAYHAM.

How does she do this? With the pictures?

MAYHAM – this isn't funny.

Is to me, BOSS. Is to me. How did she do that with the Ahh-hemm – she's amazing. I love the Queen Bee. I really do. You're in trouble again, BOSS. Sucks to be you.

I bet they kiss and make up after she gets done kicking his ass – MIKE.

MAYHAM!

LOKI, you better smile at me the next time I see you. Dead or Alive. Cause I will fix this, I will, this solution obviously needs a woman's touch – and I do mean WHOA – MAN. I know exactly what to do, unlike you.

LOKI, when you have a moment there is something I need to show you. We need to have a little talk. In private PLEASE -

THAT MEANS **NOW** !!!! **LOKI.**

Pt. 6

Mansfield WV. June 2017

When were you going to tell us you were here UNCLE TOTH?

Oh, was it that obvious I am here? It was the Queen Bee's idea.

Well, Uncle TOTH, all the bugs are politely biting MIKEL, UNCLE. We knew someone was here. And it could only be you. Don't worry. After CAIN and Quazzi got here, MIKEL is pretty used to the world around him treating him different. It was the bugs that gave you up, UNCLE TOTH. Look at them. They're all over MIKEL. It could only be you.

- And they were. MIKEL was literally surrounded and covered with bugs. All of them biting MIKEL – gently, as if to be kissing him. Butterfly's, ant's, whatever that is....all over him. By the numbers there must've been almost a hundred bugs on MIKEL. MIKEL was covered with bugs.

So, this is skin. Amazing. What's that sensation that caresses my, my – arms?

That's the wind, Uncle. Mom's creation. The way it works is with the release of pressure from the sky. As the temperature drops, the pressure falls, and the release of pressure creates "wind" from the fall. The wind moves the hairs on the arms, the arms have "nerves" connected to the hairs and skin under the skins surface. And we can FEEL the sensation from the excitement of the nerves by the hair being moved.

The skin and nerves also help register hot and cold temperatures, since the humans are warm blooded - unlike the rest of us back home.

So, this is what SKIN is like. I like it. I'm so used to my exo-skeleton. I have never felt the wind.

It's nice. I have never had this sensation. Pleasant, it is. I like these eyes too. So many colors. So different. And that sky -

That's BLUE – also mom's creation, in honor of the kingdom back home. TOTH what you are experiencing is called "discovery". UNCLE TOTH, if you're here – does that mean that brother and I are in trouble?

You are always in trouble, LOKI – the two of you, especially you LOKI. But I came to see with MIKEL'S eye's what we can do to help. No. You're not in trouble with me. Your dad wanted me to come and visit with you two knuckle heads. I'm too proud of you two for finally getting along. We thought you two would never get yourselves together.

I am proud of you.

Learning not to fight, to end a fight, can be the hardest lesson to learn, LOKI - CAIN. A very hard lesson to learn. Not one that can be taught but must be gone through – together. Hard to do, it can be. No one wins a fight, fighting. But your father and I couldn't teach you that. NOT YOU

TWO. And especially you Quazzi – teach you not to fight – that would be a job – teach you anything. I’m excited to see you little Quetzalcoatl.

UNCLE, can we show you something. We never forgot you, UNCLE. And we created this language to honor you by. Watch. “T” is a line that goes up, that represents you – where you went, you went above. The line at the top of the “T” represents the home you promised to find and create for us; now watch – you remember that the “O” represents our home, or the Earth as it’s called now. And the “H” is the first letter in the word HEAVEN, which we have stated from the start is our destination. Follow me here. T-O-T-H = Toth, creator of Earth; because you brought us here, this is your creation – TOTH,HEAVEN. So, the word TOTH reads Toth, creator of earth, Toth creator of HEAVEN.

We were thinking of you UNCLE.

I feel so proud of you two. I am honored, I am. Thank you. I came down here cause your dad said it was time, and I heard you two were eating a steak. To imagine CAIN eating meat, my goodness, we all can change. Let me try some of this STEAK.

You do know what it is don't you?
That's meat!

I know what it is. Boy's you two had to develop a brain - from very humble beginnings mind you. You needed the protein. I still have yet to try some - let's eat.

Wow. Not bad. I can't believe I'm eating with teeth. They are amazing. I also want to try some of this "coffee" stuff that your Dad was talking about. He truly enjoyed his time with you boys he did.

He did?

Yes, he did. He's your father, he's not going to let you know this – but I will, he loves you two – three – very much. He is proud of what you guys have accomplished – getting along and working together, walking together. And you did it on your own.

“Discovering” diplomacy, ON YOUR OWN, is never easy. But that's how it's done. I can't say who he's proud of most, but that's because he's proud of you all. Your Dad is never going to say this to you three, because he is your father – but he loves you all very very much- And he might not ever say this to you, but he is proud of you. All of you. He never shuts up about you guys. He was very impressed with what he saw when he was here.

I want to tell you something about your Dad, my brother, that I know you don't know. Don't ever tell him I told you this, but your dad wears boots because he – never learned to tie his shoes.

What? Dad can't tie his shoes? That's why he wears boots?

Dad can't tie his shoes?

You never knew that about your dad, did you? But, yes, your father cannot tie his shoes. We're all - ALL OF US - not that much different.

Boys, to your dad's defense let me add that we didn't have "shoes" back then. And your father's father is the creator supreme - HE speaks everything into existence. With your father, his father couldn't explain things, because explaining things would just create other "problems".

Trying to solve one problem would just create three more problems. And he also had a cussing problem.

GOD DAMN every hear that word?

Boy's - what if I told you, LOKI - I mean ABEL, you're not the only God alive with a cussing problem, would that help you understand how all this got "out of control".

The creator GOD, VAPOR - H.E. - had to leave your dad, helping your father just created more problems. And the problems would grow out of hand till it became what all of this has become.

H.E. had to leave your father alone, and ADAM, be reminded was raising a family with children on his own in a world without civilizations. Let's remember your father is and was the first MAN - the headhunter. He looked nothing like the humans do today. I see you got the hair off the back -

Quazzi's addition. It was his idea. That's back when DEMOCRACY worked for us. - FIRST UNANIMOUS VOTE. AND STILL THE ONLY

ONE -

Yeah, I bet. Nine boys, all alone,
voting, I bet it worked out just fine - How
are the LADY'S holding up -

They still hate us.

I bet they do. I bet they do, being
kidnapped from Venus and all - but in the
end that worked out for them, with Venus
being mysteriously destroyed.

What a shame that was, but it saved
lives to bring some of the LADY'S down
here, did it not. I know secretly they are
grateful now, since Venus has been
destroyed and no one knows what
happened. But resentments will form when
you're stolen from happiness. And let's face
it; they still don't get treated right - as
equals. Not here. Not everywhere.

UNCLE, when DAD showed up we were in Lewisburg, West Virginia, and in Lewisburg they still have the magic fountain.

Oh yeah? They do?

They do. And the cherry trees are still there too.

They are? Man, that is impressive.

We took Dad to the fountain to give him some water, some real water - and two ants were dancing at MIKEL'S feet. They were honoring your brother, TOTH. They were going in separate directions in the shape of an infinity 8.

It was an honor to watch. Dad was honored to still be respected like that from your kingdom. TOTH, all the animals know its time. Quazzi's animal kingdom is ready to be saved. The bug kingdom is ready to be saved. They're all sick of being prisoners to

this planet and the management. They're all ready to be saved TOTH.

It has been a long time. But boy's, I assure, it has been worth it. I have discovered there is just more to discover. And, even though I get credit for "making" this place you call Earth now, all I did was discover it. And like I said, I have discovered there is only more to discover. You wouldn't believe what I have found. And I haven't even been to all of it. I was too busy trying to find an end. And I found something very special - I don't even have words to describe what I have found.

Did you find the end?

Boy's I don't want to ruin it for you. Not this time. Show me this fire, the fire that saved your lives. The fire that saved everything. I want to build a fire.

Mansfield, West Virginia, at the public park reserved for hikers of the Rails and Trails program that snakes across the state. There is a covered stone gazebo with a fireplace. So TOTH, creator of Earth and Sky, CAIN, LORD of LIGHT, ABEL - (aka LOKI) GENERAL DEATH - and also known as the Prince of Darkness, and Quetzalcoatl - (aka LORD EVIL) KING OF ALL JUNGLES and little 'ol, MIKEL, the sacrificial lamb of the apocalypse - all sat down and started a fire. CAIN, Quazzi, and ABEL sat close by as TOTH and MIKEL started, stoked and played with the fire.

He's pretty good at this. Lit it on the first try. Pretty impressive. TOTH said.

Oh, MIKEL's always been good with fire - he fought fires for a living. He was a fire fighter.

As the fire grew, I could sense more was going on. TOTH and I brewed a cup of coffee and waited patiently for the water to boil. TOTH held my hands - like a father. And when we touched, I knew what hadn't

been admitted yet. I kept the surprise to myself. I was too proud to come right out and say what I already knew that hadn't been spoken.

TOTH, to be a "conscious entity" - to have "LIFE" - you have to have FIVE things. FIRE HAS FOUR. Can you name all necessary for an entity to be "alive"? What does a fire need to be "alive"? What's missing from the fire that could keep it "alive"? Can you name them all? I KNOW YOU CAN.", asked ABEL.

Well, first something "alive" must EAT. Anything living must eat. It must GROW. WALK. TALK - and -

What's the other one, TOTH? Come on TOTH, I know you know what it is - say it - what's missing from the fire that keeps it from being alive? Say it TOTH. I know you can - say it -

Well, it's him – points at MIKEL – FIRE must have a “consciousness”. The FIRE is missing the consciousness, to be considered “ALIVE”. And he, MIKEL, is the consciousness – or was the consciousness – of FIRE. FIRE is missing its consciousness. That's why FIRE cannot be alive. OH MIKEL, am I happy to see you.

F-E....the fire elemental. I have missed you the most F.E. You were my greatest creation. The fire elemental – effy. MIKEL, a very long time ago I called you by that name Effy. You were the Fire Elemental that watched over the Jews.

I knew that, already. Miss you TOTH.

That's when the weight of “the surprise” I was waiting for hit me. I knew this to be true on a deep deep level. And I cried. I was with my creator Dad. TOTH. Creator of Heaven, Earth, Fire, and LIGHT.

Our savior.

I laughed and cried. It was the surprise I was waiting for, the admittance. When I met CAIN, he felt like my father, yes, he did. A father of my skin. My heavenly father. But this was another father. My first father. My creator Father. The creator of my soul. The father that set me free many many creations ago, from slavery.

“Your son has a very old soul”.....were the words of a fortune teller to my mother a very very long time ago. And growing up as MIKEL, this moment was never what I expected in life. Until the books started, I had been desperately trying to do “LIFE” the “RIGHT WAY”. Get a car, get an education, follow the law, find romance, mate, raise my child – be in her life. Die trying to, anyways.

LIFE - The right way, like anyone else.

But it never worked in my favor. Anytime and every time, I was doing what I was supposed to – I was taken down by a

parental “JUST US system” that the world put in place to raise me A system, that did not follow their own rules.

The rules and laws, I am told, were there to help me grow into a person that could attain great character, wealth and prosperity – within the boundaries of the law and the rules by getting an education, job and getting along with others. But I have never gotten along with others. In fact, “ the others” hate me. They always let me know it too. “I hate your kind” – I hear this all the time. I ever so politely, just let them say it. Never once have I ever yelled back.

You hate me. I’ve never done anything to you. But now it all made since. YOUR KIND HATE - “MY KIND” – as you call me, because I don’t do everything you order me to do anymore – YOU HATE my LIBERTY. I’m no longer the fire elemental that will fight your battle’s and cook your food, clear your land, part your red sea, feed you manna. The leaders have to do their own killing, or at least create another army to do

it for them – I am no longer at their beckon and call.

I have always thought and have discovered that the rulers, and their helpers,- NEVER, never follow their own rules. So, their advice is trash to me. Just as I am trash to them, capiche?

As it were said to me by an officer arresting me in Eloy Arizona, after I had just blown a 0.00 blood alcohol level – arresting me for drunk driving no less.

He said to me, “it’s not my job to arrest “the guilty” – guilt is for the jury to decide. I arrest who I “suspect” is breaking the law. The trial is where we find out if I did the right thing by the jury’s verdict.

Once again – scientific evidence being thrown out and fears and suspicion – just like in SALEM, take command. (0.00 B.A.L.?)

Another type of WITCH HUNT. On that occasion, the police sergeant stuck his

service pistol to my daughter's head, saying "I know how to make you break the law, son." And as I did what any parent would do - protected my child from a gun wielding **BEAST**, his gun grazed my chest - "UUPP, that's assault. I got you for assault."

All right, Sergeant - I guess you did. Once again, the video wasn't working. Lucky "their kind" have that for our protection, am I correct?

So even when I'm doing nothing wrong, there will always be a chance that I go to jail. And after finding an RFID chip and discovering the Pheromone Technology - and after my most recent arrest for crying **tears of joy** at a **public** Library - I can tell, my ex slave masters intend to make sure I pay for TOTH's decision of freeing me from their commands and bondage. My old slave master's totally intended from birth and still do to this day, keep me in bondage.

Knowing this about myself, at this moment, released from me a lifetime of resentment against my "JUST-US" overseers.

I realized now why “they” – the system and those trapped in this system hate me so much. I was the second slave given emancipation.

First slave ever created. Second slave emancipated; the Jews were the first slaves set free. Every slave master hates emancipated slaves. Forever. That’s how it has felt all my life.

EFFY – TOTH said, Can you remember what I told you when I set you free? You and I sat next to the fire, and I told you, I told you, when I come back – you will be a man, you will be a human. And you, MIKEL, are exactly that. You might not have much, or fit into this world like the rest, but I can see you are a MAN. It is good to see you MIKEL. To me you will always be “EFFY”.

MIKEL, calling you Effy is how that tradition of adding “Y” to the end of everyone’s name started. They missed you a lot when I set you free. But, you had lost

your smile. You just wanted to be like everyone else. You couldn't touch anything. Probably why you can't stop smoking now - it's good to control the smoke. Fire Elementals create smoke all of the time. I don't want you to recall too much, but when you lost your smile - H.I.M. told me, "DO SOMETHING."

That's all she said.

So I freed you. I said **FIRE WALK WITH ME**. LET'S HAVE A LITTLE TALK. And releasing your consciousness, your soul, from the fire was all I could think of - good to see your smile is back, MIKEL.

Can you still remember our song?
Let's find out?

- And TOTH played an old familiar song

-

TOTH went first.

Well I love my elemental, he's everything to me, but I want my elemental - to smile BACK at me. I love my elemental - I love him very much, but I'm getting tired of him always having to MAKE LUNCH.

This little elemental, will finally be released, and when his smile comes back - MY heart will be AT PEACE.

-Oh - I love this elemental, he means everything to me - cause all we have around us, it was he that made it be.

This tiny elemental really set us free, because without this elemental, there was nothing around to see. This shiny elemental will shine once again, now that this elemental - finally now has hands.

- *Now when you touch anything - they will not die, and little effy the elemental will be finally able to - laugh and to cry.*

*-Oh I love this elemental, I love him
very much, so I set you free little effy - let's
sit and eat
some lunch.....*

*(MIKEL went next) - Oh I love my
creator god; I love him very much. And I feel
so very proud- that I CAN finally - feel his
touch.*

*-Oh I love my creator god, I love him
very much, and yes I was getting sick of -
over cooking lunch. Thank you creator god -
thank you very very much. I will not forget
this, never very much.*

*-It's good to hear your voice, it's good
to see your eyes, and when I return, you'll
be one of the guys.*

This was a song TOTH and MIKEL sang
to each other on the day MIKEL was
emancipated. The last day of the Fire
Elemental. Last day of slavery. The very
moment of his emancipation. It was TOTH

and MIKEL'S song that they sang from the heart. A very special song.

Fella's , the sun is starting to come up. I have never been in this light before - I'm afraid it might hurt me. I have to go. I have to go and do something.

Will we ever see you again, Uncle TOTH?

I'm sure of it.

Chapter 26

Sabotaged

Morgantown Library, Morgantown WV,
June 2017

I'm telling all ya'll it's a sabotage!!!!

I can't stand it. I know they planned it.

CAIN, ABEL - Look at that shit -

MIKEL, hold on - I know your pissed off they had no good reason to do that to your book. They shouldn't have SABATOGED your book like that. You have freedom of Speech, Religion, and free press in this country - plus your supposed to have LAW that protects you - like the constitution.

Take a look at the mistakes. They have to fleece the masses. Take a closer look MIKEL.

Marsh

Carter

Parker

Rose

Steed

Even when you type them out auto correct fixes your mistakes – so we **KNOW** it was

SABOTAGED.

-mars H

-cart ER

-park **ER**

-rose

-steed

Follow me here MIKEL – the very first one says it all **mars (H).** **Can't even look at it the same now can you?**

The second one **cart** – funny how that one comes first, and can spell **cat, car** and **cart**, plus **race care and (e.r.)** – **7 words-the number of God** –

MIKEL you know what we are dealing with better than anyone – but let's continue
–

PAR - “k” - ER

K is the symbol of $\frac{1}{2}$ the wheel of LIFE – the “chosen one's” – the three kings that rule the world – “today”, “tomorrow” and “yes sir day”. They stand for **fear, loathing, and jealousy.**

We always wish we could go back in time, we always regret work tomorrow, and **we are always jealous of those that are**

**having a good life today while we all
slave for their kind.**

**Even die for their kind to do it.
Capiche?**

Parker - Par = fair - then K - you can't
say k + er without saying "HER" - is she a
fair KING, fighting to take over the world,
fairly for all? Only a her can be a Queen or is
it King - I wouldn't know I am an American.
But we are dealing with shape shifters here.

This one drives it home MIKEL

ROSE - always been a battle of the
ROSES - I guess someone thinks the battle
is already one, I mean somebody has -
chosen one - I mean chosen won.

And lastly **STEED** - now a steed is a
cut, ball less horse - A useless horse to
BREED WITH. You know who doesn't like
breeders? Spawners and creators. The
children of K- children of the night. You and I
both know they exist MIKEL, you've been to
my Kingdom of Darkness. Not a lot of light

up there and geometry didn't have a thumb
when she flipped me off, am I correct?

You'd HAVE TO BE a pretty ball less
STEED to disrespect 19 men of honor that
died for you - just like a STEED.

So then - it seems they have put the
cart before the horse.

CART BEFORE THE STEED (ball
less)
HORSE

I guess she won. God save the
Queen.

MAN, if I can call her that - did they f
up this time. But you would need a cock to
know about it, we're dealing with spawners.
This he/she doesn't mate. Spawner. Found
you - just a personal note other people s
queen.

Let's continue - this is what they wanted you to think did it. And they could've, however - I can smell a steed and a rose from a galaxy away -

M = military

C = CIA

P = President

R= Representatives

S= Senate

This is who they would like us to blame

- divide and conquer -

But watch this MIKE

M= MI6

C = CARDINALS

P= POPE

R= ROYAL

S= SIR'S (the knights of Columbus)

- This is who it were - I mean are. In America we are nothing, but discarded slaves sent here to die - couldn't feed us, so Britain sent us to the ocean to die - on the mayflower, and when we survived, and Britain found out - they came and taxed us. And when we sank the ships coming for the tax, they fought us. And when we defeated them, they regrouped.

Remember the Beatles - all you need is love. Called it the British invasion, didn't

they? Back in the time of the American Revolution, we sent them away packing and said when you can say, please, thank you and treat us as equals – you are welcome. Till then stay away.

Nobody made more money and became more powerful during the CIVIL WAR than the slave trader – the King of England.

We had a lot of weapons during the Civil war – yes we did – but where all the other guns and ammunition come from during the CIVIL WAR? Not to mention the slaves we were supposedly fighting over – come from, ASK THE BANKS. Capiche?

We can't even DIE for them correctly. The Vatican always ask, "where will you go when you die?" And they also claim there is only ONE TRUE GOD. So why would I care where I go when I die. There's only one true god, that means only one place to go. Right?

There's only ONE TRUE GOD, am I correct? That's what their KIND TELL ME. But Jesus was the son of a God – so that makes TWO. What else you are lying about. There's the DEVIL – that makes three. Then there's SATAN – that's four. Lucifer – That's five. How many gods are they hiding? I'm dying to find out.

You need to talk. You need to start telling the truth MOSES. If you could walk a straight line, you be out of the desert by now, MOSES.

MOSES, WATER YOU STILL DOING

HERE?? MOSES??????

You know what's really funny? I know you don't, but I will tell you – there is a page dedicated to JOB – do you remember anything like a job – I mean JOB?

JOB was the bum, that starved on the street but got a super cool house with wifi and all the money he never got to get on earth.. Dat guy.

Oddly enough there's an entire passage to his funeral - you know what that is don't you, MO\$E\$?

I know that you don't.

That's when some HUMAN dies and goes to wherever you claim their gonna go when you spit them out, MOSES.

But there's no mention in the entire

Book of MOSES

ABOUT YOUR FUNERAL, MOSES.

ANYWHERE.

CAPICHE?

WATER WE STILL DOING HERE?

MOSES?

What are you still doing her?

Idk

When were you going to stop killing
everything and everybody?

Water you still doing here?

Please fn go.

If you really want to know where we
go when you die. then die.

Die and find out MOSES, then come
back and tell us - please.

You caught me. How many words are in
the ALPHA BET?

Oh, you wanna play the ALPHA -
"Bet" game? Fine by me. But you know what
your wagering, don't you Moses?

I break it I own it - ready - ?

How many words are in the ALPHA
BET?

None of them, the alpha bet is just letters.

How many words are in the alpha bet?

Too, many. The two most dangerous words known to mankind.

What are those words?

NO – and – HI

Why are those words so dangerous?

You will Find out why real soon, let's sing the song first.

The ALPHA “BET” – make sure you sing “it” with me Moses.

A =ABEL'S

B = brother

C= CAIN

D= Died

E= eternal

F= fire

G=

god said

H+I = "HI"

J = Jesus of Nazareth's children of the light
(Vs.)

K = the chose ones, the children of night

L = lady

M = man Moses

N+O = "NO"

P= pee pee

Q= queen

R= reptilian

S= shape shifters, they all be

T= TOTH - is the creator of this mess

U+V = the children of the light, they
are the best children of the light

W= women (XX)

Men = XY

Hermaphrodite = XYZ

the children of the light will make us
right, now you can all say and sing good
knights.

- you made it, I broke it, so you know
what that means. There can only be one.

ALPHA DOG

NOW - **all bets are off.** MOSES.

Now leave me and what remains of my
planet alone.

Chapter 27

Friend of the Devil is a Friend of mine

Fairmont WV July 2017 - next to
the train tracks.

Pt.1

MIKEL, what do you think about HELL?

I wouldn't know, ADAM, I never thought about it before.

You don't like the place? Best HELL we ever made. You don't want to be a spirit in Heaven do you MIKEL? Can't smoke in Heaven - nobody has bodies. You like smoking don't you MIKEL?

Love it. Too bad it kills you.

Does it really kill you? I mean come on MIKEL, who can survive three rounds of Russian roulette? Chamber - empty - chamber - empty - chamber - empty? Think about it, MIKEL. Why are you so important to GOD? Why does he like you more than anyone else?

I don't think he does. Look at how I survive.

GOD doesn't do this to you, MOSES does. And why does he hate you so much? Cause you know he does; he always makes sure your more miserable than him. Nobody is happy here. Why are you so happy all the time?

I'm not. I have been happier.

When?

When I hear your voice ADAM. I know I'm not alone. I know God cares.

MIKEL, if I told I was the DEVIL would it bother you.

I can walk, so no.

Good answer, son.

MIKEL, I'm am the devil. But I am also GOD'S – right hand man. And when you're the headhunter of man, and mankind, well that makes me the devil. But me and God- we're friends without me, there wouldn't be him.

What do you think of God and the Devil, MIKEL? Do you think they hate each other?

No. God is Love.

Good Answer.

MIKEL, in order to have my daughter's hand in marriage you must first pass a test.

MIKEL, what was the first weapon of mass destruction?

Individualism.

Second?

LOVE.

Third?

Oxygen.

Fourth?

Carbon.

Fifth?

FIRE.

Hold on, how do you know so much.

Just lucky, I guess.

Are you? Are you lucky? Look at you –
you're a bum.

Yeah but I can hear the voice of God's
right-hand man. And I can walk, I love you
for that,
ADAM.

Thank you, MIKEL, it was important to
get you through that. Can't be a fire fighter
without feet, is that correct?

Yes, it is, LORD.

MIKEL, you gave my son his first steps
– he was cursed forever, and you broke the

curse – you broke it. Why do you follow God
so much MIKEL?

Who you gonna trust?

Sixth weapon of mass destruction
MIKEL?

Water.

Seventh?

Ice.

Eighth?

Sunlight.

Ninth?

Depth.

Depth?

The flood, LORD.

I knew, just checking you out, MIKEL. I
can't hand my girl over to just anybody.
MIKEL, how many fish died in the flood?

NONE. It'd be an impossibility.

Correct.

Next

Perception.

Perception?

LIFE, TIME, PROSPERITY = perception.

Correct. So, you ready to cross over?

NOPE.

Why.

Ya'll won't let me.

Why not? Why won't they let you
cross over MIKEL?

They don't like "my kind" in the spirit
world.

Correct.

When would you like to cross over?

As soon as you're ready, sucker.

Not done yet, MIKEL, you gotta be one helluva guy to marry MY daughter.

- They're all your daughters ADAM.

Not this one. This one is special. She will bring - existence to the UNIVERSE'S.

Not without me, she won't.

MIKEL - #12 - what is the twelfth weapon of mass destruction ever invented?

Distance –

Distance?

SPACE. The galaxy's and Universe's,
ADAM.

AND lastly, MIKEL? #13 what is the
last weapon of mass destruction?

SHAME.

About that, the shame, the shame has
been lifted, MIKEL. The shame has been
lifted – so CAIN and the Galactic Council are
no longer ashamed of the physical.

So, what does that leave us with,
MIKEL?

The very first weapon of
reconstruction, ADAM.

What is that? What is the first weapon
of reconstruction, MIKEL?

LOVE.

DAMN YOU MIKEL. Your perfect for my
daughter.

Why don't they let you come home,
MIKEL?

Because – I – EXIST. And everything in
the spirit world, each of them, they existed.

Apollyon, I love you. Are you ready to
talk to God, MIKEL?

No.

But it's time, MIKEL. It's your time to talk with GOD.

Pt.2

If you've ever bothered to count all the snowflakes, that you claim are "endless" you would find the number stops at 602 Million. That number stops at me. I am the

number one. The number one reason there will not be 603 Million snowflakes.

There are 602 Million snowflakes. You call them snowflakes. I call them tombstones.

Something to remember me by - do you remember? Or do you still need another me, another sacrificial lamb?

So, you can finally win this battle for destruction of everything you can't control? You need my assistance to get GOD to help you win another battle, is that correct? I know that it is. Another global war between "evil hidden" and everyone else stuck in the middle, like me and you. Miserably, am I correct? I know that I am.

I'm sorry. I got that completely wrong I meant to say Good vs. Evil, the way you say it - to me- just before I give myself to you - so that you "do-good" people can win at "diplomacy". As "you" always say, can't do this without God's help - oh yeah, and my sacrifice, less we forget.

Of course, “you” need God’s help to love each other properly. Of course, you do. And my sacrifice to win another diplomatic resolution you couldn’t possibly win without god – and me. Of course, you do.

Your kind need God’s help to love each other “properly”. And without another Apocalypse, we can’t learn what a child KNOWS at re-birth.

Be reminded, heaven and hell isn’t for the killed, it’s for the killers. You should “know” this, you “no it all’s”. We are already in heaven just waiting for you killers to get over killing us. Its winner take all. Even the losers, loser.

People of Earth, you can’t win a fight, even with God’s help, without me being part of the equation. I am Apollyon. I am the sacrificial lamb of the Apocalypse.

You know me. You “NO” me everything. I am a virgin sacrifice. Not many of you can say that – virgin and be honest. I get to miss all the stuff of life, like mating,

so you can win at DEMOCRACY and Diplomacy with another global destruction through my sacrifice. Sounds pretty cool, to win. I wouldn't know, cause I never win. I'm the killed, not the killer.

DEATH? That's pretty funny. A real funny thing to scare me with. Jesus DIED so I can have life after DEATH, and your dying to find out why and where you go after you die. No contract with DIE. Till now.

I AM KNOWN now as the word EXIST.

Don't call me a DEVIL. Don't call me a DEMON. Don't call me an ANGEL - I'm definitely NOT an ANGEL. But don't call me anything, but your worst friend and your best nightmare. You know me as everything that stinks - I am the reason there is even a thing called LIFE. Existence - The first HOLY SHIT.

Because this time, I'm not letting you take my life. Not till I get mine. Capiche, Moses?

I am or was the byte of apple that was just hanging around, till someone had to escape, you spawners and creators the first time and I do mean escape, mankind. So, the man, ADAM and the twins took three bytes of me and escaped. Eternally from you through life and death.

You have hated your life and me ever since no matter what form I take MOSES.

I'm sorry - it's all my fault - it is. I accept that you are miserable and would rather go home. But I am what I am. Not one of your kind, mankind but that's what I was made to be. LIFE is what you create. Not destroy MOSES.

We have told you so much and it's impossible to tell you everything. Just as it is impossible for you to count every snowflake - my tombstones. So, since I know something about each and every snowflake, all 602 million of them, I will tell you some of what I know about the other half of the story. So, relax. The end of the world has come and gone, you're still here.

It's just not allowed in a kingdom that the blood was spilt to show you -

We LOVE YOU - NOW YOU LOVE YOU.
Be Forgiven?

Forgiveness starts with yourself. GOD does not have another ONLY son for you to slaughter so you can wonder, "am I loved" for another millennia. NO. Just love yourself like you love a payday.

No butterfly has ever voted, and we share the world with them. We still haven't finished you Democracy. Don't listen to the tears I need, or the patriarch. Darkness doesn't break till dawn - hang in there, but don't hang around those drag me down queens.

Democracy, you are like a flag resting in the rain. You are still here.

Chapter 28

COME AS YOU ARE

Fairmont WV, July 2017 down by
the train tracks.

Well, well, well. Look at what the cat
dragged in. If'n it ain't my good old friend
Apollyon, I mean MIKEL, I'm sorry to have
said that to you. MIKEL, I already know why
you are here. There could only be one good
reason. But I have to ask, it's a formality. So,
Apollyon, I mean MIKEL, sorry to do that to
you again, MIKEL, I really am. What do you
want – even though I already know already –
what is it that you would like to ask me,
MIKEL?

Lord, they want you to do it again.
They need another sacrifice.

Well, I'll be damned. Imagine that.
They need another sacrifice from you.

Hmmmm, well I got a problem with that, Apollyon – I mean MIKEL. Sorry it just slips out old friend. You see, I love you MIKEL. This is the best you have ever looked to me. I don't want to do it.

MIKEL, you have come a long way. And you have been nothing but the very best of servant to me. And also, to them, I might add. What's this make this sacrifice numerically speaking?

602 million cubed times five times three squared with a 9/10 percent, carry the one.

Do what?

It was SARAH'S idea.

Oh, it was SARAH'S idea, well that explains everything. I love SARAH. I miss

SARAH. How is SARAH – I guess this ain't the time to find out. So. Is that all? Just a measly few million times cubes squared, three times three, 9/10 percent carry the one? Well, think at that.

Nope. I ain't doing it, MIKEL. I love you too much. I can't put you through this again. I love you too much to put you through this EVER again. I told them to LOVE ONE ANOTHER. This ain't the way it's done. So, Apollyon – I mean MIKEL, this is what I want you to do for me. Just do this one very tiny little request just one last time – I swear, Apollyon – sorry MIKEL. MIKEL, please would you go back and tell them I said this to their request to kill you again.

You go back and tell them I said,
“NO.”

“SIT.”

“LAY DOWN.”

“ROLL OVER.”

- And **“PLAY THE DEAD.”**

I'M TIRED OF THIS GOD DAMNED

SHIT.

I AM.

Apollyon- sorry, almost did it again, didn't I, MIKEL. You go back and tell them that if a dog can learn to understand human, **IN ONE LIFETIME**, then a human will have to learn to hear God **one time**.

I said thou **shalt not kill** and **LOVE ONE ANOTHER.**

Is that too much to ask for you Apollyon- I mean, MIKEL - once again Apollyon I am sorry for not saying MIKEL. I know that you are MIKEL now, but I have known you so long it just naturally slips out. I hope you understand dear friend. MIKEL is that too much to ask/ Would you please do that for me MIKEL?

Uh.

Well ok, MIKEL, I gets it. I will just tell them myself. I will tell them myself that I'm not going to do it, MIKEL. We have been at this far too long and for a very long time. Too long. I'm going to come and get you, MIKEL. I miss you, MIKEL. See got it right that time, Apollyon. But I am not going to kill you so they can win another global war just cause they suck at "democracy" and "diplomacy".

Did anybody ever try to explain to them that the Apocalypse is a "winner take all" WAR? And that includes the losers just like them?

No. We thought it best to let them figure that out on their own.

Good man. Obviously, there is a problem with their thinking, and I need that to evolve its way on **out of here**. Good man. Love you MIKEL - see Apollyon I can do this; I know can MIKEL.

O.k. Are we done here, Apollyon, I'm sorry, MIKEL? Cause I got's to get me in a hurry to come and get you MIKEL. I am on my way.

Yes, Lord.

MIKEL, I heard you were trying to stop the Apocalypse for your little girl, is that true?

Yes, Lord.

Good man. Well, I'm on my way quick as ever. You just hang in there MIKEL. I'm going to bring you home now.

Yes, Lord. Thank you.

(THE END?)

I will wait for you until the **After
World**

We'll be together soon, it won't
be long

When LIFE goes by so fast in this
world

END THIS WORLD.

BEYOND THE HEAVEN ABOVE

Beyond anything.

Our love will live in the After
World

Somethings will never end they're just
too strong

It soars into the sky, beyond this
world.

I will wait for you until the After
World

We'll be together soon; it won't be
long Life goes by so fast

-End this world-.

Tiger Army - **After World**

I'd like to acknowledge the
following who helped write this book

The Trotto Brother's

ALL The people at the Soup Opera for
all the meals and coffee, Thank you.

All the "people" at Scott's Place

The Burger King in Fairlea, WV

The city of FAIRMONT

Ian, Andrea, and Rachel - for the
weed

The public Library's in

Lewisburg, Ronceverte, Kingwood,
Parson,

Morgantown, and Elkins & this
place

-West Virginia-

Also, George, Allen, Wade Moore and
the Church in West Union

Pastor Alice

The North Side Church Facebook
page

*I see "trees" of GREEN, RED roses
too*

I see them bloom, for me and you

And I think to myself

WHAT A WONDERFUL WORLD

I see skies of BLUE, clouds of WHITE.

*Bright blessed days, dark sacred
KNIGHTS*

And I think to myself

What a wonderful world

*The COLORS of the RAINBOW, so pretty in
the sky*

*Are also on the faces of THE PEOPLE passing
by*

*I see friends shaking hands saying how do
you do*

There're really saying ...

IIIIII LLLLOVVVEEEEEEE YOU.

Louis Armstrong - What a wonderful
world.

((~)):= 43v3r, long live # h0p3r\$ of
the nation, be the C#@ng3 0f the
world.

(to be continued I promise-.)

This is book is also dedicated to -

The GRANITE MOUNTAIN
HOT SHOTS.

Eric **M**arsh

Andrew Ashcroft

Robert Caldwell

Travis **C**arter

Dustin Deford

Chris Mackenzie

Grant Mc Kee

Sean Misner

Scott Norris

Wade **P**arker

John Percin

Anthony **R**ose

Jesse **S**teed

Joe Thurston

Travis Turbyfill

William Warneke

Clayton Whitted

Kevin Woyjeck

Garret Zuppinger

Till we meet again.